





THE LIBRARY
OF
THE UNIVERSITY
OF CALIFORNIA
LOS ANGELES



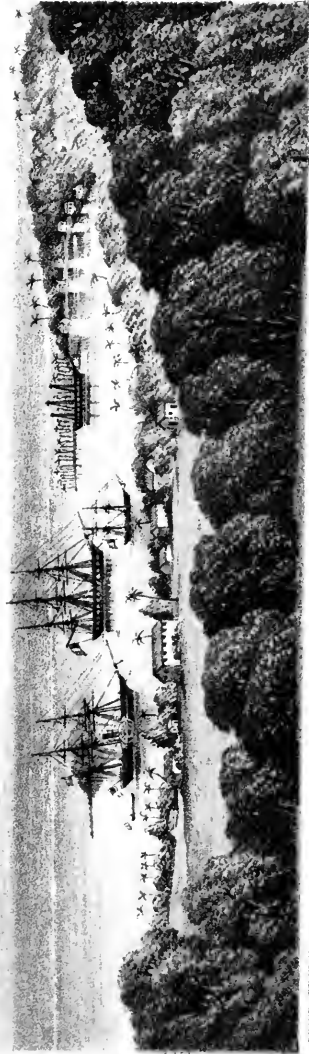
South Seas
Luce

2500

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2007 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation







DESIGNED BY W. WILKES F.R.S.

M. H. HANHART LITH.

THE HARBOUR OF PAPEETI.

ROVINGS
IN
THE PACIFIC,

FROM 1837 TO 1849 ;

WITH
A GLANCE AT CALIFORNIA.

BY A MERCHANT
LONG RESIDENT AT TAHITI.

WITH FOUR ILLUSTRATIONS PRINTED IN COLOURS.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

LONDON:
LONGMAN, BROWN, GREEN, AND LONGMANS.
1851.

LONDON:
SPOTTISWOODES and SHAW,
New-street-Square.

E9148

Stack Annex

Cage

G

477

L962

TO

SIR EDWARD BULWER LYTTON, BART.

WHOSE VARIED WORKS

HAVE YIELDED LARGE STORES OF INTELLECTUAL ENJOYMENT

TO A ROVER IN HIS WANDERINGS

O'ER THE DEEP;

The following Notes

ARE RESPECTFULLY INSCRIBED,

AS A SMALL

BUT SINCERE TRIBUTE OF GRATITUDE AND ADMIRATION,

BY

THE AUTHOR.

UNIV. OF CALIFORNIA
AT LOS ANGELES
LIBRARY

485956
LIB SETS

Address
Luccock St.
2nd floor

ALIBONIA 70. VIVI
23. BONA 20. ITA
YRABU

E. 9148.

P R E F A C E.

THE notes in the following pages have been copied, during the monotony of a protracted voyage, from the original entries, extending, as will be seen, over a series of years. The author has often been without sailing directions, and for the most part without charts, other than general ones of the Pacific; and as the results of his experience might save delay and doubt, to others similarly circumstanced, he has been recommended to submit them to the public. Wherever he could obtain the native names of Islands he has done so; they are spelt after the orthography of dialects in Polynesia; the vowels being accentuated as in France and other Continental nations. The notes have undergone little alteration, addition, or subtraction, and but few remarks have been interpolated. They are entirely without claim to literary merit; but for the sake of easy reference, they have been divided into chapters, and furnished with such mottoes, more or less applicable to the subject in hand, as the author's memory could supply. The interest which has more recently

been felt in England for all that relates to the islands of the Pacific, leads him to cherish the belief that the general information which he has scattered throughout his pages, will be deemed no unfit accompaniment to the story of his personal adventures.

The author's days, it will be seen, have been passed, not in the idealities of life, but in its downright rough realities; and he is not without hope that this simple record of his experience may stimulate many a youth, whose energies are lying dormant for want of a field for their exertion in this densely peopled country, to seek, in the Isles of the Pacific, the home and the adventurous career which he is sure to find there, "if he faint not." Should this be the case, the principal end which the author had in view, by publishing these notes, will be fully attained.

CONTENTS

OF

THE FIRST VOLUME.

CHAPTER I.

Determine on leaving England. — Visit the School-house of my Boyhood. — Appointed to a Vessel bound to New South Wales. — Farewell of Home. — Join the Vessel at Deptford. — Description of my Berth. — Chance of being starved. — Ship unmoored for Spithead. — Prison-ship described. — Captain, &c. comes on Board, and shortly after Three hundred and ten Prisoners - - 1

CHAP. II.

Get under Weigh. — Put into the Boatswain's Mess. — The Messplace and its Members. — Blue Water and a Watch. — Symptoms of Opposition to Imposition. — A boxing Bout. — Prisoners unmanacled. — Night Phenomena. — Steward's Bewilderment: Ghost Stories do not relieve it. — A Second Tom Tucker. — The Captain imparts a Knowledge of the "Royal Brace." — Chinese Drawings lead to a Threat of exhibiting the Pictures. — Cape de Verde and Tristan de Cunha. — Gale to the southward of the Cape of Good Hope. — A Discovery: the Cook's Galley a better Night Station than the Quarter Deck. — A Growl with Chips. — How to hail the Watch. — Pass through Bass's Straits. — First Glimpse at Savage Life - - - - - 15

CHAP. III.

Sydney Harbour. — Involuntary Acquaintance with the Water, before making that of the Land. — Not quite friendless. — The Town of Sydney. — Botany Bay. — “Brickfielders.” — Birds and Beasts. — Hunters’ River. — Newcastle. — The Country. — River Paterson. — Deadly Instances of the Venom of Snakes. — A Ride after wild Cattle. — The Country talked of. — Corn Stalks. — Illawara. — Notices of the Aborigines - - - - - 41

CHAP. IV.

Off to New Zealand. — A Gale. — Bream Bay. — Bay of Islands. — Kororarika. — Paihia. — River Waitangi. — River Kawakawa. — White’s Island. — Roadstead of Warakaihika. — Roadstead of Rungatukaia. — Abandoned by the Schooner. — Overland Trip to Warakaihika. — Selfish Conduct of a Chief. — A Musical Cargo. — Return to the Bay of Islands. — Sojourn on one of the Islands - - - - - 63

CHAP. V.

Take Passage in a small Schooner bound to the Thames District. — Captain and Crew. — Coromandel Harbour. — Cross the Frith in an open Boat for Wakatinai. — Arrival at the Maramarua. — Conduct of Chief. — The Maramarua. — Waikato River. — An Excursion in the Company of Natives. — A Night Bivouac broken up by Rain. — A Chief taboos himself against himself. — Veneration of the Head by New Zealanders. — Their Disregard of the Value of Time. — Sleeping in Maori Huts. — The Waipa. — Anecdote of a young Giant. — Left in the Lurch. — Relieved by a chance Traveller. — Natives attempt at Extortion. — Scene with a Fury. — Journey Back. — Burning Coal. — The Animal and Vegetable Kingdom glanced at. — The Return to Coromandel Harbour. — A “Plant” discovered, not a botanical one. — Removal of a Taboo. — Tale of a Pipe. — Natives jolly. — He that can help himself will find plenty to assist him. — New Zealand Tactics. — English Impudence. — Hot Springs at Wakatinai. — Excursion up the River Thames. — Construct a Steamer. — A Fracas from sleeping unconsciously on tabooed Ground. — Two Chiefs blown up with Gunpowder. — Mischievous Influence of Atua Chiefs. — Scene round a

sick Couch.—A Halt at the Mouth of the River.—A Religious Thief.—Anecdote of a Suicide.—Estimate of New Zealanders' Character.—“Wasteful Billy.”—A sick Headache.—Put up for the Night at a Sawyer's Station.—The River Thames - 84

CHAP. VI.

Harbour of Waikato.—Directions for taking the Bar.—Canoe Excursion.—Excitement of the Natives.—Anecdotes.—Proceedings regarding Adultery.—A Mission for Port Nicholson.—Get under weigh.—A Night Descent into the Forecastle.—A Meeting with the Chief.—Seizure of the Vessel averted.—Leave the Harbour.—Mount Egmont.—Cook's Straits.—North Part of the Middle Island.—Port Nicholson.—The River “Hut.”—Erroneous Representations and Dealings of Land-sharks.—Waitimatta or Auckland.—A Stroll to Manukao.—Lady Franklin.—Return to Sydney.—Remarks on New Zealand - - - - 124

CHAP. VII.

Bound on a wrecking Expedition, &c.—A Squall.—Howe's Island and Ball's Pyramid.—Norfolk Island.—Nepean Island.—Philip Island.—Sight the “Rapid” Reef, but a Gale coming on, stand for Rotumah.—Roadstead of Rotumah, the Island described.—A Crater converted into a Sepulchre.—The Cocoa-nut Tree.—Natives.—Their Government.—The Division of the Island.—The winning and the losing Side.—The Power of the Chiefs, and whence derived.—A singular Custom with their Virgins.—A Marriage Festival and attendant Ceremonies.—Punishment for Adultery, &c.—Atua Chiefs, and their Mode of proceeding to recover the Sick.—Interment of an Infant.—Painful Infliction on the bereaved Mother.—Women always the Sacrifice.—Kava, its Preparation.—Sensations of those about to drink, and its subsequent Effects.—Mode of propitiating an offended Chief.—Play Houses.—Burial Grounds.—Sports at Night.—Vanity piqued.—Disease of the Country.—A Method of taking Fish.—Islands off Rotumah - - - - - 149

CHAP. VIII.

Sail for the Reef.—Difficulty in finding it.—The wrecked Hull heaves in sight.—The Reef.—Land in a Boat, and whilst overhauling one Wreck, see our own Vessel fast.—Sleep on the Sand-spit.—Apprehensions, and a narrow Escape.—Load three Boats, and pass another Night on the Spit.—Load two Boats, and go on Board for a Spell.—The Dollars discovered.—Return to Rotumah.—The Tamaun Tree.—Native Canoes.—Process of Tattooing.—Circumcision.—Traditionary Origin of Rotumah.—Superstitious Observances on the Culture and Manufacture of the Turmeric Root.—An unprecedented Privilege.—Bearings of the Island off Rotumah from the Anchorage.—Particular Description of Auth Luna or Split Island.—Its difficult Landing.—A perilous Pass.—Bold Action of a Native.—Wea Islanders, excellent Cragmen.—A novel Egg Basket.—Bird Catching.—Kindness of the Wea Islanders.—Landing of the Party from Rotumah.—A Natural Cave.—A Native Banquet.—Departure from Auth Luna.—Attan Islet.—Regain the Schooner.—Their Navigator deserts them.—A Row.—Departure from Rotumah - - - 170

CHAP. IX.

Mywolla.—Make the Reef again.—The Captain takes all the Seamen to the Wreck and it falls calm.—The Vessel drifts out of Sight of the Reef.—Westerly Current in part accounted for.—Abandonment of the Wreck.—Make for the Bay of Islands.—Alteration of Plans.—The Vessel grounds on a Shoal off the North Shore opposite Auckland.—Auckland improved, but Cash scarce.—“Little Tom” quits the Vessel.—New Master engaged.—Under weigh for Tahiti.—Sight Huaheine and Raiatea.—Pass between Moorea and Tahiti.—The entrance to it.—Tahiti described.—Its People.—Missionary Influence.—Queen Pomare the Head of the Island.—The Government shared by seven Chiefs.—Laws in force at Night.—Ancient Rites superseded by more enlightened Instructions.—Avata Shark.—Horrible Sacrifice of an Infant by its Father.—The Symbol conveyed to an intended Human Sacrifice.—Form of the unhollowed Oblation.—Want of Jealousy towards White Men accounted for.—Conversation with Flowers.—Process of manufacturing Tappa.—Native Colours,—A curious Method of producing a Red Dye.—Canoes.—Novel mode of Fishing.—Native Houses.—Method of Cooking.—Diseases of the Country - - - - - 203

CHAP. X.

A Pearling Expedition. — The Island of Maitea. — Chain Island. — Engage Divers. — Neingo Neingo. — Bow Island. — Amanu. — Entrance to Bow Island. — The Fārā Tree. — A Morai. — Custom of making Offerings to the Spirit and the Manes of the Departed. — The manner of Diving. — Finish Diving. — The Bow Islanders. — Visits Agatan, a Savage Island. — Words not Deeds. — Timidity of the Divers. — Singular Ceremonies. — Valorous Deportment of the Interpreter. — Takume or Walchonsky Island. Risks which the Writer had unconsciously encountered. — Raroia. — Tainga. — Makimo. — Katin. — Migratory Disposition of the Natives. — Faiti and Tania. — Red Pearls. — Advantages which the Cocoa-nut Tree confers upon the Chain Islanders. — Their invading Disposition. — War with Agatan Averted. — Character of the Natives. — Get under weigh for Manilla. — Spring a Leak and put back. — Alter the Voyage, and clear out for Valparaiso. — Sight the Andes. — Narrowly escape being wrecked. — The Port of Valparaiso. — The Town or Almadral. — Sunday Practices. — Saints' Days. — Road to Santiago, the Capital. — Agricultural Instruments. — Muleteers. — Country Waggoners. — Costume of the Ox-goalers. — A mounted Wassan. — Mode of Life common to the Muleteers and Carriage Drivers. — Santiago. — Anniversary Rejoicings. — Anecdote of an English Equestrian. — Equestrian Skill of the Chilenos. — The Maypo. — Its Bridge. — Traditionary Saying of the Indians. — The Almeida. — Signoritas. — Ball-rooms. — Gota. — The Theatre. — Quiltota. — Exports of Chili. — Foreign Commerce. — Extraordinary Requirement to render written Documents valid. — A Case in point. — Periodical Visits of Small-pox. — Shocks of Earthquakes common. — Aboriginal Race apparently extinct in the Neighbourhood

- - - - 236

CHAP. XI.

The Classes that should quit England. — Under weigh for Tahiti. — Gambier's Islands. — French Priests and their Influence. — Timoe or Crescent Island. — Osaburg Island, or Matilda Rocks. — Sight Anā. — Drop Anchor in Taonoa Passage, Tahiti. — French Protection forced on Tahiti by Admiral du Petit Thouars. — Taken to the Calliboose by Natives. — A Dish of Sauce from a Mutineer. — Condolence from a Descendant of the House of Israel. — Liberation from Confinement. — The Captors tried and fined. — The

Author of "Typee" and "Omoo."—His Memory assisted.—Commodore Wilkes.—Bound for Raiatea.—Industry of the Natives.—Tapoa, the King of Borabora.—Tahaa and its Reefs, &c.—Bound on another Pearl-ling Voyage.—The Island of Ohiteroa or Rurutu.—Tedious Passage to Rapa.—Engage Divers with Difficulty.—Tioo.—The Queen of Rapa.—Her Character for Gallantry.—Religion of the People.—A narrow Escape.—Bass's Rocks.—Adverse Winds.—Gambier's Islands again.—Conduct of French Priests.—Behaviour of Mareva Natives.—Leave Gambier's Islands.—A Comet.—Sight Lord Hood's Island.—Les four Facardines.—Thrum Cap Island.—At Anchor in the Lagoon of Bow Island.—Engage Bow Islanders.—Sudden Sickness and Death of a Native.—Visible Tokens from the Tupapan.—An Arrival from Amann.—Perfidy of a Sandwich Islander.—Fishing Excursions.—Cease Diving for want of Food.—A Fugitive from the Island of Faecatae.—Return of the Schooner.—Captain's Report.—The Jules de Blossville, a French Brig.—Conduct of her Captain.—Give up Diving.—Remarks on Pearls.—The "Doctor's" Saucepan.—A Calm.—Aviri, or Prince William Henry Island.—A Gale.—Sight Rapa.—Go ashore in a Boat.—Mortality amongst the Natives.—Superstitiously accounted for.—Parting Benediction from Rapa.—Gale renewed.—Speak the French Barque Jules César.—The Gale continues.—Again fall in with the Jules César.—Isle Masafuera.—Juan Fernandez.—Reach Valparaiso.—Arrival of a Schooner.—Bad Passage made by every Vessel coming from the Westward.—Loss of the Vessel into which Cargo had been transhipped at Tahiti for Sydney

ROVINGS

IN

THE PACIFIC.

CHAPTER I.

Determine on leaving England.—Visit the School-house of my Boyhood.—Appointed to a Vessel bound to New South Wales.—Farewell of Home.—Join the Vessel at Deptford.—Description of my Berth.—Chance of being starved.—Ship unmoored for Spithead.—Prison-ship described.—Captain, &c. comes on Board, and shortly after Three hundred and ten Prisoners.

“Pity he loved adventurous life’s variety.”

1837.—IN the first dawn of manhood, but an unweaned infant to the world and its ways, it was at the commencement of the year 1837 that I found myself slowly recovering from an attack of pleurisy, which had reduced me to the brink of the grave, the illness which had so prostrated me having been induced by anxiety of mind brought on by blighted hopes and ruined affections. Utterly ignorant of all commercial affairs, with a burning sensitiveness of my

want of knowledge, in vain I directed my thoughts this way and that : the world was before me, and a dreary prospect it presented.

I had taken up my abode for a few days at a tavern in the Borough, and whilst moodily brooding over my position, at length arrived at the conclusion that England was no place for me, and I'd go abroad. By going abroad, I had no particular part of the globe in view ; all I desired was to escape from scenes and faces I had known under different circumstances ; and I thought that in some far distant country, where I was unknown, I might probably win my way through life, without exposing myself to derisive scorn or sympathy. I was no longer a boy literally speaking ; yet I felt that in England, every person I met was more than my master at all its ways, and the only chance I had was to fly from it, and that as speedily as possible. Little did I reckon as to what extremity of the earth I might be carried ; only let me get out of England, away from the scenes that were crushing me, and I had no fear.

Amongst the acquaintances I had contracted were some staid commercial men whom I occasionally met in the commercial room of the tavern above alluded to ; and to one of them I mentioned my determination to leave the country. " Are you serious ? " inquired he. " If so, I can put you in the way of going to Australia free of expense." I soon convinced him of my earnestness, and he assured me " that in a day or two he would make it all right."

When a lad at school, I had skimmed Cook's and other navigators' " Voyages round the World ;" but

my knowledge of Australia was limited to the recollection, that the climate was salubrious, the natives a primitive race that went about in a state of nudity, and but little excelling the monkey in intelligence, and that the country abounded with kangaroos and other queer animals. Never mind, it was almost at the antipodes, and as I wanted to place distance between me and England, by Jupiter, thought I, here's a chance; and so sanguine was I of getting away, that, without waiting to hear anything further, I mounted one of the long stages to take a last farewell of the spot where I had passed my childish days. On arriving at the country village no one greeted me, and, although many an inquiring eye was cast upon me, I passed unrecognised several fine young men and women whom I remembered as boys and girls with "shining morning faces."

The first house I visited was the old school-house: it was no longer in the same hands, and I had to crave permission to walk over the grounds. The school had dwindled away, and there was a sort of withered aspect about the place, which was in unison with the tone of my feelings. The house was the same, and in one of the windows of the upper story, I descried the identical pane of glass I had broken when a little urchin, and for which I received so severe a flogging, that I heard the old pedagogue say, "I should remember it for a month, which would teach me to throw stones for the future." But every thing wore a neglected, melancholy appearance, and impressed me with such a sense of my own loneliness, that I felt relieved when I was once more in the sunshine

of the street. I paid a round of visits, and had to make myself known to all I called upon; and, unseasonable to some as the hour of my visit proved, I would not take "No" for a denial, but persisted in grasping, for the last time, the hands that had been locked in childhood with mine.

On returning to the City, my friend apprised me that a large vessel was to sail for Sydney in a few days, and if I felt so disposed, I could join her; but there was no time to lose. Government had chartered the vessel to convey convicts to New South Wales, and as, by regulation, she was bound to carry more hands than the complement required for mere navigation, if I would submit to have my name put on the ship's articles, I should be treated kindly, and landed in Sydney, and I could render any service in my power on the voyage. I jumped at these terms, and was directed to the agent's office in Mark Lane. The agent seemed surprised at my appearance, but finding there was no mistake, introduced me to the ship's husband: this gentleman received me with kindness, and gave me an order to join the vessel, but recommended me to doff the exterior garments of a gentleman, and to don vestments more assimilating to the garb of those who earn their bread upon the waters. I thanked him, and hastened to one of the large slop warehouses in the city, where I made as limited a selection of articles as I deemed necessary for the voyage, for, goodness knows, my purse was at the lowest neap. I then took my way to the suburbs, to bid farewell to some relatives. On the road I met my father; the poor old gentleman reeled like a drunken

man, when I made the announcement that I was off; but there was no help for him or me, so I steadily pursued my purpose, resolving that no unavailing weakness should overcome me. That afternoon I was at home to join in the last dinner I was ever destined to partake beneath my father's roof tree:—the family meeting was a painful one, scarcely a word was spoken, and I was not sorry when the spring van arrived to convey my luggage to the vessel. Suppressing my emotions as I best could, I quickly effected a change in my apparel, and bidding a hasty, but a hearty adieu, to those who were weeping around me, I leapt into the van, and desired the driver to push on, fearful of betraying my manhood if I turned my head. I kept a steadfast gaze between the horse's ears, and remained insensible to all objects in passing till we arrived at Deptford, off which place the ship was lying. Hailing a waterman's boat, in a few minutes I was alongside. It was in the latter end of February, and the evening was closing in rain and chilly, as I found myself on the quarter-deck, in the very centre of confusion. No one noticed me; so, thinking I had staid sufficiently long to have secured ample admiration, I ventured to inquire of one of the men near me, where I was to put my trunks.

“Divil a bit of me knows,” said the lusty Hibernian; “here's no room for yez, any how.”

“Well I can't leave my trunks here, room or no room.”

“Bad cess to it then! Hurroah bye, bear a hand!” and with that he commenced dragging my trunks along the deck, until they disappeared, beneath his

herculean gripe, in a mysterious sort of cavern, called the after hatchway.

Presently Pat emerged from the darkness, carrying over his shoulder a hammock, in which was lashed his sea stock. "By Jasus," he ejaculated, "I'm off to the fo'castle." Where that particular locality was, I had not the slightest idea; but as my good-natured friend hurried to the fore part of the vessel, I supposed it had something to do with that direction. I remained on deck a short space longer, to see if any one would question me; but as they did not, I thought it advisable to follow the track my trunks had taken. Descending with caution, I stumbled into a strange scene: hammocks were suspended from the beams, and side-berths, like so many cribs in a manger, ran along either side of the vessel and against the dividing partition. Trunks, hammocks, chests, old clothes, hats, shoes, and every species of litter bestrewed the deck in the most indescribable confusion, rendered worse by the light with which I beheld it, the fitful yellow glare of a tin lamp fed with black oil, the flame issuing from a spout in the centre, and continually vomiting forth clouds of unctuous smoke. I almost imagined I had made a descent into Pandemonium, and the compound of villanous smells that saluted my olfactory nerves did not tend to mitigate the idea. Little, or, I should say, not the slightest attention was shown to me, and I commenced a search for my boxes. In case of need, I had purchased a hammock; and as I looked round in vain for a place where I could repose for the night, I commenced slinging this nautical couch. My awkwardness excited the commiseration

of one of the 'prentices, who came to my aid, and secured it properly. Thanking the youngster for his kindness, and by a strong effort of the will turning a deaf ear to all the noises going on around me, and disregarding the suffocating air and foul stench, I clambered into this pendulous stretcher, and schooled myself for the trials before me. In the midst of my resolves, I fell asleep. I was awake again long before daylight, but it was some minutes before I was fully conscious of my situation, and it was with feelings of unwonted depression that I listened to the deep breathing of the slumberers beside and around me. I had experienced hitherto but little of the hardships of life: this was the first time I had slept out of a bed, and without undressing for the occasion; and I felt stiff and feverish, longing for the light of morning. Once when at home, I thought I had been particularly ill-used, because on one occasion, during the winter, linen sheets had been spread for me instead of cotton, but I now began to fancy that other times were in store for me.

With the first breaking of the grey dawn, a tremendous knocking was heard over head, and then came a bellow which appeared to have issued from the throat of an insane bull: this I speedily discovered was the polite way of summoning the ship's company to their work. The lurid haze of the fetid lamp was still smouldering, but only so as to cast every thing into still deeper shadow, and the scene which followed the mild and gentle call would have deterred a less determined purpose than mine. Such hawking, spitting, and combination of sights and sounds, it had

never been my lot to see or hear of. I was disgusted beyond measure, and rushed upon deck to rid me of this waking incubus. The air was sharp and bracing, and after I had immersed my head and hands in a bucket of water drawn from alongside, I felt refreshed. The men dispersed themselves about various duties, but no one noticed me. The captain and officers had not yet come on board, and I found myself subjected to a similar disregard when meal-time came, so that I ran a pretty good chance of being starved within sight of my native mud; a termination to my adventures of which I felt by no means ambitious. Accordingly, at the mid-day meal, I inquired of a set of fellows who were sitting with naked feet around a mess-kid of beef and potatoes, to which they appeared to be paying their respects with considerable zest, where I could amuse my jaws in the same agreeable exercise. The fellows grinned, but were at a loss how to advise me. "D—n it all," said I, "I can't afford to starve altogether, and reluctant as I feel to intrude upon your commons, if you'll just pass me the kid, I'll try and hold out till I see what the devil's to become of me." One of the men by this time had coaxed the kid between his legs, and after surveying its contents with a wistful air, he suddenly caught hold of a shoe that happened to be lying within his reach, and first moistening the upper leather with his spittle, vigorously stropped his knife thereon, and with unabated zeal attacked the beef. He was like a fresh soldier to the breach, and notwithstanding the disgust I felt at the way he prepared his weapon, I could not but entertain

reasonable apprehensions for any renewed assault on the part of his comrades: however, my fears proved groundless; the kid was relinquished to my grasp, and, carefully eschewing the side of the meat that had received the incision from the last carnivorous blade, I helped myself sparingly, resolving for the future to come in for my share of first cuts, no matter how or where I obtained them.

The following day I received the same degree of attention, but on the next the captain and some of the officers came on board, and I had to undergo a painful interview with some of my friends, who endeavoured, in vain, to shake my resolution. One kind-hearted friend saw into my position, and wanted to arrange for my passage in the cuddy; but I had passed the Rubicon, and by unflinchingly submitting to the ordeal I had voluntarily subjected myself to, I thought I should the better prepare myself to encounter future hardships; nevertheless, this generous friend would not take my word, but endeavoured to make arrangements with the captain. His efforts, however, proved unavailing, as the captain explained that his cabins had been entirely taken up by the government; but he promised to treat me well, as I should be of service to him on the voyage, and when my friend had taken his departure, he sent for me, and regretting his inability to alter my position, promised to make me as comfortable as possible, so soon as he could get the ship to rights. This was encouraging, and as night again approached, thoroughly out of conceit with hammocks, I selected one of the unoccu-

pied cribs or bunks, as sailors call them, for my future resting-place.

“All hands to unmoor” was the meaning of the hoarse roar that came rushing down the hatchway, as day broke the next morning, and one of the mates, following up the cry, came blundering in amongst the boxes with “Tumble up there, tumble up; don’t you hear the news? Show a leg or a black stocking.” The capstan was manned and the anchor was soon swinging at the bows. I paid very little attention to the scenery as we proceeded down the river, my whole soul being taken up with the past; and so intense were my reminiscences, that I forgot the present and took no heed for the future. Once only I was aroused to a sense of what was going on around me, by a little spurt that took place at the helm. The pilot was training his son to the river; and his son, a stout young man, had got hold of the spokes of the wheel. “Port,” growled the pilot. “Port, sir?” was the response. “Port, I say,” shouted the pilot like an outraged bear. “Port it is,” angrily rejoined the son. “And port it should be, d—n your eyes,” was the paternal benediction. The son stood rebuked, and notwithstanding the ominous scowl depicted in the sire’s countenance, I could not refrain from bursting into a shout of laughter, which ill-timed levity by no means added to the amiability of the old sea-bear’s expression.

Arrived at Spithead, where we were to take in the convicts, the order was passed that no one was to leave the vessel; and now I found the time had come when either I must help myself or go to the wall.

All the crew destined for the voyage were on board, and most of them at the outset were rough, surly, and selfish; there were no regular watches, and it appeared to be every man for himself and God for us all. I was very thin and pallid, my hands and face being delicate as a woman's, totally differing from those of the rude beings around me. "I say, you sir," shouted one of these hairy monsters who was securing some spare spars on the long-boat, "give us a handful of grease, will ye?" "Certainly:" and I walked forward, dipped my hand into the cook's slush tub, and literally gave him what he asked for. I never moved a muscle, and the innocent amazement depicted in the fellow's face was so rich, that I enjoyed a quiet internal chuckle. He never troubled me with any more commands; but on the very night of this occurrence, on going below, I found my mattress and bedding tumbled about anywhere, and the dirty bedding of one of the seamen stowed in my bunk. "Hallo! who the devil's had the impudence to do this? Stand clear!" and I flung the intruder's dirty rags right and left; and having again introduced my own clothes, "Now let's see the man," said I, "that'll venture to take 'em out. Not a word was uttered, and I never discovered who it was that had so coolly usurped possession; but this display of determination to stand no nonsense saved me from further molestation of this nature.

We had not long been anchored at Spithead, before a detachment of the 80th regiment came on board, consisting of forty-five soldiers and five or six women, wives to some of the men; and now devolved

upon me the honourable office of marking the blankets and other articles destined for the use of the convicts. For the information of those who have never seen a prison-ship, let me describe it. The whole body of the vessel between decks, from the after-hatch to the fore-hatch, is partitioned off by strong stanchions studded with heavy clout nails, placed so as to prevent the possibility of their being sawn or cut through, apertures being left in the stanchions to admit of the discharge of musketry upon the prisoners in case of their proving refractory. Two tiers of bunks or standing bed-places are ranged one above the other on either side of the space so partitioned off, each bunk being allotted for five men; and down the centre of the vessel run two ranges of hammocks. Part of the crew were berthed abaft the after-hatchway in the dark hole already alluded to, and the remainder had their abode forward of the fore hatchway, which I subsequently learnt was called the fore-castle. From curiosity I did penetrate the saturnine region, and, if possible, the murky den was worse than the dark hole. A man's house is called his castle, but why these gloomy, dark, pestiferous pits should receive the name, I am at a loss to determine. The prisoners' lodgings were better than the crew's. Two cooking ranges, or galleys, as they are called, occupied the bow of the vessel, covered in by a deck from the high bulwarks which rejoices in the stately name of top gallant fore-castle; the after part of the vessel was occupied by a raised deck called the poop, corresponding with the top gallant fore-castle, and beneath this poop were the cuddy and state rooms for the

passengers, spacious and elegant, my wretched crib forming the very bathos to these accommodations. The quarter deck, that part of the upper deck abaft the mainmast, was separated from the waist, or that portion of the deck forward of the mainmast, by a strong barricade, the quarter deck being allotted for the crew, the waist for the prisoners, and the poop for the officers, &c. The soldiers of the guard were lodged in my fashionable locale, their bunks being arranged similar to those destined for the prisoners. For the breadth of the vessel in that part (a fact I could not at first distinguish) was divided by a stout bulkhead, and what I took to be the side of the vessel, after-experience showed me was only a separating partition.

The captain, with his wife and her sister, and the surgeon, joined us at Spithead, and a major, a lieutenant, and an ensign came on board as officers commanding the guard: these formed the *élite* company of the vessel. Every thing being now in readiness, our cargo of convicted sin was brought alongside in launches, each individual member being clad in an uniform of pepper and salt of the most rigid economic cut, their brows being surmounted by woollen caps corresponding in style to the rest of their dress. One leg was also embraced by an anklet of iron supporting a chain of the same precious metal carried up to the waist. I expected to have encountered an ill-looking set of scoundrels, with ferocity depicted under every guise; but the motley group that scrambled up the sides were a hale, hearty, fresh-looking set of fellows, humble and submissive as

lambs: there were no men above the middle age amongst them, although I observed two or three complete boys. We had mechanics of all trades, tailors, shoemakers, butchers, weavers, carpenters, blacksmiths, whitesmiths, locksmiths, tinsmiths, cabinet-makers, workers in brass and gold, engravers, bakers, pastrycooks, farmers, miners, itinerant musicians, glee singers, strollers, and gipseys; and, with reluctance be it spoken, in the list I must include two solicitors and two master mariners.

The sun had dipped below the horizon, when the last of our 310 manacled specimens of zoology was tallied in board, and there was something painfully humiliating in the spectacle of so many human beings huddled together like a flock of sheep: they moved in the same helpless mass at the word of command, just as the said sheep would at the bark of the shepherd's dog; and notwithstanding they had been guilty of crimes which had brought their own punishment, I felt my sympathies strongly enlisted in behalf of the poor fellows, and for a while forgot my own troubles in commiserating theirs.

CHAP. II.

Get under Weigh.—Put into the Boatswain's Mess.—The Messplace and its Members.—Blue Water and a Watch.—Symptoms of Opposition to Imposition.—A boxing Bout.—Prisoners unmanacled.—Night Phenomena.—Steward's Bewilderment : Ghost Stories do not relieve it.—A Second Tom Tucker.—The Captain imparts a Knowledge of the "Royal Brace."—Chinese Drawings lead to a Threat of exhibiting the Pictures.—Cape de Verde and Tristan de Cunha.—Gale to the southward of the Cape of Good Hope.—A Discovery : the Cook's Galley a better Night Station than the Quarter Deck.—A Growl with Chips.—How to hail the Watch.—Pass through Bass's Straits.—First Glimpse at Savage Life.

" Adieu ! adieu ! my native shore
 Fades o'er the waters blue ;
 The night winds sigh, the breakers roar,
 And shrieks the wild seamew.
 Yon sun that sinks upon the sea,
 We follow in his flight ;
 Farewell awhile to him and thee,
 My native land, Good night."

" Away the good ship flies, and leaves old England on our lee."

March 7th.—HITHERTO I have not been particular as to the day of the month, but this was the memorable date of our leaving Old England's shores. What a melancholy sound that heaving at the capstan had ! the jarring and grating of the cable as it came slowly in at the hawse holes had a similar effect upon my nerves ; and with every clank of the chain as they

dragged it along the deck, my hold upon my country seemed dwindling away. But I hadn't long for the indulgence of sorrowful fancies. The talent of one of the itinerant musicians was put in requisition; seated upon the capstan head, with a shrill fife he struck up a lively air, and away we gyrated with the capstan bars spinning round and round with a "stamp and go," keeping time to the measure: the anchor was aweigh, the wind was fair, and I soon took my farewell gaze at Britain.

We were scarcely fairly at sea, when the captain, for the second time since I had been on board, accosted me. "Agréably to my promise," said he, "I have stationed you in the boatswain's mess: I think you will be more comfortable there than in the third mate's, and you will have a boy to wait upon you." I bowed my acknowledgments, and as he was a man of few words, this second interview terminated. The mess I was appointed to consisted of the boatswain, the carpenter, the sail-maker, the ship's steward, two apprentices, and myself, and the place where we held our daily symposiums is worthy of description. Chock aft, that is, as far in the stern of the vessel as you could possibly get, separated from the common 'tween-deck berth by a bulkhead, was a triangular nook, impervious to daylight or fresh air; two bunks occupied one of its angular sides, and four hammocks hung suspended cheek by jowl, which were triced close up to the deck overhead when not in use. The scene was illumined night and day by one of the sputtering train oil lamps I have described, and the lights at Mahomet's tomb in the cave at Mecca were

not more carefully attended to as regards their extinguishment, than was our solitary noxious illuminator; but whether this attention was inspired by devotion or by fear of the boatswain's fist, let others determine. The carpenter's tool-chest formed the dining-table, the sail-maker from his stores of old canvass furnished us tablecloths, and the chests of the sleeping inmates of this earthly elysium, secured by cleets to the deck, formed the banqueting-seats. Our dinner service, which also served us for breakfast and supper, consisted of a pannikin, a tin-plate, a tinned iron spoon, and a knife and fork for each individual. I made no pretensions to superior notions of gentility, but, bearing in mind the old adage, carefully did at Rome what the people at Rome do. It was the duty of the boys to look after the table gear, and to keep the den clean; and I have often been not a little amused at witnessing the younger of the two, a brat under twelve years of age, clear a way for himself from the cook's galley, by shouting out "scaldings, scaldings," although he might be carrying nothing of a more burning character than the plates and pannikins he had just been submitting to the act of purification. And now let me speak of my messmates. The boatswain was esteemed a first-rate seaman, a man of about five feet eight in height, but with limbs and a breadth and depth of chest that could well have supported an additional foot in altitude. His head was massive as his body, but round as a bullet, thickly covered with coal-black hair, inclined to curly: he had a frank manly look, which did not belie his character, and a mouth furnished

with a most powerful set of grinders, which was continually laughing "all over his face." He was exceedingly good tempered, had an ambition to learn to write and cipher, and was imbued with much of that harmless superstitious lore which sailors love to impart one to the other during the unbroken stillness of the mysterious night-watches. "Old Sails," as his name implies, was past the prime of life, a tall gaunt figure, the ruins of a Hercules; his body was warped by age, and he hadn't a rounded limb belonging to him; but where the plumpness of youth had faded, the muscles and sinews protruded in cords and bunches, bringing out his joints in acute angles. His long horny fingers resembled carrots marled together, but they curved like talons; his shaggy black locks were still exempted from the bleaching effects of time, and were matted on his brow like the intermingled masses in the front of a buffalo; his forehead was low, and his remarkably small eye, shaded by a penthouse of thick black hair, when excited by mirth or anger, would nearly disappear, but emit a sparkling light like the glancing of a fire-fly, whilst innumerable wrinkles would radiate from the outer corners. He was never without a plug of the weed of wisdom in his mouth, and the drainings from it imparted a liquorice appearance to his mouth and teeth. He was a great admirer of the Romans and Carthaginians, and ever ready to lug them into his discourse; his knowledge of their history having been derived from a mutilated metrical account of the Punic wars. The carpenter, or "Chips," as was his more common appellation, was the medium in years

between the boatswain and sail-maker, a dry caustic being, of reserved habits, and inclined to be cynical; like many of his class, his frame was bowed from the nature of his work, and his legs resembled the styles of a pair of compasses; he had a crafty clear blue eye; and his head, square as a die, was covered with a close crop of flat curling brown hair, and altogether the expression of his face was a combination of reserve and cunning. Shakspeare was his idol, and his works formed the only volume in his possession; and in any controversy he was as ready with his favourite author as "Old Sails" was to lug into the field his Roman history. The steward was a hot-headed Irishman, staunch in the performance of his duty, favoring neither friend nor foe, and in that respect well qualified for his situation; but he was rather fond of taking Purser's nips, and in consequence towards night would talk with a somewhat thickened burr, grow disputatious, and occasionally roll out his brogue in a way practicable only by a true Milesian. On these occasions I would delight in leading them into a perplexed train of argument, when "Sails" would be roaring about the *Carthaginians*, "Chips" be thumbing Shakspeare in search of a text to settle the point in discussion, and the steward would be consigning every thing to the "pit of blazes;" "he wouldn't give a fig for Shakspeare or the Carthyganians,—what would England do without Ould Ireland? Who supplies her navy with provisions? Ould Ireland! Who furnishes her army with sogers? Ould Ireland! Don't talk to me about yer Mark Antonys, yer Julius Casars, or yer Mer-

chants of Vanus. Masther Bony would have had you long ago if it hadn't been for the Irish; and if the Union was to be repaled, England would go to glory." The boatswain all this time would be swaying his body from side to side, his mouth distended by a broad grin; and when the confusion had reached its highest, I would interfere, and with a torrent of words and volubility of utterance there was no standing up against, quote authorities, or pretend to quote them, settle the affairs of Europe in a twinkling, laugh at Scipio, call Hannibal a fool, tell Shakspeare to bag his head, and the steward to shut his potato-trap as a know-nothing bogtrotter, and before the astonished disputants could rally in defence of their arguments or favorites, I would seize a pack of cards and call out to cut for partners, "all fours" being the highly *recherché* game with which we used to while away the hours known to the initiated as "dog-watches." The two apprentices had both been a voyage to the East: the eldest was a quiet lad, earnest in his desire to acquire his profession; but the youngest was the smallest mite, though the biggest scamp that ever had limbs swathed in canvas: he was a *protégé* of "Old Sails," who used to regard him much as a bear would be supposed to fondle a pet monkey, but the young imp had got the measure of "Old Sails'" foot, and well he knew how to work him.

March to July.—We were no sooner in blue water and well clear of the land, when the chief officer politely greeted me, and told me I was in his watch.

“I beg your pardon, I did not come here to be a sailor. I'll do anything consistent with my abilities, and am not above using my hands, but I never bargained for keeping night-watches.”

“Ridiculous nonsense,” he replied; “everybody else in the ship keeps them, and why should you wish to be exempt?” And what by cajolery and argument, abounding in rigmarole, but none the more convincing on that account, I felt compelled, seeing no remedy, to submit to circumstances; for having been induced, by representations of the ship's husband, to put my signature to a scroll which was presented to me, I fancied remonstrance would be idle, and might make matters worse. Here I was then, regularly installed as an ordinary, or with more propriety it should be said, an extraordinary seaman. I was not so grateful at my appointment as perhaps I might have been, and I made an internal vow, that if the mate fancied by this manœuvre to secure me as a companion to cheat the dull hours of night, he should find himself mistaken. 'Twas bitter cold when my first night-watch commenced (from 8 till 12), and flakes of snow kept me company as I underwent my initiation. The men of the watch were stowed in every place on deck where they could find shelter, and I was not long in securing a berth for myself, by stowing my carcass in the topsail halyard rack. My nose and knees were jammed together, and in defiance of freezing winds, falling snow, and all the other combinations of evil, I lapsed into slumber. I had not remained long insensible to my mortifications, when I felt myself roughly shaken by the collar, and heard a

gruff voice say, "Come, I say, you sir, get out of this; that's my place."

Soon as my dull senses comprehended the purport of this summons, I bounded up like an exasperated tiger. "Is it, by Heaven! It is if you are a better man than I; so come on;" and I commenced sparing at him in a paroxysm of rage.

"No, no, no! Mister, I was only joking."

"Joking, were you? then just mind your eye how you joke again, my fine fellow, or you may find yourself in the wrong box!" And with this I again settle down in the envied rack.

In the morning watch (from 4 till 8), I was inducted into the mysteries of a lee helmsman, and the last two hours of it saw me burnishing cutlasses and boarding-pikes, swabbing decks, pumping ship, pulling here, hauling there, till my hands felt like two blisters. "Tough yarns these, sir," says one of the men; "anyhow, its what may be called yarning one's breakfast." I perfectly concurred with him in that idea, and eight bells striking, retreated like a rabbit to its warren, to partake of that meal; and now I became regularly introduced to my messmates. The boatswain, as president, received me with a chuckle, and I made my salutations in a way to relieve the whole mess from too overpowering a sense of the important personage introduced amongst them. Breakfast over, there was a general surrender of all private stores for the joint benefit of the mess, the boatswain taking charge of the stock. The daily ship's allowance was beef, duff, and biscuit one day; pork, pea-soup, and biscuit the next, with an allowance of

water, every one having to find his own small stores. Very different was the beef now from that I partook of when I first came on board. Beef! heavens, what an hallucination! The fagged ends of a birchen rod steeped in brine possess as much delicacy and flavour. — I was acquainted with the taste of the latter when a juvenile scholastic tyro, and therefore am qualified to speak upon the subject. The pork, when warm, was so rank and oleaginous, 'twas impossible to eat it; and then was the time when I sang the praises of “Ould Ireland,” and lauded the country that kept us all from starving. Who has not seen or heard of a November London fog? how often has it been compared to pea-soup? but never until I saw the mixture passing by that name on board ship, was I so thoroughly convinced of the aptness of the similitude. Our fellows used to call it dog's body;” and they had a doggrel chant about the beef, of which I remember a stanza or two, viz.: —

“ Old horse, old horse, what brought you here?
 You have drawn turf for many a year,
 With knocks and kicks and sore abuse,
 Now salted down for sailor's use.”

The duff was a delectable mixture of cook's slush, flour and water turned into a canvass bag shaped like a sugar loaf, secured at the base or mouth by a piece of marline, knotted with several telegraphic knots, to distinguish it from that belonging to any other mess, boiled in common in the ship's coppers. Uninviting as the description of it may appear, 'twas the only thing, besides the biscuit, which I could stomach, for

as our mess, by virtue of its standing, was admitted to the privilege of consuming the meridian allowance of grog below, — a privilege denied to the rest of the ship's company, — I was enabled to manufacture a kind of sauce, which aided me in stowing away a sufficient cargo to keep me in ballast trim, as the "Old Salts" had it; and I proved the value of the saying, that "a light heart and a thin pair of breeches carry a man through the world." To repine was useless, and although the biscuit could have almost answered in the affirmative to the Scriptural query of "if he ask for bread would ye give him a stone?" I found means of rendering it less flinty, but not until I had unfortunately sacrificed two molars, one on either side of the upper jaw, in the vain attempt to soften its obduracy. I yielded to the blast, as sailors would say, and, in defiance of all obstacles, managed to extract both fun and information out of my novel situation. If haply I had succumbed to others at the commencement, I should have led the life of a dog. My appearance, as before remarked, was anything but robust, and judging from this that I was more fit for a barber's clerk than to mix with sailors, as some of them subsequently told me, they attempted practical jokes and impositions, "but," said they, "you were too old for us." Their last attempt occurred after we had been about a week at sea. 'Twas one morning about five o'clock, when preparations had commenced for washing decks: the sun had sent Aurora with her blushing tribute to announce his coming, and I stood entranced at the gangway, lost in admiration at the glorious spectacle. A small spar used to be

made fast at the gangway for the purpose of facilitating the drawing of water, and whilst entirely absorbed in my pleasing contemplation, the fellow, sent to secure it, dropped it designedly upon my head. Had it been an accident, I should have taken no notice of it, or if the fellow had offered an apology, however awkward; but happening to turn quickly, I detected him in the act of making grimaces at his comrades, who were laughing immoderately. This could not be overlooked, so I stepped up and dealt him a smart open-handed box on the ear; in an instant he was at me, and a pugilistic encounter commenced on the quarter-deck. The battle was long maintained on equal terms, when an unfortunate roll of the vessel, seconding a blow I received, sent me rolling in the lee scuppers. Boisterous was the shout from my antagonist and his cronies; but it did not last long. Returning to the encounter with the speed of light, but cautiously guarding against a similar mischance, I drove him backwards, till I pinned him against the pump brake, and there pummeled him to his heart's content. The mate, all this time, was an observant spectator of the engagement from the poop, but feigned not to notice it. After I had taken ample satisfaction, I left my adversary blowing like a broken-winded horse, and admonished him to be more cautious for the future, how he played tricks upon travellers. To his credit be it spoken, he bore me no malice, and at any time thereafter was ready to oblige me.

The rivets were stricken from the prisoners' manacles soon after the land appeared like a cloud

in the distance, and they were allowed the unfettered use of their limbs. To some this may sound imprudent; but what could the helpless beings do? There wasn't one in fifty, probably, who had been to sea before, and though equally probable that even a less number than that was as well versed in Shakspeare as the learned "Chips," yet all might have participated in the feeling that it was better "to bear the ills we have, than fly to others that we know not of." Their conduct was inoffensive throughout the voyage, and when the first joltings, pitchings, and rollings had caused things to subside in their proper places, one of the quondam solicitors commenced editing a manuscript newspaper, under the title of the "Traveller," with "Open to all, influenced by none," for its watchword of independence. It afforded great amusement; and as the editor's box was suspended close to the stanchions of the after-hatchway, it used to receive general contributions. It was issued every Saturday evening, and two sheets of foolscap, ruled in columns, were regularly filled with close small writing. It had its advertisements, its city and foreign intelligence, its leader, state of markets and stocks, police and law reports, fashionable news, literary notices, original essays, poets' corner, correspondence, &c. &c., and I look upon some of the essays as worthy of being characterised in print. Independent of literary labour for the "Traveller," I persevered in maintaining a daily journal; but the monotony of the voyage was nearly unbroken. We were weeks on end without encountering a living creature, either in the air above us or in the water below.

One fine Sunday afternoon, when we were thousands of miles from land, a solitary fly of the blue-bottle species made its appearance on the poop, buzzing in the sunshine. It is impossible to tell where the wanderer came from, and its position seemed so exactly to correspond with my own, that I could not but entertain a lively interest in its welfare. Some of the night phenomena used to arrest my admiration when I was not too cold or too sleepy to attend to them; the brilliancy of the stars, and the phosphorescent sparkling of the waters, when occasionally the ship would appear to be ploughing her way through molten silver, would at times tend to dispel sleep; and I have seen two or three rainbows simultaneously reflected in the concave vault above us, from the hueless rays of the moon and sparkling stars; but there was one phenomenon that attracted my attention fully as much as either of the others, and this was an octagon-shaped construction provided with lattice work, and resembling a pigeon-house, which was shipped on the capstan head. Man is a carnivorous animal: this being admitted, it will also be allowed that hunger has been known to break through stone walls; biscuit and duff did not tend at all times to allay the cravings of my nature, and this octagonal construction was the steward's safe. Often had I beheld the remnants of other fare enter its recesses; and as the concatenation of sympathies has often been dwelt upon by philosophic writers, my bowels yearned to scrape better acquaintance with them. But how was this to be achieved—"nusquam tuta fides?" Two soldiers with

drawn cutlasses were always stationed on the quarter deck, and the officer from the poop could overlook it; but the door of this safe was secured by a brass padlock, bearing a wonderful resemblance to the one that fastened my carpet bag; and when the wolf was grunbling in my viscera during the little hours of the night, I perambulated to and fro till I seized the auspicious moment to essay the key. The wards flew back and the lock was in my hand—I took a turn—no eye was upon me: the door opened, and I had a fowl in my grasp,—’twas not the work of a second to tear it in two; and again the door was closed, and I was renewing my tramp. With similar precaution I contrived to replace the padlock; and no schoolboy ever exulted more over a handful of apples purloined from a neighbouring orchard, than I did over my prize. Stolen fruit, they say, is the sweetest: let also the vacuum in my abdominal region be taken into consideration. It was not my watch that followed this raid; but curiosity to see how the cuddy steward would take his discovery induced me to be on the alert. With his usual bustling and important air, he rattled away at the lock, and cast the door wide open on its hinges; but soon his tallow face displayed a look of the most ludicrous horror; his head moved slowly from side to side, but it brought him no relief; he examined the lock, but that was all right. At last, persuaded there was no altering matters, he commenced his preparations, and I returned to my bunk with redoubled gratification. I waited a day or two before renewing my attack, and then a couple of cold sausages fell into my clutch;

and on another occasion a handful of *twice-laid* rewarded my exertions. Alas for the stultified steward! the marks of fingers were too palpable to admit of doubts, and the only resource at his command was to cheat himself into the belief that he had been helping himself when drunk. If he had not himself been the custodian of the key, and slept with his breeches stowed as a pillow beneath his head, he might have fancied that some one had picked his pocket; but now the mystery was insoluble, and the irregularity of the depredations only added to his unaccountable amazement. But I assisted in finding a clue to guide his ideas, which doubtless afforded him great relief. Frequently, in the dog-watches, the sailors would resort for pastime to spinning yarns. Ghost stories were a very favourite theme; and our berth, with its sickly unhallowed-looking light, was admirably adapted for the relation of such narratives. The boatswain had a whole budget of apparitions, death warnings, and spiritual tokens from friends far distant; "Sails" could talk of the spirit that visited Brutus; and "Chips" could quote Hamlet, Banquo, and the sheeted ghosts of those who shook the guilty soul of Richard III. I always had an "olla podrida" of ghosts and spectres ready for any occasion, and whenever I saw the steward's cadaverous face peering amongst the listeners, I never failed to launch out with the wildest horrors, till his black hair would bristle behind his ears like the back of an incensed hedgehog. I made particular allusion to bogles and brownies, kempies and water sprites; and when his superstitious fears

were by these means duly prepared to listen to the recital without exciting his suspicions, I would tell of milk-pans being capsized, bread soiled, cheese stolen, black puddings ripped up, and other cantrips equally astounding; and then, before the steward had any chance of betraying his own individual experience, I would set up a horse laugh, and ridicule the whole as a parcel of nonsense: so the steward kept his secret, and I preserved mine. But he, poor fellow, had lost the pride of office; his pomp had considerably abated; and I have seen his bunch of keys involuntarily jingle as he proceeded, with nervous trepidation, to inspect his safe. I was careful, notwithstanding, to keep my visits within discretionary bounds, and when he was laid up for four or five days, the result, perhaps, of having to bear the weight of so responsible a secret in silence, I abstained altogether; for his *locum tenens*, the oldest 'prentice, a strapping long-gutted youngster, was capable of putting out of sight the ghost's share of the scraps as well as his own; moreover, he was an astute young shaver, and might have demurred at any spiritual intrusion on his corporeal perquisites. The steward would leer at him as he lay in his berth, his lack-lustre eyes wearing about as lively an expression as those in the head of a dead cod; but the boy made no complaints, and turning on his side with a dolorous sigh, he dared not venture any leading inquiries.

“Misery makes a man acquainted with strange bedfellows,” and I can vouch for it that the old saying holds good with those that travel under peculiar circumstances. One point I had established for myself

was, that I would keep no dog-watch ; and the four hours, allotted by two hour spells, to break and change the regular watch, I devoted to "all fours," singing, spinning yarns, and similar instructive and entertaining pursuits ; but sometimes, when I was in the middle of a song, and in the very height of a demisemiquaver, the captain would send his steward down with his compliments (ironically) and a request that I wouldn't make quite so much noise. "Give my compliments," I would reply, "and tell him I regret he has got such a bad ear for music."

Independent of the ship's steward and cuddy steward, the captain had his private steward, a fellow black as a coal. Jemmy was a native of Lombock : his hair stood on end like the bristles of a surprised boar, and he had remarkably elongated jaws, flattened at the sides, but a much finer ear for melody than his master, for he used to say to me, "I say, misser, I wis' you sing me 'at song ; 'pose you sing me 'at song, I make you nice 'ittle loaffee."

"What song, you nigger?" Hereupon Jem would screw up his mouth till it resembled the stern of a hen when scudding before the wind, and jerk out a whistle resembling the tune in agony of the song he wished to hear.

"There, that'll do, Jem; no gammon about the loaf then; hot, you know, with a dab of butter?"

"'Es, 'es, no you see afore?"

"Well, then, here goes:" and behold the scion of an illustrious house, the godson of the late Duke of Kent, the father of the present Queen of England, singing to an unreclaimed nigger, like little Tom

Tucker, for white bread and butter. Let those who despise my philosophy do better with their own. I prefer the laughing to the weeping sect, and epicurean comforts to ascetic privations.

Our captain proved a stern say-nothing-to-me sort of fellow. He was a man of middling stature, rather spare than otherwise, with a complexion burnt by frequent visits to tropical regions, dark as a red Indian's; his mouth was drawn slightly on one side; he rarely smiled, and although not a man of colloquial habits, generally contrived to pass a few words to me every day, for he rarely by any chance came on the poop, when I was there, without saying "Mr. —, I'll trouble you for a small pull at the royal brace;" and as he hauled in the slack whilst I pulled, I acquired in time a knowledge of the rope. He was subject occasionally to fits of the gravel and brandy-and-water, and when under the influence of the latter, was more sparing of his words than ever; but he would purse his lower lip, and look awfully savage. At these times, if any of his young gentlemen offended him (for there were eight or nine aspirants being instructed in the art of greasing masts, blacking yards, tarring rigging, boiling pitch, making sinnett, and other branches of the noble profession of seamanship); he would watch till he caught the eye of the offender, and then with a crook of the forefinger beckon the luckless wight to him: "I say, young fellow, you had better take care, or I'll show you the pictures," would slowly issue from his tightly compressed teeth; and as this was a threat but seldom used, and rarely repeated to the same individual, it

produced a very powerful effect; but as it may puzzle the uninitiated to discover the hidden charm contained in these words, I will endeavour to explain the abracadabra. In one of his voyages to China, the captain had caused his private cabin to be hung with certain Chinese paintings of the human figure *in puris naturalibus*; and as he used to introduce his young gentlemen to this cabin, when about to inflict corporeal punishment, perhaps he had it decorated after the style of nature, by way of dispelling scruples of delicacy that might stand in the way of unbuttoning; perhaps also he was influenced by the broad principle of justice, for as he caused them to expose their nether ends, he might have considered it only fair that they should see at least the effigy of somebody else's; but they not only saw, they also felt, and, on retiring from the interview, were fully persuaded of the triteness of the saying, "that seeing's believing, but feeling's the naked truth." The first blubbing neophyte who had made practical acquaintance with the fact, on drying his tears, commenced talking about the pictures; his remarks reached the captain's ears, and hence arose his pithy threat of exhibiting the pictures.

The only land we sighted on the voyage before reaching the continent of Australia was the Cape de Verde Islands and Tristan de Cunha; we were about ten leagues from the former, and they merely wore the appearance of rocky cliffs. It was three o'clock in the morning as we passed Tristan de Cunha; the island rises like a broad-based cone from the waters, and the moon, which was shining brilliantly, silvered

the indenting ridges which diverged from the summit, as if they had been ploughed by streams of burning lava. It is of no extent, and when at eight o'clock I resumed my watch on deck, it could only be faintly discerned like a haycock on the line of sight. I ought to have noticed that, when close to the island, the "look-out" forward shouted, "Rocks ahead." The helm was promptly shifted, and the vessel sheered alongside the lifeless carcass of a monstrous whale; I groaned in spirit with "long Tom Coffin," regretting that I had not this basis of a working capital snugly secured in some safe harbour in Britain.

I had little opportunity of knowing anything about the ship's daily position, or the courses steered. Sometimes I would pass the word when sights were being taken for the chronometer; and at noon I could not escape seeing the fry of sucking navigators intently peering in one direction with triangular-shaped instruments brought parallel with their noses; but what it all meant I knew not, neither did I care to inquire; nor did I see a chart from the time we quitted England till we reached Sydney. I knew that we were very far south when we rounded the Cape of Good Hope, for it was bitterly cold, and we encountered a very severe gale when in its longitude, with the heaviest rolling sea I ever experienced; but I was disappointed in the sublimity of the scene. I had read of boundless seas, waves rolling mountains high, and similar expressions calculated to inspire awe and dread; but I cannot say that my notions of stupendous grandeur were realised: the visual horizon is too close upon you, you lose the idea of boundless

space, and the waves never rise above fifteen or twenty feet, (quite high enough if any of them should happen to break on board you). If they met with obstacles opposing resistance, foam might be dashed to the height of sixty feet, or even higher, and spray might be carried to the height of three or four hundred feet; but as for vessels riding upon the tops of mountains, seething billows rising in overwhelming masses above the topmast head; all I can say is, I never witnessed any thing of the kind: instead of being alarmed at the mad howling of the blast, it had, on the contrary, quite an exhilarating effect. But it is not between decks where one would enjoy this sensation, particularly if it was your watch below and you felt disposed to sleep; it is scarcely possible to conceive a more helpless or uncomfortable situation than to be embowelled in a vessel, kicking and plunging like a race-horse in traces. Your body, without any volition of your own, is first rolled to one side, then to the other; now you are almost perpendicular, anon you will be standing on your head. You bend your knees and form an acute triangle with your body to try and fix yourself, but you get the skin chafed off at the holding points — the crupper-bone and knees — and desist in despair. You stretch yourself to the fullest extent, making your head and heels the holds, at the imminent risk of becoming bald. A deceptive lull takes place, you relax your extensors for a single moment, and the next sees you sprawling upon the deck, with enfranchised chests, mess-kids, tin plates, pots, and all the miscellaneous rubbish

usually to be met with on board ship, all bent on performing an Irish jig. In the gale off the Cape the courses or lower sails were hauled up, and we were under close reefed topsails, scudding before it. Four men were stationed at the helm, two at the wheel, and two at relieving tackles; the weather helmsman, whose movements guided the others, kept glancing over his shoulder, eyeing the seas that appeared ready to leap on board. At last in his nervousness he gave a sudden jerk to the helm; his mates seconded the impetus, and brought about the very consequences he tried to shun. The vessel broached to, the starboard quarter gallery was carried away, the cabin passengers were washed out of their berths, sea after sea broke over us; confusion and dismay reigned paramount; the mate lost his presence of mind, and I expected we should have all gone to the bottom. The men were shouting and swearing, the ladies were shrieking, a couple of 'prentices and myself were struggling to gain footing, for a heavy green sea of many tons weight had broken over the quarter-deck, which knocked us down, and continued washing us to and fro, till I secured a grip of the capstan. Presently the captain rushed out in his nightcap and drawers ('twas past ten P.M.). Without evincing more than ordinary concern, he gave a few short orders, clear and distinct, which were attended to by those who best understood them, whilst I maintained my loving embrace of the capstan. Presently discipline was restored, and the vessel was again staggering before the gale. The sea that broke over the weather bulwarks in a green mass,

carried the small mite of a 'prentice away in the body of it like a scarecrow, arms and legs extended. "Look out, Jack!" was the cry choked in my throat by the rushing of many waters; but Jack had no need of admonition, for when the turmoil was over, I observed him quietly dropping from the main rigging.

The greatest infliction I had to suffer was the raw, cold damp of the night-watches. I was always among the first to relieve the watch when summoned, always excepting the dog-watch; but it was none the less a hardship. At length I noticed, that, as soon as the wheel had been relieved, and the "look-out" forward stationed, the rest of the crew disappeared. This set me exploring, like another Captain Cook; and I found the gentlemen stowed around the cook's galley. Beneath the top gallant fore-castle, one of the standing orders was, that all fires should be extinguished at eight o'clock P.M.; and to all appearance, when the officer of the watch went his rounds, they were so; but he had no sooner resumed his pacing on the poop, when, by removing a layer of ashes, some dull red embers could be detected, which these gentry were in the habit of coaxing, till they imparted a trifle of warmth. The place itself also considerably ameliorated the marrow-searching influence of the chilling blasts, and speedily did I proceed to take advantage of the asylum thus thrown open to my research; but I found every avenue blocked up with knees.

"Who the devil's that?" growled a voice from behind sundry folds of worsted comforter, immersed in the depths of a monkey jacket, like the stifled tones of a bear undergoing suffocation.

“Come, just make a little room, can't you?”

“Hulloah! who's that? You don't belong here: we don't want no gentlemen poop-rangers here.”

“What's that you're jawing about, you infernal growl? You call yourself a seaman, I suppose. Pretty seaman truly, to be skulking here, and claiming the exclusive right to do so. It's well you know that I'm not in my place, that I never came on board as a seaman, and was never intended for one; but if I had been, I would have scorned to have shirked my duty, no matter what the weather might be.”

“Oh, it's you, mister, is it? Didn't know it was you. I say, Bill, its Mr. ——; just shove up a little.”

“Ah, that'll do.” Then into the mass I squeezed, and a portion of the caloric from the bodies around me soon communicated warmth to my starved frame, but at the expense of blackened face and hands, which might have procured for me claims to kindred with a sweep.

The custom of performing matutinal ablutions was one of the habits of my life I could not dispense with, much to the annoyance of Chips, who used to survey me at times with feelings of great internal disgust; but the measure of his forbearance having at length overflowed, he commenced rating me, in no measured terms, for wasting the water, and felt particularly scandalised at the effeminate habit I had of scrubbing my teeth. “Why you snarling plate-scraping cur!” (Chips was supplied daily with a plate of *omnium gatherum* from the cuddy); “must you be eternally curling your lip? Haven't you enough water

for all your wants ; and because you have the opportunity of polishing your teeth on cuddy scraps every day, is that a reason why I shouldn't put mine in order against the time they meet with anything to amuse themselves upon ? You're worse than the dog in the manger, for he did make his bed upon the hay ; but you neither require water for yourself nor wish to see any body else use it." A few more angry words passed, and Chips, finding himself getting the worst in the oratory of abuse, snatched up his hand-tool box, and went away growling, as he retreated, like distant thunder. But I didn't let all the attempts at imposition go scot free, for, having acquired the fearful bellow used in summoning the watch, I would be on the *qui vive*, and the very instant eight bells struck would dart below, and, insinuating myself beneath the hammocks of those who had annoyed me, gradually force them asunder to the fullest stretch, and by stooping suddenly, let them come together with a crash, making good my retreat to the hatchway ladder ; and whilst the two aroused occupants of the swinging canvass were cursing and swearing, and all but coming to fisticuffs, I would give the preliminary stamps, and set up a yell, enough to wake the seven sleepers, diverting the attention of the drowsy wranglers to wonder "who it was that was calling the watch ? I wish to G— somebody would call the watch as know'd how to call it."

"What's that, grumblers ? I suppose you want a piping bullfinch to call you. But it won't do, my pippins ; out you must. You never hear me complain ;

but you, who pretend to know your duty, are like bears with sore heads, when called upon to attend to it."

"We didn't know it was you. What sort of weather is it, mister?"

"Blowing and raining like bricks!" I would say, pretending to shake the wet from my monkey jacket.

"I never see such cursed luck as we gets in our watch."

"Well, that's nothing to me, but I wish you'd show a leg, for whilst you're jawing, our watch is waiting."

Thus, by assuming a tone of roughness and manners somewhat assimilating to their own, I tamed these bears to the docility of led apes.

Instead of going to the southward of Van Diemen's Land, we took Bass's Strait, which divides it from the continent of Australia.* The wind appears to blow through this strait as if it was blowing through a tunnel: aided by the current, we scudded through it under double reefed topsails at the rate of fourteen or fifteen knots. We dashed past several small rocky islands, and hugged Wilson's Promontory, the most austral point of Australia, so close, that we could distinguish a few naked objects with spears in their hands upon the beach, furnishing me with my first glimpse of savage life.

* I have called Australia a continent from its being a vast tract of country, the islets and shoals in Bass's Strait forming its connecting link with Van Diemen's Land, and the innumerable reefs and shoals in Torres Straits connecting it with the large but little known island of New Guinea and the islands in the Banda Sea.

CHAP. III.

Sydney Harbour. — Involuntary Acquaintance with the Water, before making that of the Land. — Not quite friendless. — The Town of Sydney. — Botany Bay. — “Brickfielders.” — Birds and Beasts. — Hunters’ River. — Newcastle. — The Country. — River Paterson. — Deadly Instances of the Venom of Snakes. — A Ride after wild Cattle. — The Country talked of. — Corn Stalks. — Illawara. — Notices of the Aborigines.

“The world is with me, and its many cares, —
 Its woes — its wants — the anxious hopes and fears
 That wait on all terrestrial affairs —
 The shades of former and of future years.”

July 17th. — It was midnight when we entered the Heads of Port Jackson, and after our long sojourn upon the waters, it appeared almost as if we were entering the gates of Paradise; the moon, which was riding high in the heavens, imparting by its effulgent brightness a fairy-like charm to the scene. A pilot came alongside us in his boat, and to meet with and hear the voices of our countrymen at this distance from home, produced upon me a strange and startling effect, although I knew the country had been made the recipient of our outcasts for half a century. The harbour is a magnificent one: at the mouth of it the cliffs on either side, called the “Heads,” rise like a wall several hundred feet high; a lighthouse is built on a salient point of the South Head, which

may be distinguished in clear weather from eleven to twelve leagues at sea. The harbour is not only spacious, but completely sheltered ; it runs inland nine or ten miles, indenting the coast on either side, forming numerous romantic bays and coves, in all of which there is depth of water for shipping of any tonnage ; several smaller islands are grouped about, which add to its safety and picturesque beauty. Although it was the depth of winter, the air was mild and balmy ; and so placid was the deep as we glided over its silvery ripples, I could fancy we were taking a moonlight cruise on Westmoreland's lovely lake Windermere, nor did I quit the deck till the anchor was let go in Sydney Cove. With daylight much of the enchantment vanished, as there is a duskiess and want of verdure in the appearance of the shores, which impresses you with notions of drought and sterility. The town, viewed from the water, wears a paltry aspect ; and the residence of the governor of the colony, in a park-like inclosure just without the bustle of the town, is a mean, low building, possessing as much architectural grace as that usually displayed in the elevation of a barn.

July 18th.—The day on which I entered the world, and very nearly proving that on which I quitted it ; for the boatswain, to do his messmate due honour, would rig out the jolly-boat after his own pet fashion to set me ashore : the third mate accompanied us. We had scarcely got from the vessel, when the ha'lyards parted ; the mate volunteered to reeve them afresh, and commenced climbing the taunt and taper mast. “Do you want to capsiz the

boat? Come down!" shouted I; but I might as well have hailed the mast itself. Up he went, and over went the boat; but as it gradually keeled over, I turned with it and remained astride. Neither the boatswain nor myself could swim, but the mate was very expert in the water, less excuse for him; as, instead of dropping from the mast, when, by the preponderating influence of his unmerciful stern, he had brought it to nearly a horizontal position, he clung to it with the tenacity of the bear to the bough of the tree, when Robinson Crusoe's man, Friday taught it to dance; he disappeared for some time, and when he emerged, his face was blue, and he puffed like a distressed walrus. Our position was by no means enviable: the boat had settled considerably below the surface of the water, and there was any quantity of that unstable element between us and the shore. "Can you swim, boatswain?" "No," said he, "but there's no fear, she's got floating ballast in her. Well! well! well!" he continued, snapping his fingers, "I never see such a foolish thing in all my life. 'Tut! tut! tut! catch me going ashore again!" "We'll have to get there first," replied I; "but see, here come the boats." The accident had been noticed from several vessels, and boats were immediately despatched to our assistance. One of our own boats arrived first to the rescue, and the rowers plied their oars with such vigour, that they were nearly spitting me with the bow. "Have a care! do you want to run me down?" and, notwithstanding they backed water, — an instantaneous movement, — I had to throw myself from my

position as the boat glided over it ; and to this day I entertain a very *lively* gratitude to the floating ballast ; or who knows, “ Cæsar’s dust may have stopped a bung-hole,” and mine in the shape of fish might have entered the bodies of those who afterwards formed a different kind of acquaintance with me. The boatswain kept his word ; he never *again* went on shore during the ship’s stay in the harbour.

Fortunately for me, I did not find myself quite so lonely as I expected : a gentleman I had known in England was almost one of the first persons I met with after landing ; he immediately interested himself in my welfare, and as I held a letter of credit from the same kind friend who had wanted to pay for my passage, empowering me to draw upon him for any amount to suit my immediate necessities, I drew for a small sum, and this gentleman cashed the draft for me : he also introduced me to the partners of a commercial house, and in a few days I accepted an appointment in their establishment. Here I remained some seven or eight months, and then removed to a more eligible situation for acquiring a knowledge of the monetary transactions of the colony.

Sydney is in every respect so completely English, that having made up one’s mind to become a foreigner, you are rather surprised to discover that you have travelled so many thousands of miles to no purpose ; for it requires a considerable effort, if you happen to land at the season of my arrival, to believe you are out of the mother country. The houses are well built, and the streets laid out in the English style,

the noise and bustle being equal to those of a third-rate town in England; the only peculiarity that obtruded itself on my notice was, that the houses were roofed with wooden shingles, instead of tiles or slates.

The colonial government has secured to the public a beautiful retreat, called the "domain," in close vicinity to the town; it occupies one of the woodland points that, jutting into the bay, gives birth to its numerous romantic coves. Winding paths and good carriage roads lead in all directions through the trees and underwood, affording refreshing cool retreats from the heats of summer. There is a part appropriated to botanical gardens, laid out with much skill and elegance; they abound with rare shrubs, flowers, fruits, &c.; and respectably dressed persons are allowed to promenade there, within the limits of certain hours, throughout the year.

The trees of the country offer a striking contrast to any that grow in England; they, generally speaking, attain an amazing height, with wide-spreading limbs, twisting their gnarled, half-naked forms, nearly to their summits: they preserve their foliage throughout the year; nevertheless, they cannot be called evergreens, for their livery approaches more to a russet brown. There is a great sameness in their appearance, and all are very thinly clad. There are many and beautiful varieties of the heath plant, but the wild flowers and shrubs of the country are void of fragrance.

Botany Bay, that name which used to sound so terrible to my childhood, may be reached from Sydney

by a road extending five or six miles over an arid, deep white sandy district, incapable of producing any vegetation, saving spear grass and stunted specimens of wiry heath. The harbour is beautiful, and presents a bold sweep; but the water shoals suddenly, and it is unsafe for shipping, as it lies directly open to the south-east wind: there are one or two houses there, the retired residences of emancipists, or freed convicts. Botany Bay was, I suppose, a term colloquially used for all New South Wales, as no convicts were ever sent literally to Botany Bay, no available land existing in its immediate vicinity that would employ the labour of the sentenced. There is a great monotony in all the scenery in New South Wales; in some parts the soil is of great depth, and it teems abundantly; but in dry seasons, from this very depth of soil, the crops are burnt up. The climate is delightful in winter; but in summer, a species of sirocco frequently prevails, rendering the atmosphere exceedingly oppressive and difficult of respiration; and it invariably follows that even whilst this hot wind is blowing, and you feel scarcely able to drag your relaxed frame along, without a moment's warning it will chop round, and blow with a fury so cold and piercing, that your very marrow seems penetrated; shortly after the air resumes its wonted temperature. The hot winds are known by the name of "northers," and when the transition takes place, they are called "brickfielders," from their carrying with them clouds of smothering dust, particularly vast volumes of a red colour, destructive to clothing, from a hill called Brickfield-hill,

enveloping all Sydney; and now, to whatever part of the continent you go, “brickfielder” is the common name by which this wind is known; and so I dare say it will continue to be called, till the cause of it shall have ceased to exist, and why it was so termed shall have passed from the memory of man. When these hot winds are of long continuance, they commit frightful havoc; in the November of my arrival, towards evening, the air became more than usually oppressive, from its great rarefaction; gusts of heated wind would come at intervals like blasts from a furnace, which prevailed all the next day less intermittingly; the bush surrounding the town, and on either side the shore, was on fire, as we could distinguish for miles around from the volumes of smoke it cast up. As evening again closed in, the advance of the destructive element was more apparent; red flames waved their forked tongues above the tops of trees, and bronzed clouds of smoke rolled gloomily on; the scorching blast grew worse, and so powerful withal, that a person in an exposed situation could scarcely maintain his footing: it was a curious sensation to feel the rushing breeze, and instead of coolness, an almost stifling heat. The township of Sydney is on the south side of the harbour: on the north shore was the residence of a widow lady, in the heart of the bush, and directly opposed to the course of the burning forest; the consuming wind bore immediately over the house, and nothing in human power could save it from destruction. I walked to the water’s edge with many others, who were anxiously waiting the issue; boats had put off to receive the

inmates, when hope was extinguished; the sea was most violently agitated, and the spray dashed in our faces as we clung to the posts on the wharf. In another minute the work of destruction would have been complete, when the wind shifted, with the speed of lightning, and it blew from the south-west a perfect drift, curdling our veins with its icy blast. It was indeed miraculous; the overwhelming flames, driven back, were forced to expend their fury on the already scathed and blackened trunks; nothing but this providential interposition could have averted the ruin of the widow's abode.

About ten o'clock, when the darkness of night was complete, I strolled out to witness the effect of the conflagration. It was a grand and imposing spectacle. Where the rising ground had been covered with scrub or stunted bush, it had the appearance of a vast illumined city. In other directions, the low shrubs presented a glowing deep red appearance, while the lofty trees sent forth sheets of yellow flame from their summits; the whole being o'ercanopied with a dense lurid pall of smoke. Many cattle were burnt alive, much property was consumed in the interior, and some lives were lost. I was told by some teamsters, that they had to cut the bullock traces, and abandon their teams, laden with wool, to save themselves; the branches of the forest trees, owing to their intense aridity, having caught fire from their own abrasion.

No country probably can boast greater variety in specimens of ornithology, or of birds possessing more beautiful plumage; the forest wilds ring with the most peculiar cries, and the variety of the parrot

species far exceeds anything I had formed any idea of; snakes, opossums, flying foxes, flying squirrels, kangaroos, iguanas, bandicoots, wild cats and native dogs, the latter resembling our English fox, are all inmates of the bush, but there is no ferocious quadruped to be met with inimical to the life of man. But the most curious of all the animals I met with in New South Wales is the platypus (*Ornithorhynchus paradoxus*), which possesses the mandible and webbed feet of a duck, and a body like that of a fur seal. It burrows in the banks of rivers, but I know little else of its habits or history.

Being invited to pass a few weeks with some friends up the Paterson River, situated to the northward of Sydney, I entered a steamer, and enjoyed a pleasant trip. You enter the river Hunter, off the mouth of which there is a dangerous reef, terminated by a bluff rock, called Nobby's; the township of this port has received the name of Newcastle, derived from its supplying the country with coal, like its prototype in England. The aspect of the place is not inviting, the beach being a barren waste of sand hills. The river is a pretty sheet of water, but continues salt for thirty or forty miles, when it branches, forming the Williams and Paterson rivers. It was harvest time, and the banks being in many parts highly cultivated, hundreds of acres teeming with rich yellow wheat, I was reminded of old England. Still the eccentricities of a new country betrayed themselves. Beside a patch of corn a maze of forest trees would entangle their white glancing spectral limbs. In one place, land just broken up; in another a green crop advancing; and

again, you would see a spot under process of clearing, with trees just felled, and stumps yet smoking. The steamer moored at a place called the Green Hills, why, I can't say, as it certainly does not possess a very verdant appearance; and the name, since the erection of a few houses, appears to be giving way to that of Morpeth. The country in many parts betokens richness of soil, but there is nothing of the picturesque in the neighbourhood to tempt the wanderer. I passed the night at Morpeth, and the next morning my young friend called to escort me to his new residence. We struck across the country,—country in that sense when it is said, “God made the country, and man made the town,” as, with the exception of a rude fence here and there, indicating the boundaries of different properties, it was country in its primeval state. I was delighted with the excursion. Thousands of parrots mingled their chatterings overhead with the silvery tinkling notes of the bell bird, the smacking of the coachman's whip, the wild shriek of the laughing jackass, and the ever-varying cry of the mocking bird; and every lagoon, or marshy swamp, would send forth its squadron of ducks at our approach, to wing a rapid flight of eddying circles. By a circuitous route we arrived at Bona Vista, a pleasantly situated farm on the banks of the Paterson. The land of this district is in many parts well and extensively cultivated, the soil is extremely rich, and the river, winding between high verdant banks, is fresh and sweet. Whilst on this visit, I was fearfully convinced of the deadly venom of the reptile tribe. The proprietor of the estate, observing a small

yellow snake glide under some sawn timber, called his men to remove it, that it might be killed; as they were lifting the logs, the snake darted between the legs of one of the men, and brushed him in passing. "Oh! my God!" cried he, what a narrow escape I've had! I declare it touched me with its tail." The snake was killed, and the men returned to their work, the proprietor remarking to me, as we turned away, "If it had bitten any one, the bite would have caused instant death;" and he related several instances that had fallen under his own knowledge where death had followed the stroke of the reptile's fangs. I listened with all respect to his recital, but scarcely deemed it possible that the insignificant little object lying stretched before me could subdue to the earth the bulky frame of a powerful man. But too soon was I to receive an awful demonstration of the truth of his assertions. I had walked as far as the township, and had been absent half an hour, when on my return I was met by a party bearing the startling intelligence that the man who cried out he had been touched by the snake's tail was dead. Scarcely crediting the report, I hastened to the hut, but there he lay, green and festering; for strange as it may appear, decomposition had already commenced, and a fetid foam was issuing from his mouth. Two minute punctures on the poor fellow's skin were the only marks discernible. It appears that about five minutes after he had been struck, he complained of feeling faint and sick, and his mate was only in time to save him from falling: he struggled convulsively a minute or two, and then a lifeless clod was all

that was left of the stoutest and apparently the healthiest man on the farm. The medical man who was sent for cautioned me against too curious an investigation of the body. That same evening, on his return home, his dog happening to disturb another snake, was struck by it on the nose, and thereby received instantaneous death; as the doctor assured us, it turned on its side, and scarcely uttered a cry. The cast skin of the snake that destroyed the farm labourer was discovered near the spot, where it sought concealment; and I was informed by those acquainted with the natural history of these reptiles, that immediately after shedding their skins, they are more than usually irritable and venomous. Whilst upon this subject, I may mention a narrow escape I had myself. The whip snake, so called from its tenuity, is one of the deadliest of all the viperous race; and one day, as I was in pursuit of ornithological specimens, I espied, pendant from the twig of a wattle, the globular nest of the diamond bird: desirous to possess myself of it, I climbed the tree, and wishing to preserve the branch, jerked it towards me in breaking it off, when a whip snake darting from the recess of the nest struck me in the bosom, and passing between my waistcoat and shirt rebounded to the ground. I threw myself upon it before it could escape, and stamped it in pieces with the heel of my boot, notwithstanding which a portion about four inches long, with the head attached, contrived to work its way into a hole. The vitality of the dismembered parts was such, that, though crushed into more than fifty pieces, every portion was instinct

with life and motion. On examining the nest, I found nothing but the skeleton frames of the parent bird and its callow young. Knowing the danger I had escaped, after the event was over I broke into a glowing perspiration, as if I had just emerged from a hot bath.

Determined to see as much of the country and a country life as I could whilst I had the opportunity, I rose one morning at 3 o'clock to join a party in pursuit of young horses, running wild in the bush. We crossed over the mountainous ridges of a district called Munnibung, or some such euphonious name, and shortly after six arrived at Dungog. Here we found a whole herd of horses collected in a stock-yard. Separating those we required, and loosing an old mare, mother to some of the colts, we proceeded to run them home—futile attempt; headlong they dashed into the brush, and helter-skelter, in regular break-neck style, we galloped after them. Being the best mounted, I contrived to head and turn them once or twice, but it was only making bad worse; as, instead of taking the direction we wished, they rushed through the thickest part of the dense underwood, and made a playful ascent up the steepest ridges. I made a last effort to get them on the right track, and, wretched horseman though I was, screwed my courage to the sticking-place, and gave chase as hard as the noble brute could lay hoof to ground. Away we went, tearing and dashing through trees and underwood, flying over fallen trunks, clearing streams, up hill and down gully, boughs crashing as we passed along, dry branches and limbs cracking and snapping

beneath our feet: away went my hat, as my spirited hunter took a flying leap over an immense windfall; 'twas useless to attempt checking his career; his blood was up, and mine was racing rather rapidly through my veins; so on we went with the speed of a whirlwind. The bush was now so thick I could not see before us; the horse had its own way, and I expected every moment to be swept from the saddle by some protruding bough. Suddenly down we went, man and horse. We had come unawares to the edge of a considerable declivity, and the horse, unable to recover himself, went headlong over; fortunately I flew out of the saddle a long way ahead of him, or I should have been dashed or kicked to pieces. At the bottom of the ravine I had the presence of mind to scramble out of the way of my nag, and experienced little inconvenience from the tumble. This terminated our endeavours. With unabated speed and vigour we saw the colts take to the highest ranges, and continue their wild course till out of sight. To an inexperienced horseman stock-hunting is dangerous work: many accidents occur, and sometimes the best of riders and most experienced stockmen lose their lives. Horses that are accustomed to run in wild cattle betray great sagacity; they seldom require the guidance of the rein, will double trees like a hare, and take the shortest cuts to intercept the retreat of the flying herd. Hence it will be seen that the pursuit requires a rider of no little practice and address.

In various excursions which I made the features of the country appeared pretty much the same, some parts

being open, flat, and marshy, others hilly and thickly wooded. It is astonishing how little variety prevails in the appearance of the trees of the forest; the same meagreness of foliage, with the same dusky hue, is the characteristic everywhere. The more common way of distinguishing the trees in this part of the world is by their barks and gums: take some of their names; for instance, iron bark, stringy bark, black butt, blue gum, white gum, red gum, &c., the foliage of these being nearly all alike.

There are vast plains of grassy country three or four hundred miles in the interior, far beyond the boundary of my travels, where immense herds of sheep and cattle are depastured; any person, by paying a small sum to government, may take out a squatter's licence to proceed beyond certain boundaries, where he may locate in any extent of unoccupied land. This privilege affording continual change and imposing no limits to stock stations, many of the New South Wales sheep-farmers and cattle-graziers can number their stock by thousands, whilst their progressive movements, as they penetrate inland, tend to extend the limits of the colony and add to her resources. The grand scale on which farming and agricultural establishments are conducted here makes those in the home country appear of a very pigmy character. It is not an unusual thing to find farms of ten and twelve thousand acres; farms of ten and twelve hundred acres are of ordinary occurrence.

The Anglo-Australians generally are a reedy-looking race, precocious in growth, premature in decay; their heads appear as if forced by artificial

means from their shoulders, and probably it is from this awkward-looking growth they are denominated "cornstalks." They are loose-built, tall, raw, and *gawgawish* in their manners, and are not wanting in conceit of their own superiority. Already you will hear the young cocks crowing about their independence; but as they are in utter ignorance of what that is, politically, or how they could maintain it even if they had it, their crowing is as harmless as it is amusing. One of the youngsters, on his return from a visit to England, complained that he couldn't ride five miles in any direction without falling in with houses, and meeting, at every hundred yards, fresh faces; whereas, such was the freedom of the colony, you might take your horse and pack and travel for hundreds of miles without seeing a house or meeting a human being. I never heard what this young gentleman's notions of political existence were.

The district of Illawarra to the southward of Port Jackson is the heaviest-timbered land I have seen in the country, and where it has been cleared the soil is the richest and most fertile. It is not subject to the frequent droughts that affect the country. Northward of Sydney, it can boast many extensive and highly cultivated farms, and is the finest and most picturesque district I have been in.

The aborigines of New South Wales are the ugliest race of beings conceivable; some monkeys I have seen might feel injured by a comparison. Many of them have been demi-civilised, but after a short sojourn with Europeans they invariably resume their old habits, and take to their romantic and precarious mode

of living. I do not know an instance where one has been regularly domesticated. Their language is as wild and uncouth as they are; but what is very remarkable, they acquire ours with astonishing facility, and their selection of words is far superior to that of our own common orders. The few wretched beings in and around Sydney are the miserable victims of ardent spirits, and can scarcely be looked upon as fair specimens of their class. Those from tribes in the interior are tall, sinewy, and athletic, their standard height, in my opinion, exceeding that of the English race; they have no settled abodes, but wander about at the caprice of the moment, their huts (called gunnias) being framed of two or three pieces of bark stripped from the nearest tree. They neither sow nor reap, living upon snakes, opossums, grubs, iguanas, and other inhabitants of the woods and waters. Their dress is merely a kind of belt, or wampum, round the loins; and for human beings, they are, I imagine, the most approximative to the brute race of any in existence. But few Europeans are acquainted with their rites and ceremonies. I am not aware that they have any belief in a Supreme Being, but I was witness to the superstitious dread they entertain of an evil spirit, which they say haunts them at night; and they invariably select a spot close to the water for their halting places, as they say the spirit has no power over them in the water. In crossing the country on one occasion, I pointed out a bivouack of these blacks to my companion: "Hold," said he; "I'll show you some sport." Desiring me to conceal myself, he crawled along on his stomach till he got pretty

near the encampment, and then set up a low moaning cry. The poor blacks started to their feet, and on the cry being repeated, away they scampered in the utmost bewilderment, nor did they come back during the half hour we waited in expectation of their return. They have worse than brutal customs with respect to their young gins or females, too gross and disgusting to be committed to paper. On a male arriving at the age of manhood, he is hung up by his heels, and the chief, or some other person appointed from the tribe, *bites* from him one of his front teeth! The meaning of this ceremony and of the mysteries that follow is not known. Many of the women are deprived of the first joints of their little fingers. I have been told that this is a distinguishing mark amongst the tribes, and is a *favour* conferred on those only who are expert in fishing; but to an European they are all so. Both sexes are excellent swimmers, and the females seem to participate in all the exercises of the males except fighting, which, when two tribes are at variance, is left to the men. Their weapons are simple and rude, consisting of a straight spear, an unwieldy club; a narrow wooden shield, and an instrument called the boomaring: this latter weapon is a curved piece of wood, scraped on either surface to an edge both on the convex and concave side, and its singular evolutions, I am told, is a problem that the universities of the United Kingdom have been engaged upon without being able to solve. The natives throw it forward with terrific force, and if it encounters no object, after whistling through the air for a hundred yards or more, it will take a demivolt, and return

gyrating to the feet of the thrower. If a dozen boomerangs were laid before me, I could not distinguish any difference between them. But a single glance of the eye will suffice to inform a black as to its qualifications. Unless they are peculiarly made, they will not perform this retrograde movement, but in what this peculiarity consists I could never learn, and the blacks are unable or unwilling to explain. The whole country, so far as it is yet known, is wretchedly supplied by that first of requisites, fresh water, the town* of Sydney itself being entirely dependent on a miserable swamp lying between the latter place and Botany Bay, called Black Wattle Swamp; and since my arrival I have had to pay as much as sixpence a bucket for it. This great and crying want is the greatest drawback to the colony of New South Wales. In seasons of drought thousands of cattle and sheep have perished, drays have been abandoned on the road, and the carriage of provisions and supplies to stations in the interior has cost far more than their original purchase. No artificial means have been resorted to, or scientific attempts made, to palliate this evil, although it is probable that artesian wells might be sunk at small expence to overcome this great obstacle to the prosperity of the country. The natives, from the scarcity of navigable rivers, have very little use for vessels on the water. Such canoes as I have seen resemble their houses in the primi-

* Of late years Sydney has been called a city, and its burghers proceed annually to elect a mayor.

tive nature of their construction, consisting of nothing more than a sheet of bark turned up at the ends, and fastened with the tough vine of some creeper. The bushy head of a young wattle or gum-tree stuck up in the bows serves as a sail. An amusing incident occurred in the harbour, though by no means looked upon as a joke by the actor at the time: a black fellow, in crossing it in one of these frail barks, entirely of nature's providing, was caught in a heavy westerly squall; he had no other resource but to run before it. His weight only fairly counterbalanced that of his leafy sail; he dared not rise for fear of being capsized, and his whole attention was required to the steerage, as the slightest inadvertency would have swamped him. The foam rippled up on either side of him as he sped like an arrow past a ship lying at anchor, her decks crowded with newly-arrived emigrants. "Hulloa, blacky, where are you going?" shouted they. "O-o-o-o-o," muttered the poor fellow, his hair all of a *hoo*, and his eyes starting out of his head; "t-o-o-o-o m-o-s-h b-o-o-o-s-h." The native race is but sparsely scattered over the continent. They possess, I believe, a vague idea of a future existence, as they bury with their dead those articles most prized when living. They invariably select high water as the time for burial, asserting that the spirit then gets wafted immediately to the sea at the best time for fishing. I met a party in the bush returning with the corpse of an old chief, known, when living, as the King of the Hungry Hills, which they had carried out for interment. On inquiring their motive for coming back, they informed me that before

they could reach the intended place of sepulture, it was past high water, and consequently they were going to wait till next tide. The difference between these savages and us affords an excellent antithesis. We exhaust our ingenuity in contriving means to create fresh wants, and to add to our luxuries, whilst the utmost stretch of their ambition seems to consist in supplying the bare wants of nature in the simplest manner, and with the least conceivable labour.

The geographical boundaries of Australia I believe to be tolerably accurately ascertained, but little of its vast interior is known; the fringe of the continent has been penetrated here and there, and latterly considerable tracts have been coasted by men of indomitable hardihood and courage. Often in my reveries it has struck me that aeronautism might be turned to account by explorers of unknown regions, and be the means of saving much unnecessary labour and privation. Surveying parties in want of water or herbage, and in doubt which way to direct their weary steps, if they had a balloon with them and 400 or 500 fathoms of whale line, by securing one end of the line to the balloon, and grappling the other firmly to the earth, might rise to the elevation of 2000 or 3000 feet, and have the country spread out before them like a map, and if provided with instruments to take bearings might be spared many a day of fruitless toil and suffering. No useful advantages that I am aware of have yet been conferred upon society by the discovery of the science of aeronautism. If my idea is practicable, here appears a plan to render it subservient to the good of man. We are

enabled to sound the depths of the ocean to the extent of 1000 fathoms or 6000 feet, and whales have frequently been known "to run" out three tubs of whale line, each of 240 fathoms, and I presume that improvements in chemical science might render possible the inflation of a balloon that in its ascent would prove potent as the whale in supporting the weight of the dependent line. I have no knowledge of the subject, and merely venture the suggestion. *Verbum sat.*

CHAP. IV.

Off to New Zealand. — A Gale. — Bream Bay. — Bay of Islands. — Kororarika. — Paihia. — River Waitangi. — River Kawakawa. — White's Island. — Roadstead of Warakaihika. — Roadstead of Rungatukaia. — Abandoned by the Schooner. Overland Trip to Warakaihika. — Selfish Conduct of a Chief. — A Musical Cargo. — Return to the Bay of Islands. — Sojourn on one of the Islands. —

“The wind was fair, the sea was blue,
The sky without a speck,
As the good ship o'er the waters flew,
With King John upon its deck.”

MY worldly wealth not having much increased after a sojourn of upwards of two years and a half in New South Wales, I determined on proceeding to New Zealand, to try the unexplored resources of a new country, and on

February 14th, 1840. — I shipped goods and took passage in a small schooner bound to the Bay of Islands.

February 27th. — Sighted a cluster of islets to the north-west of the North Cape, called the “Three Kings;” a few natives reside upon these hummocks, as we could discern the smoke of their fires in passing.

February 29th. — A violent gale commenced from the northward, which increased to such a height, that we were compelled to lay to under a balanced-reef-

mainsail. It seems as if we had sailed into the very centre of its encircling fury, and had no power subsequently to escape from it: being deeply laden we were completely drenched with the sea breaking over us, and hail and salt drift drove in our faces with such resistless force, that there was no turning your head to windward. The vessel laboured violently as if she had been subject to the influence of a succession of whirlpools: suddenly the mainsail being blown from the bolt ropes she was cast on her beam ends, and buried with her lee coamings in the water. I thought she was gone: the mate called to the captain to cut before it was too late; but he very coolly replied, "If she wasn't fit to carry her masts she wasn't fit to float." The hatches and scuttles were well secured by battens, and fortunately nothing started: the vessel, though small, had great beam, and was very stiff, and she gradually righted, the worst of the gale having spent itself; and though it continued all that night and through the greater part of next day its violence had abated. I narrowly escaped being washed overboard in the height of the gale; for desirous of witnessing the battling of the elements I stripped to my trowsers, and went on deck. The captain advised my lying down in the lee scuppers to avoid taking cold, and I had just taken a bath when the schooner was thrown on her beam ends. I clung to a spar that was made fast to the bulwarks, but the rushing of the water had caused the lashings at one end to give way, and I was swept overboard, but as I did not abandon my hold I came in again with the recoil, when I lost no time in scrambling to the

weather rail. The wind gradually veered round to the south-east, but before it had reached this point we had drifted to the southward of the Bay of Islands, and as we had had no sights we mistook the Poor Knights, small rocky islets off the main, for the Caralle Islands, and took a cruize in Bream Bay, thinking we had reached our port, the Hen and Chickens and Barrier Islands being mistaken for the islands which gave rise to the name of the bay we were bound for. We had been three days without observations, and no one on board had visited New Zealand before, which is some excuse for our error. Discovering no signs of man or his habitations, we began to fancy all was not right; the miserable outline chart that we had gave us no assistance; but what helped us to our conclusion was the hundreds of red bream we met floating on the water, supposed to have been killed during the gale which had just subsided. We therefore tacked, and next day at noon we were still to the southward of our port. Its approach is very romantic, numerous small islands are grouped about with rocks of singular and grotesque forms, particularly one at the north head, called from its shape the Ninepin Rock, and another off Cape Brett, the south head, which has a natural arch completely through it. There is also another peculiar rock called the Whale rock, which is only observable at low water, and then betrays its dangerous proximity like the back of a whale. On reaching Kororarika, the commercial settlement which is about nine miles from the Heads, I felt myself a disappointed man. The land rises abruptly on every side

in steep irregular hills; there is no inland communication from the township, nor is there reasonable ground, from the features of the country, to hope there ever will be. A narrow sandy beach in the form of a crescent with a swamp at the back, a few hundred square yards of higher ground shut in by abrupt surrounding hills, is a faithful portraiture of Kororarika. The only level spot available has been seized upon for the township, which does not exceed in extent a good-sized kitchen-garden. There are thirty or forty wooden houses of European construction, which have arisen in the style termed higglety-pigglety, no attention having been paid to any thing like order or regularity: a "pah" or native village occupies a prominent part of the beach, and "Maori" huts are interspersed amongst the houses of the English residents. I do not see how it is possible that commercial transactions to any extent can be conducted here. The place has no exports, and the whale ships are ceasing to make it a harbour for refreshing, &c., as they find the increase of white faces has raised the price of native labour and every commodity to such a degree that they are all seeking for other harbours, where they may procure shelter during the season of retirement from the whaling grounds, and obtain refreshments at their former easy rate. Such a rush has been made to New Zealand that the place is crowded with Europeans; and when I first landed, I heard some of the idlers about the beach saying one to the other, "here come more victims." Every house has got more than threefold its complement of inhabitants: tents pitched here and

there supply with some the deficiency of house room. The market is glutted with goods. Auction bells are going all day long, and, notwithstanding the government proclamations, land is daily being bought and sold; a monomaniacal plague or land fever is abroad, and the whole atmosphere is infected with it. I have mentioned the precipitous character of the land generally at the Bay of Islands, and in some places where a level spot has tempted an individual to fix his residence, the only communication to or from it is by water. Opposite Kororarika is Pihea, the missionary settlement. It is not very large, nor, owing to the nature of the land, will it admit of much greater extension, that is, in the direction of the bay, for the missionaries lay claim to extensive tracts of country as "Church property;" their site possesses more level soil than that about the commercial township, and it also communicates with the interior; but a great drawback exists in the heavy surf that plays upon the beach, which renders it impracticable to construct wharfs or jetties. Kororarika is open to the same objection. The only way they have of landing goods is by rolling them on planks from boats, whereby much damage is at times occasioned.

February 29th. — The river Waitangi on the missionary side of the bay takes a very sinuous course; at high water vessels of from forty to sixty tons burthen might enter its channel, but at low ebb there is not sufficient water for the entrance of a boat. The banks in many places are under agricultural improvement, and I noticed corn, potatoes,

pumpkins, and other vegetables in thriving condition. The soil is rich alluvial, and yields abundantly; a picturesque waterfall bounded my excursion up this river, and it is from this fall its name is derived, "Waitangi," or the "crying waters."

The river Kawakawa, in another direction, is navigable for vessels of burthen eight or nine miles up: in fact it is a continuation thus far of the harbour of the Bay of Islands, but the land on either side is of the acclivitous nature before alluded to; and from the various detached spots where parties have fixed their isolated abodes, the only means of intercourse with other places is by boats. Vessels may anchor within a few hundred yards of the beach at Kororarika, and the harbour is esteemed perfectly safe; but when it blows hard from the N. E. there is a heavy ground swell: no trade is to be conducted with the natives. Flax does not grow in the neighbourhood, timber is scarcer than in Sydney, and what few pigs and potatoes are brought by the natives for barter are required for home consumption, and they have now learnt to demand for their produce more than its full value. Few as the Europeans comparatively are they are nevertheless divided. The missionary residents at Pihea will have no transactions with the settlers at Kororarika, and the "old hands" at the last-mentioned place combine to prevent new arrivals from selling their goods advantageously. The numbers that from false and high-coloured representations have flocked to the bay lately have caused store-room to be very scarce, and the terms most exorbitant, and the deluded beings, compelled to part

with their goods, have in many instances been obliged to dispose of them at less than cost price; hence every new comer is hailed with the soubriquet of victim.

Finding no possibility of disposing of my cargo without being subject to great loss, I stored it and gave instruction for its sale at favourable opportunities. The schooner being chartered for the East Cape and elsewhere, for the purpose of trading with the natives, I agreed with the master to go with him as a passenger, and on March 28th we weighed and stood out to sea. The coast as we passed along had the same broken, bluff, repulsive, sterile look. Our old friends, the Poor Knights, Bream Head, and Barrier Isles again greeted our view, and on April 1st we sighted White's Island, a small sulphuric volcanic isle. It was emitting volumes of smoke, and its spectral white sides caused it to resemble the ghost of an island "blowing a cloud." I was informed that it yielded good sulphur of commerce, but there is no anchorage off it; landing could be effected by boats, but not at all times practicable. As night approached I expected to see flames issuing from the crater, but gradually the smoke became less dense, and as the sun went down nothing but a thin spiral wreath could be faintly discerned.

April 4th. — Came to anchor in a roadstead off Warakaihika, a Kainga or native settlement to the southward of Hicke's Bay. The natives came off to us, and I went ashore in a double-banked canoe, paddled by twenty of them; the canoe was dubbed out of a single tree and appeared so crank that I expected we should capsize, but there was no ground for fear. Keeping

time with their paddles to a peculiar cry of "Tohia," they propelled her along with great dexterity and speed, and without shipping a spoonful of water piloted her through the surf into a chasm in the rocks only sufficiently wide to receive her. On landing we were surrounded by natives, who came running from all directions to gaze at the Pakihas; we were overwhelmed with greetings, and nothing could be heard but "Te-na-ra-ka-kui." The men were fine athletic-built fellows, some clad in mats and others partly in European clothing; the women not very tempting in appearance, and very ungraceful in their motions, their gait resembling the awkward waddle of a duck. The old people were extremely ugly, so shrivelled and full of harsh wrinkles they looked like animated mummies; numerous children were running about, but they seemed very puny, and did not indicate future promise of the strength and stature of their progenitors. We found that most of the natives could read and write, and that all were impressed with notions of the Christian religion. One among them officiated as minister: prayer was offered three times a day, at break of day, at noon, and at sun-down, all which times of devotion were observed with the strictest attention. In every hut was to be found a testament, prayer book, or some other religious token of the exertions of the missionaries. Wars between them are in a great measure suspended, and the sabbath is observed with great sanctity: they pay great attention to the instruction of their teachers, who are natives first taught by Europeans; and no presents, however

eagerly coveted, would cause them to violate the Lord's day. The land here is of the same acclivitous character; it ranges far as the eye can see like a barrier wall, but it is cultivated by the natives in almost inaccessible spots. A narrow strip at the foot of the perpendicular cliffs, comprising about 800 acres of table land, is attached to this Kainga. It was under good cultivation, being intersected by channels for the purpose of irrigation and showing crops of potatoes, koomras, tara, maize, melons, pumpkins, cabbages, onions, and other vegetables. It is well and abundantly watered by springs from above, and at any moment by damming the channels they can cause it to be overflowed. There is good anchorage a mile and a half from the beach, and plenty of sea room to up and away if it should come to blow upon the land. The natives appear very partial to cultivating the face of the hills; they contend that the crops are better in such situations, probably owing to alluvial deposits washed by the heavy rains from above. I have seen heavy crops of maize growing in such acclivitous positions, as quite fatigued me to reach them.

Whilst the person who chartered the vessel remained at Warakaihika to barter with the natives, he despatched the schooner to another settlement called Rangatukaia, about thirty miles to the southward of the East Cape, to take in corn, pigs, potatoes, &c., purchased by a trading master in his employ, an Englishman, long resident on the coast. This man went in the vessel, and I also again honoured her with my company. We steered between a small

islet and the East Cape: it was blowing fresh when we arrived off Rangatukaia, and a heavy swell was setting upon the land; the captain hesitated what to do, for, as off Warakaihika, there is good holding ground, but no shelter for shipping. Whilst casting his eyes around in doubt he observed breakers outside us. This determined him and he immediately tacked and stood to sea again; towards afternoon, the weather moderating we brought to in eight fathoms' water, about two miles distant from the pah. A large war canoe came off to us with thirty natives, and a white man in her, the latter a runaway seaman; they stated they had between two and three hundred bushels of maize ready, and as they intended starting for Poverty Bay in the morning, they would bring it off at daylight. They were as good as their word; and a wild scene it was—three large war canoes ornamented with feathers, and beautifully carved stem and stern pieces. One of the canoes being considerably longer than the schooner came alongside: they were filled with naked figures, who threw themselves on board hallooing, shouting, and whooping, like imps of darkness. Their canoes were emptied and the produce stowed in the hold in a few minutes; and when they came to receive payment for their labour such an outburst of double discord took place, that the confusion of Babel must have been melody to it. Some time elapsed before all were satisfied and had taken to their canoes; they then gave a flourish with their paddles and pulled away with vigorous stroke, keeping time with their blades to the inspiring cry of one of their war songs. Whilst

the agent was engaged trying what more trade he could effect, the captain, a fellow-passenger, and myself strolled over the hills to survey the country. The skipper succumbed before he had proceeded three miles, and left us to gain the summit of a lofty hill, which promised a bird's-eye-view of the surrounding country. We had to surmount many an unexpected hill and hollow 'ere we reached our Mount Prospect. Every hill was under cultivation in greater or less degree, and most of the natives we fell in with were engaged in agricultural pursuits.

Maize seemed to be in abundance, but not, as yet, fully ripe. April is the best month for potatoes, and May for maize. On gaining the mountain top, the country to the southward, far as our gaze extended, was all hill and mountain, the deep narrow gorges between being densely wooded, not with available timber, but with an impervious interlacing scrub. Towards the north, at the back of the bold rising ground facing the sea, there appeared a level valley, apparently four miles long by two in breadth, through which we could discern the meandering course of two silvery streams converging towards a gorge leading to the sea. Lofty ranges of hill and mountain encircle this vale on all sides, and beyond which the eye could not penetrate. Having finished our survey, we were for making the best of our way back again; but our little Maori guide would conduct us by a fresh route, that he might introduce us to as many of his countrymen as he could. He led us through all the cultivated spots on our way, where we had to interchange the friendly shake of the hand and the

salutation "Te-na-ra-ka-koi." We were considerably surprised at the loads we saw females carrying: we met on the summit of the highest hill an aged female just ascended from the opposite side, with two baskets of potatoes on her back, which could not have weighed less than eighty pounds: she did not seem at all incommoded with her burthen, and commenced the descent with less appearance of fatigue than probably I exhibited, who was entirely unencumbered. On nearing the beach, to our great surprise we saw the vessel getting under weigh, and when we reached the pah, lo! she was standing seaward with a spread of canvass. This was mortifying; but no help for it. The white blackguard at the pah told us we had better start overland for Warakaihika, and that the road was so direct we could not miss it: however, as neither relished this advice, we bargained for a guide. After some hesitation, one at length offered: "Come on," said he, with a resolute shake of the head, tightening his blanket around him; "come on:" and forthwith he led the way. He was a powerfully-built fellow, and active as a deer: he could make use of one or two English words, but did not understand any sentence, and our intercourse was managed by signs, with a word dropped now and then. For the first eight miles we journeyed along the sea-coast, and the guide, to shorten the distance, would catch me by the hand as the waves receded, and run me as hard as he could, by this means cutting off angles and securing firmer footing, as the sands just laved by the ocean were much harder than where exposed to the wind and sun; but it was fatiguing work, and when

we came to ascend the cliffs I was seized with cramp in the thighs, so painful that I was frequently obliged to halt. When, however, we had mastered the ascent, I forgot my pains, on finding we were about to enter the valley we had seen from Mount Prospect. Descending, we traversed it in a winding direction; and my companion, who was something of an agriculturist, declared he had never seen richer soil. We waded the streams we had noticed, the deepest parts at the fords not reaching above our waists: the water was intensely cold, and we hastened to resume our clothes after we had crossed the first river, but our guide signed to us not to do so, indicating, by holding up four of his fingers, that we should have to enter it four times more. We were joined by several other natives as we proceeded, apparently delighted at the chance of accompanying us. The land was cultivated through the whole extent of the vale, and we noticed many separate "kiangas." Our guide asked us if we would "kai-kai te dinner," meaning would we eat some dinner: signifying our assent, he led us directly to the chief pah. Old and young came flocking round us; and whilst we were going through the salutation ceremony, Toma disappeared. In a few minutes, however, he returned, bringing with him a basket of cold potatoes: we intimated a desire for hot ones, and he made us understand that he had only brought these for the present, but that the afternoon meal was cooking, and would soon be ready.

. The chief named Ne-pere was a young man, tall and very robust: he wrote down his name, and brought from his hut several books; they were all much

amused at our readiness in reading them, though not able to understand a word, and when we used a wrong pronunciation, one and all would call out to correct us. Whilst thus engaged, the cramp returned upon me; my toes became distorted, and painful swellings arose in the muscles of my thighs and legs. On observing this, Ne-pere pressed our staying with him that night, promising, if we did, to accompany us in the morning to Warakaihika. We were half disposed to stop, but fearing to miss the vessel, we resisted his hospitable entreaties. Ne-pere shook his head, and made signs that we should never be able to reach Warakaihika that night; he laid his head upon the ground, and closing his eyes, intimated that we should go to sleep before we could get there. He took us into his hut and showed us mats, blankets, and coats to keep us warm, and signified that if we would but wait till morning we should be refreshed and well able to continue our journey. His signs were most expressive; but finding that all his kind entreaties were of no avail, he ceased to press us, saying in English, "Well, well." The potatoes and other vegetables being ready, a new basket was taken, and the choice of the lot being selected and laid before us, a clean mat was spread for us to sit on, and we were left to ourselves. The rest helped themselves indiscriminately from the oven, and kept at a respectful distance, except Ne-père and Toma, who sat immediately behind us. We were a long distance from the sea or brackish water; but on contriving to make Ne-pere understand I would like some salt, one of his slaves brought me a paper of Epsom salts. The repast being done, we distributed

what tobacco we had, and returning thanks in the best way we could, bade farewell to the kind group, shaking hands with the whole of them. They seemed particularly pleased with this shaking of hands, as if they deemed it an honour. Our guide acted very cavalierly. Seeing we had finished eating, he looked at us and just made use of the word "Ready?" and interpreting aright our nod of acquiescence, away he started, without leave-taking or anything else, and when we overtook him he was at a considerable distance from the kainga waiting for us. His *nonchalance* was very amusing. He entered two or three huts on the road, and, without addressing a syllable to the inmate, coolly helped himself and us to what we wanted, and departed in the same silent manner; nor did his countrymen manifest any surprise at this treatment. Having reached the extremity of the valley, by crossing the streams before they formed a confluence, we again emerged upon the beach, which we followed for a few miles till brought to a stand-still by the cliffs shooting precipitously from the sea. By some subterraneous convulsion, these cliffs had been rent asunder, and the yawning ravine or chasm rose wall sided for several hundred feet, at the bottom of which a dark rolling stream discharged its headlong current, and threatened to put a stop to our further progress. We were completely at fault, and could not see the possibility of continuing our journey. Toma stripped, and, taking me on his shoulders, waded up the stream for about fifty yards, landed me on a narrow shelf of rock, and then returned for my companion: thus he kept wading and landing us on either side the stream

as it winded through the dark chasm, till at last there appeared no prospect of a resting-place for the foot. "Come on," said he; and to our surprise commenced an almost perpendicular ascent. No track was visible, and we had to use hands and feet. Now commenced our troubles. Having surmounted the first painful ascent, we got into a narrow footpath which led us over what appeared to our tired legs an endless variety of steep ridges; sometimes we had to force our way through brushwood and fern that reached above our heads, and at others we were obliged to use the utmost precaution that our feet did not slip and precipitate us into the gullies below; and now our guide began to play us tricks, thinking he had us in his power. He first demanded one thing and then another; he even requested me to give my trousers off my body, saying that I had got another pair on, alluding to my drawers, and on our refusing to comply with his attempts at extortion, he made as if he would leave us: however, finding we were not intimidated, but continued our career without him, he again joined us, and, as if nothing had occurred to excite our distrust, he handed me his pipe, and, in a tone of the most friendly confidence, made use of the monosyllable "Smoke?" As evening approached, he became very urgent for us to quicken our speed, seemingly entertaining the greatest dread lest darkness should overtake us. We endeavoured to reassure him by evincing our indifference; but still, at every halt we made to relieve our fatigued legs, he did not fail to torment us with his "Haere! haere!" We had been travelling some hours, and were now

about two-thirds of the way over this interminable pass, when I was so exhausted with fatigue and pain proceeding from cramp, that I made up my mind to throw myself amongst the fern, determined to rest there till morning. On reaching Toma, who was somewhat ahead of us, with the intention of declaring my resolve, he motioned us to take off our hats, and pointed to the sun, which was disappearing in a flood of crimson light below the distant sea-girt horizon: concealing his face in the folds of his blanket, and sinking on his knees, he poured out his evening orisons to the Almighty; he sang a hymn and offered several prayers. I was much affected as I looked at the wild tattooed savage; and that scriptural passage wherein it is said that the Word of God should be preached throughout all nations upon earth, to every people and in every tongue, rushed forcibly to my recollection. We did not scorn to follow the example set us by the converted heathen, and after we had concluded our petitions again resumed our journey; and we observed that, from this time, Toma was more considerably deferential and attempted no more impositions. Buried in thought, we continued walking for some time in silence. Darkness at length rendered our footing so precarious, that it required the whole of our attention and exertions to keep ourselves from falling. Our last descent was particularly fatiguing and hazardous; it was nearly perpendicular. The trees entwined their limbs above our heads, shutting out what little light we might have received from the heavens; and the blind track was formed by the twisted, interlacing roots of trees, that obtruded

through the earth. We were literally compelled to feel our way, and in many places had to hang on with our hands as we groped with our feet for the next rest. It seemed as if we were never to reach the bottom; and we were so thoroughly and completely knocked up, that our trembling limbs well nigh refused to support us. At last, like thirsty pilgrims at the sight of water, we were once more delighted at beholding the beach, and, what enhanced our satisfaction, a hut only a stone's throw from us. But on signifying our wish to pass the night there, Toma betrayed most unequivocal signs of alarm: he shook his head, and hurried quickly past it, muttering "Tapi tap," which we subsequently learnt meant sacred. From some cause or other the chief of the tribe had tabooed it, and until this rite had been removed, no native dared enter it; so we had to trudge another weary mile or two in no enviable plight.

I could scarcely drag one limb after the other, and continued loud in my lamentations, when Toma suddenly stopped and asked, "Kai-kai ti supper?" Heartily did we express our readiness to fall to, at which he began ascending a sand-hill, leaving us to follow. The moment I attempted to do so, cramp in the muscles seized me with tenfold violence, and I was obliged to crawl upon my hands and knees. This was a settler, and I vowed to go no further that night. It was dark as pitch, and Toma appeared very anxious to keep us close to his side; I ridiculed his fears, and, I suppose, fancying from that I would be a good protection against evil spirits, he caught my hand and motioned me to accompany him. But

the great reluctance I evinced to move caused him to transfer his attention to my companion, who was in rather better condition. Handing me his tinder-box and instructing me to get a fire in readiness, he took my companion to aid him in a search for an iron pot, secreted for the use of the initiated. Owing to the extreme darkness, and Toma's fear of moving from my companion's side, they returned unsuccessful, but not without forage, as Toma unrolled his blanket and produced several heads of green maize and a large pumpkin. I had consumed all the tinder in a vain endeavour to procure a light, and was busily clicking away with the flint and steel, when, luckily for my credit, Toma stumbled on the smouldering remains of a fire. With lungs inflated like a blacksmith's bellows, he quickly kindled a flame, and it was not long before our provender was roasting in the ashes. I did not make much of a meal, but as for our guide, he despatched enough to have satisfied a horse. His appetite appeased, he stretched his blanket in the sand before the fire, and inviting me to lie down on the edge of it, he rolled himself up in the remainder, sheltering my back from the wind, which, being only in my shirt and trousers, was very acceptable: I got little, if any, sleep, as Toma disturbed me by continually rubbing and scratching himself, and we were obliged to rise frequently to procure wood to feed the fire, for Toma would not budge a yard from the light, being as much inspired with superstitious dread of the darkness as were the Australian blacks.

At four o'clock A.M. we again started, our guide having been entreating us to move since half-past two; but this my companion would by no means stand. The remainder of our trip, being about twenty miles, was along the beach, being a succession of long sandy reaches, which occasioned us much disappointment, as we were in hopes that every point we rounded would be last. Soon as the flushed appearance of the eastern horizon announced the break of day, Toma quickened his speed and hurried on to a native hut. Not knowing his motive, we waited for him on the beach. Presently he reappeared and beckoned for us, and we found it was to join him and the family in morning prayers. The decent and respectful attitude with which they listened to the one who read, and the fervency with which they seemed to feel and utter the responses and join in the hymn of praise, would put to the blush many of our more civilised congregations. A few miles further on we breakfasted on potatoes at a pah, the chief of which accompanied us to Warakaihika, which haven of rest we contrived to reach at half-past ten, never before so jaded and foot-fouled. We found the chief who had accompanied us the latter part of our journey had a motive for so doing, as, greatly to our surprise, he demanded payment for the few potatoes we had eaten, and again for carrying my companion across the narrow stream. Tobacco is much prized amongst the natives, and we started with a good stock, and so long as we had it we gave it away freely. This, perhaps, saved us from previous similar requests, but as it was the first

we had been subjected to, we turned to our guide, who looked much mortified and ashamed.

The schooner did not reach her old anchorage till the following morning, having encountered a stiff gale which had carried her considerably to the northward. I was not sorry to get to my berth again, as I cannot expatiate much on the luxuries of a Maori hut. A day or two after, the vessel's hold being filled with maize and potatoes, and her deck covered with pigs, we again got under weigh for the Bay of Islands. The wind freshened till it blew a strong breeze, and then commenced rude harmony. What with the hoarse roaring of Boreas and the varied notes of our live cargo, it was indeed "most musical, most melancholy." Defend me from such another freight of sweet voices. We arrived in safety at the bay, but instead of proceeding direct to Kororarika, I accepted an invitation to spend a week or two on one of the small islands at the entrance of the harbour. Great importance seems to be attached to these small islands by parties claiming them, but I cannot see why, as there is very little level land upon them: they would do very well for persons of independent property, who wish to enact Robinson Crusoe in a small way; but in a commercial point of view I confess I cannot see their utility.

CHAP. V.

Take Passage in a small Schooner bound to the Thames District. — Captain and Crew. — Coromandel Harbour. — Cross the Frith in an open Boat for Wakatinai. — Arrival at the Maramarua. — Conduct of Chief. — The Maramarua. — Waikato River. — An Excursion in the Company of Natives. — A Night Bivouac broken up by Rain. — A Chief taboos himself against himself. — Veneration of the Head by New Zealanders. — Their Disregard of the Value of Time. — Sleeping in Maori Huts. — The Waipa. — Anecdote of a young Giant. — Left in the Lurch. — Relieved by a chance Traveller. — Natives attempt at Extortion. — Scene with a Fury. — Journey back. — Burning Coal. — The Animal and Vegetable Kingdom glanced at. — The Return to Coromandel Harbour. — A “Plant” discovered, not a botanical one. — Removal of a Taboo. — Tale of a Pipe. — Natives jolly. — He that can help himself will find plenty to assist him. — New Zealand Tactics. — English Impudence. — Hot Springs at Wakatinai. — Excursion up the River Thames. — Construct a Steamer. — A Fracas from sleeping unconsciously on tabooed Ground. — Two Chiefs blown up with Gunpowder. — Mischievous Influence of Atua Chiefs. — Scene round a sick Couch. — A Halt at the Mouth of the River. — A Religious Thief. — Anecdote of a Suicide. — Estimate of New Zealanders’ Character. — “Wasteful Billy.” — A sick Headache. — Put up for the Night at a Sawyer’s Station. — The River Thames.

“I’ve put my foot on earth’s most distant strand,
And travers’d many a wild and savage land.”

DESIROUS of seeing the lauded district of the Thames,
I broached the idea to my companion of the East

Cape excursion; and we again agreed to become travelling companions. We secured a passage in a small coasting schooner, and early one Sunday morning made a start for this highly praised district. The passage was rendered amusing by the eccentricities of our crew and passengers. The captain was a little dare-devil of a Scotchman, who took great delight in exciting the nervous apprehensions of a great lout of a fellow, a countryman of his, who was in constant dread of some accident occurring. "Little Jock," as we used to call the skipper, would sling the deep sea-lead against the side of the vessel near the berth occupied by this man of tremors, and then sing out to clear away the boat, in order to cause his fears to induce him to show his nose upon deck. One of the crew seemed as if he had been raked from a dunghill, for a filthier union of dirt and rags I never saw, and he was honoured with the appellation of the dog's-meat-man; a darkey, made still darker by dirt, was our cook; and two New Zealand boys who spoke broken English, completed the vessel's complement: one of the latter expressed much satisfaction at my companion's conduct, but didn't like me at all, as he said I was too fond of "te kyrak." * We sailed past several small islands in the estuary of the Thames, and dropped anchor in Waihao or Coromandel harbour, a small, well-sheltered harbour, formed by an island and the main. I was much struck, on landing, with the appearance of the beach; it was literally one mass of oysters; and the rocks all

* Sky-larking.

round the island, and the shore on the main opposite, was in like manner swarming with clusters of these bivalve fish, which are well flavoured, and often caused me to spoil my dinner. After a day or two's stay on the island, we agreed with the owner of a small boat for a passage to Wakatnai, on the opposite side of the Frith, a distance of about thirty miles from where we were; intending to cross the country to Waikato river, where a friend of ours had long resided. The shore on either side the Frith rises abrupt, rugged, and broken; we were becalmed when about one-third of the way across, and enjoyed the luxury of passing two nights on the water in an open boat. 'Twas bitter cold, and heavy dews fell during the night. There was a very large kainga at the landing-place, and some of the natives were as big and athletic as any men I have seen. With some difficulty and hard bargaining, we engaged two stout young fellows to carry our traps and serve as guides. The features of the country we traversed were hilly and swampy; in a distance of one or two and twenty miles we crossed not less than forty swamps, varying in breadth from one to five hundred yards, and from ankle to waist deep in the crossing places. On arriving at the Maramarua, a tributary of the Waikato, we found a temporary station and several natives; it was nearly sun-down, and I felt tired and unwell: there were several canoes there, and the chief wanted to treat with us then for renewing our journey in the morning; but finding he wanted to impose upon us, and not being in spirits to "argue the point," I walked into the only shed

there was, a sort of cook-house, and the only place where there was a fire; and taking out my blankets, rolled myself in them as close to it as possible, and with my carpet-bag for a pillow, turning a deaf ear to all importunities, was soon fast asleep; for the natives, finding we would neither listen nor reply, ceased troubling us, and the sacredness of the chief's person debarred his coming into any place where food was cooked. Nor did I envy him his notions of caste; for, cold and frosty as the air was, he remained crouched in it the whole night; his back merely sheltered by a few rushes from the wind. Before my senses were closed to the world, I called to him, and beckoned him to approach; but he replied, in the figurative language of his country, that the place was too low for him, he could not enter, and one of our boys contrived to make us understand, that if we would speak with the Rangatara we must go to him, as he was too great a chief to rise. Being too unwell to contend about the matter, we left him in the unenvied enjoyment of his unsocial dignity. Next morning I awoke about five o'clock, free from pain, full of spirits, and prepared for debate; the Rangatara or chief, on commencing business, opened his mouth to an unmerciful extent, and, persuaded that he had us in his power, sought by a deal of knavish cunning, to extort most exorbitantly. As neither could talk the language of the other, he wilfully misinterpreted our signs, and insisted upon receiving most exorbitant pay for the hire of a canoe, as he would not understand that the canoe was to be returned by the guides. When at length, after much squabbling,

we had arranged matters, we told the boys to jump in and lose no more time; but no, the chief had incited them not to stir, unless we first gave them a sovereign each, and, however willing they might have been to accompany us, they dared not act contrary to his injunctions. At this I burst out laughing, and calling to my companion, we jumped into the canoe, determined to find our own way, though neither of us could boast of our skill at handling the paddle; but as we were shoving off, the chief dashed down the bank and seized the paddles, giving us to understand, that though we had bought the *canoe* we had not paid for *them*. Incensed and reckless of consequences, I again leapt ashore, and snatched away the payment I had given, and after having exhausted a vocabulary of Maori abuse upon him, which vocabulary had been drawn up as a safeguard for us, that we might not fall into danger by using any of the words therein contained, we commenced fastening our carpet bags and blankets to our shoulders, resolving to return rather than submit to his exactions. The dark savage's eyes glistened, and his mouth worked, and I have often wondered since how he restrained himself; but I was utterly regardless, and defied him. We were turning away when the boys came as intercessors, and, after a sharp and angry controversy, we gave the lads five shillings each, and paid half a pound of tobacco for the two paddles. They invariably insist upon payment down, not reposing much confidence in our good faith.

The Maramarua is the most extraordinarily wriggling river that ever I beheld; it winds about like the

convolution of a snake, and the greater part of it is so narrow, and the bends so abrupt, that it is impossible to turn a canoe in it. We were compelled to get out at these turnings, and by two dragging at the stem, and two pushing at the stern, would set her going again. Instead of a river it appears more like a passage forced by the natives through an immense flax swamp: it abounds with wild ducks and eels, and at almost every hundred yards you will find an eel-pot fixed. I cannot form any idea of the length of this river in a direct course from our starting place to the Waikato. We commenced our journey at eight o'clock in the morning, stopped an hour on the way, and about four in the afternoon burst suddenly upon the Waikato, and I suppose we proceeded at the rate of four miles an hour. The Waikato presented a fine appearance, compared with the wriggling creek we had just left; but I was much disappointed, for though the sheet of water is of considerable width, it is at the same time shallow, and full of sand spits: there is no timber on its banks, nor did I see any in the immediate neighbourhood. The soil I cannot consider good, it being either of a light spongy nature, composed chiefly of what is called pumice stone, or of a red burnt sandy nature, except where the banks are nearly on a level with the water, and the land consequently always in a state of partial irrigation. It here seems black and good, and the flax plant grows most luxuriantly, attaining the height of fourteen or fifteen feet: in short, the Waikato is considered the flax district of the island, but, taken generally, it presents the same appearance

as the rest of the country, being broken and uneven, hilly and swampy, and bearing evident marks of its volcanic formation. We reached the kainga where our countryman was residing, at seven o'clock in the evening; the natives crowded to see us, but when we were about to partake of refreshments, they all quitted the house, excepting the head chief, who sat himself down on the opposite side of the room, eyeing with stern curiosity the two strangers. Our friend had hinted the customs of Europeans to eat in privacy, and at a word from their chief they all retired. We found our friend on the point of removing from the native settlement, to a house and store he had built, three miles higher up the river, as, in consequence of his wife not liking the presence of the natives, disturbances would continually ensue, and he found his influence with them gradually becoming less. We arrived opportunely to aid him in the transportation of his goods and chattels. The natives assisted with great alacrity, and my wonder was frequently excited at the ponderous burthens the women carried.

The current of the river is very rapid, which renders it exceedingly fatiguing and tedious to convey goods up it. The practice is to keep as close in to the banks as possible, to avoid the full force of the current; and canoes are by far the preferable mode of conveyance, as the paddles do not require the extensive sweep that oars do, nor does the canoe draw so much water as the boat. Whale boats have been used upon the river, but they do not answer, and they have invariably been obliged to put the

oars aside, and have recourse to native paddles. It appears that when our friend arrived amongst the natives this last time, they were rejoiced to see him, and forsook their plantations in the season of planting, to aid him in bringing his goods across from Manukao. They were six weeks engaged in doing so, and such was their strict integrity, that our friend did not lose a single article; but the poor fellows, in consequence of having neglected their plantations, were now without potatoes, which form the staple of their diet, and nineteen or twenty canoes of them were going a long way up the river to borrow supplies, or to a potatoe feast as it is colloquially termed; the tribe they intended visiting having been down to them, some time previously, to a dried eel feast. Our friend was also suffering from "short commons," and my chief object being to gain as much insight of the country, and the customs of its people, as I could, we agreed to participate in the feast. Accordingly nineteen canoes, each containing, on an average, fifteen persons, set off one afternoon, and a very animating spectacle it was. The air resounded with their different songs and energetic shouts, the paddles keeping time to the measure; each canoe had a singer; but the one in ours was the most famous on the river: the refrain was joined in by all hands, and then the canoe would seem to be ploughing through the water. As night drew near, we bivouacked on a small islet covered with fern. The moon was shining brilliantly, and the various swarthy groups seated around the different fires, their wild garbs, and dark tattooed features, illuminated

with the ruddy glare, lent a singularly picturesque effect to the scene, when, oh sorrow! at one o'clock P.M. it came on to rain in a mercilessly pelting style: then was scramble, hurry skurry; some commenced forming temporary shelters by bending the flax leaves, and weaving them into an umbrageous form; others gathered up their traps, ran to their canoes, and commenced pulling down the river again to a deserted settlement six miles off: we followed the latter example, not relishing the prospect of a night's exposure to the pitiless storm. The ready kindness of the natives was manifested on this occasion, for on our arrival we found that those who had preceded us had prepared the best house for our reception, and a good fire to comfort us. As a proof that the chiefs do not preserve their authority over the rest without some personal sacrifice, Taowira, the most influential chief on the river, sat all night in the open air, exposed to a perfect deluge of rain; his person being too sacred to allow of his sleeping in any of the deserted houses. The chief had the orphan daughter of a brother with him, a little child for whom he seemed to entertain great solicitude: the little thing remained carefully nestled beneath his blanket, and in the morning Taowira combed out the entangled masses of her hair: but by this act his hands became tabooed even to himself, so that he could not use them in taking food, nor could he light his own pipe; and it was amusing to see one of his slave women take his pipe, light it, and then transfer it from her mouth to his, Taowira's hands being all this time snug under his blanket. The taboo lasted

three days, and I happened to be absent when the ceremony of removing it took place. The head, we may remark, is held by the New Zealanders in great veneration; no greater indignity can be offered than by touching their hair or alluding to their head in an offensive way: many serious fracas have taken place between Europeans and them, from a wanton or ignorant violation of this observance.

We were detained by heavy rains two or three days in one spot, and our progress up the river was very slow. The natives do not understand the value of time; so long as they can procure warm clothing and fill their bellies, they care not how they pass their days, nor can they comprehend why an European wishes to hurry on his journey. Vegetables being their chief food, after they have undergone the trouble of preparing the ground for the reception of the seed, they eschew hard labour till the time of gathering the crops. All our persuasions could not induce them to quicken their movements; no, they had plenty of food with them, and they could not see why they should be put to unnecessary exertion. The flax plant and the skins of dogs supply them with materials for clothing, which the women dress and prepare, and, as far as my observation extended, a more than due proportion of labour falls to the lot of the women, as, independent of their domestic duties, they engage in planting and digging, and participate in nearly all the out-door labour of their lords. Since Europeans have introduced luxuries into the land, they find that if they would possess a continuance of them, they must make suitable returns, and consequently many have of late

been induced to cultivate more land than their own immediate wants require. Tobacco has become an absolute necessary of life with them; and blankets are much coveted, being warmer and more pleasant to the skin than mats; and as other wants are created amongst them by the introduction of European habits, so will they learn more fully to appreciate the value of time. At another halting place, we were detained three days by the continuance of wet weather, and we had the luxury of sleeping in a hut with about forty natives: there we were, jammed together on the ground like pilchards in a barrel, Nga Maori lying at our feet, our heads, and by our sides. Not anticipating that I should be detained out longer than three or four days, I had taken no change of clothing with me; and on one or two occasions of getting wet through, I had no other course but to wrap a blanket round my shoulders *à la maori*, whilst my other habiliments were drying; and I must disclose the truth, such close bodily contact with our dark-skinned friends did not tend greatly to the comfort of our persons, for we speedily became—tell it not in Gath—covered with vermin. Great was my horror at the discovery, and great was our friend's diversion; for as he was an old resident, they never molested him; and he used to scream with laughter as my companion and myself proceeded every morning to the water, to shake our shirts in the wind, and bury our heads in the stream: not that the loathsome insects infested our heads; they were too lazy to crawl so high. They are monsters in size, and would stick to our linen with their hind legs, whilst they banquetted on our backs. They

are nick-named "heavy dragoons" by the old hands ; and fleas they call "light cavalry : " but body vermin, fleas, musquitos, and sand-flies confine their attacks principally to new comers. Our friend who was exposed in every respect as we were, yet remained entirely free from intruders.

There was nothing gratifying, or to call for remark, on either side the river, till we reached the point where it forks into two branches, one called the Horotu, the other the Waipa. The scenery about the Waipa is picturesque, and the soil is good immediately on the banks. About sixty miles beyond the termination of our jaunt, we were informed that the land was level, rich, and exceedingly fertile to a considerable extent ; but this I cannot vouch for. The whole of the Waikuto district must have been at one time very thickly populated : it abounds with the remains of native fortifications, and the meaning of Waipa is the water of fortified villages. Our patience becoming exhausted by the dilatory movements of our deliberate escort, we resolved on abandoning it, and engaged a small canoe at the kainga we last rested at, and proceeded to finish our journey by our own exertions ; but this we were not allowed to do ; for we had scarcely pulled six miles, when we were hailed from the banks, and, after a conversation of nearly an hour's length, the party hailing us launched a large canoe, and ten strapping fellows jumped into it, to bear us to the end of our destination. Their leader was a gigantic young fellow between six and seven feet high, finely formed, and rendered notorious and terrible to his foes from the fact of his having been shot through the body

in a bloody conflict in the river, and afterwards surviving, though carried away as dead; the ball had entered his right side, traversed his chest, and passed out on the left side. He is the hero of many hundreds of songs on account of his gallantry and daring. On one occasion he and three others had gone up the river, beyond the limits of safety, and unexpectedly fell into an ambush; a war canoe with twenty hands in it was lying in wait for him, and when he appeared within range of musket-shot, the whole party, in their impatience, fired a volley and gave chase. Nga Maori are miserable marksmen, and not one of the shot took effect. Seeing the extremity to which they were reduced, the four gave way: dear life was at stake; the current was with them, but it also favoured their enemies: desperation lent them strength; they kept their distance, they even gained a little; but no, the struggle was too unequal,—in vain they used their utmost efforts, gradually their foes encroached upon them: observing this, and that their own strength was failing, the tall young fellow, conscious that his opponents' arms were discharged, rose from his seat, and taking deliberate aim, fired: two fell to rise no more, and a third tumbled off the thwarts into the water; the canoe was stopped to take in the wounded sinking wretch, and then Seven Feet, uttering a shout of derision, applied all his strength to the paddle, and accomplished their escape.

Our canoemen requested payment for their services, which was conceded them; but on our refusing to extend similar payment to a little boy whom they had brought with them, we found ourselves next morning

left in the lurch. They had taken away the canoe, leaving us without the chance of returning for some time as they imagined; but it so happened that an Englishman, who had been traversing the country collecting pigs, came down the river at this critical moment, and immediately accommodated us with his canoe. We were detained a couple of days by the obstinacy of the natives, who would, yet would not, barter with us; they threatened to starve our friend out, and talked of compelling all Europeans to quit the country. This was only an attempt to extort disproportionate terms; but finding they persisted, we laughed at them, packed up our traps, and proceeded to launch the canoe. This signal of our being in earnest brought them to their senses; fellows came scrambling down the bank in all directions with baskets of potatoes on their backs, and soon we had more than we could convey; but being disgusted with the whole mob we did not wait the arrival of the party who were coming to the feast. Whether selfishness is a natural feature in New Zealand character, or whether it has been taught them by their intercourse with Europeans I know not; but we were greatly annoyed by their attempts at exaction. As we were returning we stopped in the afternoon to kindle a fire on the banks of the Waipa to cook some potatoes, when a party came and demanded payment for our so doing. "Omai ti utn" (give me the payment) was eternally in their mouths. "Yes, I'll give you payment," said the owner of the canoe, who was familiar with the language. "Here, give me some wood" (the natives were dis-

charging wood at the time from two large canoes). Down he went, and as fast as they handed it out so he received it and placed it on his fire, they imagining he was carrying it to their stack; but when the old woman, the proprietress of the wood, discovered the cheat, a most ludicrous scene took place. She was a hideous-looking creature, naked to the waist, blind with one eye, her face shrivelled and lined with a thousand wrinkles, and her coarse grizzled hair in wild disorder resembling knots of twisted snakes; her sightless ball protruded horribly, whilst the other glistened like a spark of fire. She stretched out her long skinny arms and talon-like fingers, and fairly foamed with fury as she endeavoured to snatch the wood from the fire; but the "white man" seized a red-hot brand, and every time she made the attempt he would thrust it at her, whilst she yelled again at her disappointment. Macbeth's witches were beaten hollow. The natives could not stand it, and exploded with such uproarious laughter, that the demoniacal old hag was fain to turn away and hide herself. I was nearly getting into a scrape here, for on coming down the bank, forgetting the sacred character of their heads, I carelessly leaped over a group of four or five who were seated in my way. They started and gave me a very fiendish sort of scowl, which I returned with a broad grin, and our friend happening to be by, prevented further ill consequences by explaining my ignorance of their customs, at which they evinced a surly sort of satisfaction; but I should not like to have renewed the feat. We were not quite so long in reaching our

friend's house as we had been in making the journey from it; our canoe was manned by ten stout New Zealanders and four Englishmen; and every time Nga Maori relaxed in their exertions we jeered and set the example of continued paddling, so that with the current and our manful plying we estimated that we accomplished more than one hundred miles in ten hours. One of the lads was a famous singer, and he cheered us with his wild chaunts nearly the whole way, by which means we contrived to maintain admirable stroke; occasionally when he took a breathing spell I would take up the burden, adapting English words to their tune, but we found they all left off pulling to listen, so I was obliged to desist notwithstanding their reiterated cries of "Tena! Tena!" (Go on! Go on!)

Not far from our friend's house, there is a fresh-water lake at the foot of a range of mountains, and through the very centre of it runs a stream of salt water. A large coal district is also close at hand, which accidentally took fire; at the time I write it had continued burning for upwards of two years. This coal might serve for steamers if the river was navigable for any available purpose, but in many places it is so shallow that a whaleboat cannot pass. It is a singular fact that there are no peculiar quadrupeds indigenous to New Zealand, and only one or two varieties of birds. There are no venomous reptiles, and a person may lay himself down to sleep in any part of the country without fear of injury from noxious animals. There are few shrubs, and one or

two varieties of vegetables only indigenous to the country ; but most of the fruits and vegetables have been introduced by Cook and other voyagers.

As the owner of the canoe was bound to Waihao we availed ourselves of his escort. Having plenty of hands to collect fern for our beds, and to procure us firewood and water, and the weather fortunately proving fine, the jaunt was tolerably pleasant, though it took us five days to reach Wakatiwai, as we could not pursue our former track, the canoe we were now in being three times the size of the other. One night we had to sleep on a small dry patch of sand, not above ten feet square, after several abortive attempts to continue our journey. The night was piercingly cold, and the water intensely so, and I could not but admire the indifference with which the lads threw off their blankets to force the canoe along, sometimes plumping up to their necks, and at others being only ankle-deep. They appeared insensible to cold or fatigue, but my blood was chilled by the biting influence of the night atmosphere. At last, it being past midnight and very dark, we agreed to rest till day-dawn on the patch above mentioned. On leaving the Maramarna we arrived at a different landing-place from where we took our departure, and there were evident traces of pigs having recently preceded us, which when our boys observed they commenced beating the bush in all directions. I wondered at the meaning of this manœuvre, but soon found it was not without an object, for in a little time they returned bringing with them half the carcase of a large hog partially roasted. It appears they

had discovered signs of one having been killed, and concluding the party could not carry the whole away, they dispersed in search of the "plant," which in case of discovery is fair game amongst them. The natives rarely kill pigs on their own account, excepting on great occasions or feasts, and when they *do* sit down to a feed of flesh, the sight is any thing but agreeable. They eat most voraciously, and gorge to repletion; each man consuming as much as would satisfy four English ploughmen. Our lads formed no exception to this disgusting rule, and though it was only mid-day when they had completed their feed, we could not induce them to proceed more than four miles further that day, when we bivouacked for the night. Next morning the natives refused to carry our luggage unless we would agree to give a pound of tobacco to each man of the party. "Very well," said I, "don't, we'll carry it ourselves." At this they all laughed and seemed mightily entertained, and one of them cried out in broken English, "Very goodee, very goodee, te pakiha makee carry." Preparatory to starting, one of the natives, in cutting the rind off a piece of pork to grease his musket, gashed his finger with the knife: he immediately dropped it and called to another of the party, who taking it up, and sticking it into a potato that was boiling over the fire, peeled it with the same knife, and placing it on its point, put it into the mouth of the man who had cut himself. On inquiring the meaning of this ceremony, I was told that in consequence of the knife having drawn the blood of a chief, it became tabooed, and no one could use it till the taboo was removed, which was taken off by this

operation. I remember on another occasion when these same lads were with us at the Waikato, one of them was playing with the pipe of a slave, who had been lent to our friend by Taowira. "Take care," said Ekao, the slave, "you don't break that pipe."

"What if I do?" returned the other.

"Why, your mat will hardly be payment for it?"

Such an answer would have caused his instant death in former times, and *nothing* could have saved him; as it was, the young chief seized him by the throat, and one of his companions sprang at him with a knife, and would have passed it through his body had not the wife of our friend who arrived at the moment rushed in between them and prevented it. I heard her shrieks, and ran out. She was abusing them with great vehemence, and keeping them off in fine style. But master Ekao himself was not at all disposed to prove an unresisting martyr; he had freed himself from the grasp of the chief, and now stood stark naked, armed with a billet of wood and snorting at the nostrils like a bull, with his fright and exertion. He was a short thick-necked fellow, and the play of his muscles would have afforded a fine treat to a student of anatomy: however, this was not the time for indulging such speculations—Ekao's life was in danger, and approaching the chief I quietly disarmed him of the knife, at the same time telling him, if he wanted to fight, to go down to the pah and not create brawls in the presence of a white woman. Upon this they again laid hold of poor Ekao and tried to drag him away, but he again shook himself free; and as I would suffer no fighting there, they

agreed to wait till his pakiha master came home, when they threatened to take vengeance. But by that time their anger had evaporated, the pipe, the cause of the uproar, having been smashed to atoms, as the slave would never have dared smoke it again.

Finding the lads persisted in refusing to carry our luggage without such exorbitant payment, we made bands from the flax plant and strapped it on our shoulders. At first they set up a loud laugh, but when they saw how heedlessly we walked away with our burden, they came running after us, making signs for us to put it down. This was what we expected, and we therefore spurned them from us and continued our course. I overtook one of the lads, who had started the first thing in the morning, sweating under the burden of a large wooden chest and other things. "What!" said he, "poys no goodée? Tam te poys' proory eyes." I am unconscious at what seminary he acquired these elegant expletives, but I think they were the only words meant for English I heard him utter. We had jogged along for about four miles, and had passed through three wide swamps, when we stopped for a breathing spell, as my burden did not weigh less than eighty pounds. Whilst resting, the remainder of the party came up, and one of the lads stole through the fern, and secured my bundle to his back. I was advised not to notice him, as we had still seventeen or eighteen long miles to go, and over no pleasant road, otherwise I had made up my mind to carry it myself, to show we were independent of them when we chose; but as the lad

voluntarily assumed the load without stipulation for payment, I considered it good policy to let him groan under it. We made another halt on the top of a high hill overlooking the country, and here the natives gave us a specimen of their mode of fighting. They dashed about in a zigzag course from right to left, still advancing, going through the motions of loading and firing, but never staying for an instant longer than to discharge their pieces. I inquired their motive for such tactics, and they answered, because they would not stand as marks for the enemy to fire at. During their manœuvres they kept up a hideous yelling, and made the ugliest grimaces, a practice which they adopt either to conceal their own fears or to endeavour to frighten others. But all this mock display subsided on the man who was with us turning his back and stooping and calling out to them to fire; they instantly dropped their muskets, and sneaked away, looking as sheepish as possible, and never again attempted to show off before us. The wind was blowing strong from the eastward, and the fire we had kindled to heat some water communicated to the fern on the hill side, which spreading with great rapidity, the whole surface was presently in a state of conflagration, blazing, roaring, and consuming every thing before it. The very soil was burnt and embrowned, and yet a few weeks after the fern was as thick as ever; and not the slightest trace of fire could be distinguished. We regained the settlement at Wakatiwai on a Sunday evening, and nearly all the natives were engaged in church service. Many a curious

eye was turned towards the strangers as we passed through the Kiangá, but no one quitted his devotion to come to us. I arrived first at the settlement, having outstripped my companions by nearly half an hour. Anxious to arrive at my journey's end, somewhat fatigued, and not wishing to be troubled with questions I could not answer, I took no notice of the various parties I met, and it was quite laughable to witness the curious expression of their faces at my dogged nonchalance. I have often reflected since at the cool impudence we English possess, and at the way we treat these poor fellows. Fancy one or two comparative pigmies traversing a country of savages, knowing nothing of the language, entering houses "sans cérémonie," helping themselves to whatever might be in their way, the natives looking on with deferential awe, bullying chiefs upon their own land regardless of consequences—and yet this I have often done without a thought of my arrogant assumption. In leaving behind you a few trifles, which to the natives are important gifts, you become so sensible of the disparity between them and you that you lose all sense of having intruded. Nevertheless, I almost wonder that the natives submit to it: nothing but an intuitive perception of our intellectual superiority would induce them to do so, as it is well known that they do not lack physical capabilities. There are several hot springs in the vicinity of Wakatiwai of sufficient heat to scald a pig or a fowl; there is also a spring of a similar nature in the neighbourhood of the Waikato river, but I was prevented seeing it.

A vessel was observed lying at anchor about six miles lower down the estuary than where we rested for that night, and at early dawn my companion and I started ahead to secure, if possible, passages to Waihao. Instead of proceeding along the beach, we made a straight cut of it; passing through several plantations of potatoes, maize, &c., we met several natives, but merely exchanged the usual greeting of "Te na ra ka kui." We reached the beach in time to secure a passage; the master was loosing his topsails when we hailed: we entered into the necessary agreement, and about half an hour after our fellow traveller came up with his mob, hurrying along the beach; and when he came on board, we learnt that he narrowly escaped a serious "fracas," as one particular point of the beach was tabooed, and had it not been for his excellent knowledge of the language, he certainly would have been plundered of every thing he had. It was well for my companion and me, that in our innocence we avoided this danger. The settlements of the natives are numerous in this district, and it appeared, to my judgment, to be the best cultivated and the most picturesque of any I had yet seen in New Zealand.

Whilst waiting at Waihao for an opportunity to get to the Bay of Islands, a Scotch gentleman proposed that we should join him in an excursion up the Thames river. Having nothing better to occupy our time, we agreed to do so; we could not engage natives to row for us, and to obviate this difficulty the projector of the excursion constructed a pair of paddle-wheels to attach to his whale-boat by an iron

crank fixed to the axles. Having got all things ready, off we started, amidst the cheering of those assembled to witness the first "*steamer*" set going in New Zealand: two of us sat one on either thwart, facing each other, and worked the crank, whilst the other steered spell and spell; and steaming work we found it: but we contrived to propel her along as fast as four men with oars could have done. Both wind and tide were against us, which rendered it very fatiguing; notwithstanding, we overtook a canoe paddled by fourteen natives. We excited the utmost astonishment all along as we went, the natives crowding down to the beach to gaze at us: nor did we cease in our manful exertions till past midnight, when symptoms of exhaustion began to betray themselves. We had laboured thus hard in the expectation of gaining the residence of a white man, where we hoped to have received good cheer, and to have refreshed ourselves; but the night closed in so dark, we could not distinguish objects. When we imagined we were somewhere near the spot, we shouted, and heard responding cries; but though we continued to hail, they were not repeated, and there being many sunken rocks between us and the shore, with rugged, sharp projections, we thought it more prudent to proceed higher up, where it was free from these ugly customers, and beach it for the night. Accordingly, we did so; and whilst the others were securing the boat and getting out the traps, I went in search of a roosting place, and to collect drift-wood for a fire.

The coast, on either side the estuary save here

and there, as I have before remarked, rises almost precipitously from the water, and to the eye it appears covered with an impenetrable scrub. I selected, for our night's encampment, a sandy spot at the foot of a gorge or chasm of the hills, beneath the wide-spreading branches of a noble tree; a torrent came down this gorge at times, as was evident from the accumulation of lifeless trunks and branches of trees which must have been swept from above—but now there was only a trickling stream. We soon had a roaring fire under weigh, and when we had taken off our wet clothes and hung them up to dry, wrapped in our blankets, we contrived, by the aid of some tea and cold food we had with us, to pass a very agreeable and profitable hour; and shortly after, the comfortable glow occasioned by satisfied hunger and a cheering fire prepared us for slumber, and we sank back on our beds of leaves, and became lost to all fatigue in a deep sleep. I was roused from this comfortable state of insensibility by an extraordinary jabbering, and on raising myself discovered an old long-bearded Maori, who was talking and gesticulating in a very energetic strain. On finishing his address, of which I did not comprehend one syllable, he retired to the distance of forty paces and sat down. Scarcely awake, unable to fathom the meaning of this mysterious proceeding, and not being willing to disturb my companions, I beckoned the old man to me again; with much hesitation he came, and having enlightened me with a similar display of unintelligible oratory, once more placed the same distance between us. Deeming there must be something more in this than met the

eye, with considerable reluctance I awoke my companions, and apprised them of what was going on: our Scotch Archimedes, who was best acquainted with the language, hastened to the old fellow for an explanation; but he came back much faster than he went, and urged us to lose no time in getting everything into the boat and launching her, for we had been sleeping on tabooed ground, and run the risk of being robbed, or atoning for our error by compulsory payment. In the blissful confidence of my ignorance, I curled my lip in scornful pride, and vowed I would neither submit to robbery, nor yield payment; but still bearing in mind that "discretion is the better part of valour," I did not neglect the advice of preparing for immediate departure. It was only half-flood at the time, and our boat was high and dry; it required the united exertion of our utmost strength to move her, and the old man would not come to our assistance. By slow and painful degrees, moving foot by foot, we had just got her into the water, when down came half a dozen strapping fellows, calling on us to stop and speak with their chief. Conjecturing pretty shrewdly to what the conversation might lead, we politely declined the invitation, and were shoving off, when lo! the chief made his appearance, followed by ten or twelve more ferocious-looking fellows; and all our labour was destroyed in an instant, for in that period of time they darted into the water and hauled us aground. As we showed fight, the chief darted at our commissariat basket, and carried it off: this was affecting us in a vital part. Archimedes was grappling with a fellow who had

seized his coat; my East Cape companion was defending the boat with a spare oar, and, not to be worse than my word, I sprang at the fellow who had ravished the food: but nothing daunted at seeing me coming, he let go the basket and caught me by the throat. He was of gigantic size, and from his daring had acquired amongst Europeans the nomenclature of "Terror of the Thames." Of course this we did not know at the time, or perhaps it would not have improved my nerves. As it was, I did not feel much alarm at his grip, but only thought of freeing myself from it, and of recovering the basket. I therefore grappled him firmly by the sides, burying my fingers just above his hips, and then with a rush and quick movement of the foot gave him a spin which seemed to astonish him. The tattooed varlet was too heavy to cross-buttock: he stood staggered for a moment as if in amazement how so light a man, in comparison, could play him such a trick; but his confusion did not last: throwing off his mat, he waved his arm over his head, and, with a savage dance and fiendish yell, prepared to come at me again; and at the same time I had the satisfaction of seeing his followers running to arm themselves with heavy pieces of drift-wood that were lying on the beach. I thought it was all up with me; but determined to die with my face to my foes, I turned my back to the water to avoid being surrounded, and stood in boxing attitude to receive the charge. We had a fowling-piece in the boat, and I shouted for it, intending to exercise the butt end of it on the chief's head; but every one had his own work to contend with. And now, whether

excited by a generous sort of sympathy at seeing us three so stoutly resist his mob, or from unwillingness to shed blood, or impelled by what other motive, the chief suddenly restrained the attack, and called out for peace; observing that "he was fond of the pakihani (white people), for they were brave men, and he did not want to quarrel with them." He said "we had been doing wrong, he could not make us understand, but he would send for a countryman of ours, who lived not far off, and he would explain;" and he requested to be allowed to stop with us in the boat till our countryman arrived. We could not object to this, and we also allowed a slave to accompany him, who, however, stripped himself, and sat under cover of the chief's mat, to show that no treachery was contemplated; but lest any thing of the kind should be attempted, we pushed off a few yards from the shore, and there rested on our paddles. In a little time we saw the Englishman approaching; the very party whose house we had been attempting to make the evening previous; and we had absolutely slept upon the beach, within a quarter of a mile of his abode. He regretted the predicament into which we had got, but it was out of his power to assist us: we had profaned the taboo of a most sacred spot, and he recommended us to make the best settlement we could now we had got the chief in our power; for which reason he would not ask us to stay breakfast, as the natives would be sure to avail themselves of the opportunity for plundering the boat. I was for pitching the vagabonds overboard, and giving them a swim, but this was not listened to; and the

chief was rather moderate in his demands, as he only required a dollar to appease the broken sanctity of the taboo. I was opposed, upon principle, to giving them any thing; but Archimedes, who was arguing the point, fumbled in his pocket till he succeeded in catching a stray half-crown, which, when the chief saw, he seized it with the greatest avidity, and jumped overboard, followed by his attendant; but, in making their exit, they contrived, with the adroitness of a London pickpocket, to abstract from the boat a cannister of sporting powder, and all our stock of tobacco. We did not detect our loss at the time. Another chief came running down to extort payment for our infringement of the taboo. We saw a fellow stamping, shaking his fist at us, and distorting his features, the deep furrows of his tattooed face imparting to it an expression of tiger-like ferocity: but we only laughed at him, and continued our work at the crank. We heard that he threatened to pursue us in his war canoes, and vowed to break up our boat and take every thing from us; but his anger was mollified on seeing how cleverly his comrade had rifled us: perhaps, also, the astonishment excited by our steamer operated in our favour, as they spread a report of some white men having visited their place in a boat propelled by two grindstones. It was a fortunate thing for us, perhaps, that the powder was stolen, and not less fortunate that the gun was withheld from me when I shouted for it; as we discovered, on rounding a projecting point, a large pah, with about four hundred natives in it, who all turned out to gaze at our wondrous mode of journeying. There were three large canoes lying on the beach,

which they could have run into the water in an instant; so that if we had escaped the first party, we should have been nicely seized by the second. There was a sandspit at the foot of the salient bluff, which was covered with myriads of ducks: we paddled quietly till within a short distance of them, and three times I snapped the gun at them; and in searching for the powder to prime the nipple, we first became conscious of our loss. The natives had followed on the cliffs, watching our proceedings, and the fall of one of these ducks was to have been the signal for an attack upon us; as this sandspit, owing to some battle that had been fought there, was venerated more highly than the spot where we had presumed to take our night's repose.

After grinding a few miles, we reached the location of another white man, where we obtained kai-kai-te (breakfast). A few days previous to our visit, a party of natives were sitting round a fire in this neighbourhood, one of the chiefs being seated on a keg of gunpowder; another chief called to a slave to hand him a keg for a seat, which he fetched, and passed to him over the flames; a few grains escaping from the plug-hole, the keg exploded, and communicating, caused the explosion of the other. The slave was blown to atoms, and the two chiefs were burned from the sole of the foot to the crown of the head, but neither was killed; and they were picked up by their horror-stricken followers, and carried to the Caranga. It so happened that at this time two English gentlemen were staying in the vicinity, one of whom was a medical man, and often rendered little

acts of kindness to the natives in the way of his profession; and now a whole body came to him, craving his assistance for their mangled chiefs, promising him great payment if he would but cure them. The doctor went, and though they were fearfully mangled, he did not despair of eventually restoring them. He was unceasing in his attention, and one of the chiefs showed rapid signs of convalescence, when an Atua or spirit chief paid them a visit. These chiefs possess wonderful power over the people, and are held in great awe and reverence by them; they pretend to gifts of vaticination, and their curse has been known to wither the limbs, and affect the lives of their wretched victims. Such is the extraordinary influence acquired by the craft of one savage over the fears of another. I have seen living instances of the effect of these maledictions, and Europeans who have watched the result, without being able to shake the credulity of the ignorant wretches, have assured me that without apparent cause a sound and healthy limb has gradually withered and contracted, until the fountains of its strength have dried up, and it has hung an useless incumbrance to the body: so much for the effects of the imagination—the power of mind over matter. I wonder if the power exercised by these chiefs is what the learned term mesmerism or animal magnetism. The Atua chief, willing to display his superior knowledge, and to give the lie to the prognostications of the Englishman, addressed the chief, who was going on most favourably, saying “What fools these foreigners are! The medicine man tells you that you are doing well—that you will recover—the

fool!—the finger of death is already upon you, and when the moon reaches the full to-morrow night, you will be called to leave us.” Short as the notice was, and unprepared as the poor fellow was for death, he had such religious faith in the prediction, that when the doctor came to visit him in the morning he was in a high fever; he refused all medicines, and at the appointed time, like a true disciple, he yielded up his spirit and fulfilled the prophecy of his priest. Under other circumstances, the doctor would have been persecuted for having administered medicines to the defunct that did not produce the results contemplated; but he turned the tables upon them, and attributed the chief’s death to his obstinacy in refusing all medicines on the morning of the night when his spirit fled to join his father’s in the happy planting grounds. But it was not without reason that the doctor became troubled with doubts and anxieties, for he had just cause to fear that the other chief would slip through his fingers, in which case, instead of receiving payment, in all probability he would have to make it. The doctor having expressed his doubts to us, we proposed accompanying him in his matutinal visit, with the idea of ridiculing the natives out of their superstitious belief. Our entertainer at breakfast could speak the language well, and we all set off in a body to destroy if possible any mischievous impressions that might have been created. As we neared the pah a regular concert of crying and groaning burst upon our ears, and the disheartened doctor gave vent to a groan in sympathy. We hurried as fast as we could to the supposed scene

of death, and came upon an extraordinary tableau. The friends and followers of the roasted chief had assembled in a body to cry over him before he died; they had formed themselves into two deep semicircles, squatted on the ground in front of the hut where the poor fellow lay, his head resting on the lap of his father, who was mingling his tears with his son's, condoling over his premature fate. The young chief was stretched on some of their softest mats, and a piece of calico spread upon pliant wands was laid over him to prevent anything from touching his body. A more melancholy scene could not be well imagined, as the renewed burst of grief from the old man caused the others to break forth in louder lamentations. It was in itself enough to have killed the young fellow. We immediately commenced pulling the party from their sorrowing positions, making signs of dissatisfaction at their behaviour, and giving them to understand that they ought to laugh rather than cry, and do all they could to cheer the spirits of their wounded chief, instead of endeavouring to depress them; and by dint of laughing and joking we got them to laugh too, even the patient himself "grinned horribly a ghastly smile;" and much to his credit the young Medico shortly after this effected a complete cure.

Having to contend against wind and tide our progress was not very rapid, and at night we had only gained the mouth of the river. Although it was not late we resolved to wait till morning before prosecuting our journey further. We beached our boat opposite a large Kaianga, and some of the natives came to our assistance in securing her, and in conveying our

things to one of their huts. We purchased some fish from them, and after supping, as the place was cold and cheerless, the hut proving the deserted tenement of some English trader, only partially roofed and the sides nearly demolished, we spread our blankets to the best advantage to keep ourselves warm, and endeavoured to sleep away the time till morning. The moon was in that quarter influencing neap tides, and on awaking we saw that the tide was already ebbing, and unless we immediately got our boat into a narrow channel about fifty paces from where she lay, there would be no chance of our getting off till late in the afternoon, which, as we were short of food, and the natives not too much disposed to be hospitable, was a thing to be avoided if possible. We made many attempts, but it was of no use, we could not move her. We then asked the natives to assist us; but no, the day was Sunday and they would not stir. They pointed to the sky and shook their heads in a very deprecatory manner: all arguments and entreaties were vain, not a foot would they budge to help us; but I could not help noticing one fellow who seemed to pay more than ordinary attention to the boat, and deeming his affectionate regard not without its object, I determined to watch him; and in a little time when he thought he was unobserved, I saw him lean forward, and with the speed of light snatch something from the bottom of the boat and conceal it beneath his blanket; he then stood as cool and unconcerned as possible. At this instant my companions returned with some pieces of wood they had gone to fetch to serve as

rollers to get the boat off, and walking quickly up to this dexterous gentleman, I gave him a smart rap on the shoulder. "Come, old fellow," said I, "give us a shove." In his surprise he stretched out his arm, and down tumbled a knife, the article he had stolen; he hastily attempted to conceal it with his foot, but I pushed him on one side, and pointing to it asked him what he meant by that? He was utterly confounded, and the expression of his face was such that it quite pained me to look at him. I therefore only shook my head, and let him understand that as the day was not too sacred for him to steal, neither could it be for him to render us assistance, and picking up the knife I desired him to help us. He seemed thankful to escape so easily, but our exertions were of no use, and we were fain to content ourselves in the best way we could till afternoon. The delinquent withdrew himself as speedily as possible, and we saw him no more.

Nga Maori are keenly alive to the degradation of exposure; one of them, on being reproached by his tribe as a thief, took his fowling-piece, went out, fired it into a keg of powder, and blew himself to atoms. At the time I write, this fact is well known to all the European residents at Port Nicholson.

The observance of the Sabbath by the natives generally at this place was very punctilious. It is a privileged day amongst them both for slave and chief, and nothing seems to delight them more than assembling together in large bodies to chant and sing. I have lived to discover that one of the leading principles in a New Zealander's character is, "nothing

for nothing." They will entertain you with all hospitality when there is a prospect of their receiving any thing in return; they understand *well* the principle of "venturing a sprat to catch a mackarel," and will overwhelm you with trifles and proffers of service if they see you have plenty of goods with you, and at the time they make you presents, they are *scrupulously particular in expressing* they don't require payment for them; but should you take them at their word, and omit to make them *presents* in return, they will not fail to jog your memory, and moreover will not cease to torment you till they obtain three times the value of the property if bartered for in the regular way. This will account for the ready hospitality we received when travelling on the east coast: so long as we had tobacco, we distributed it freely; but when we came to the last halting-place, having no more tobacco to give, the chief accompanied us nine miles to seek payment for the few potatoes we partook of. And now these religious varlets being precluded by the observances of the day from *selling* food, so neither would they give us any, and we were compelled to undergo a fasting vigil against our will. They knew we intended leaving when the tide served, and as they could not receive payment on a Sunday, they would not risk the chance of a gift. We made some tea, and boiled the remnant of our potatoes, and whilst rioting on this sumptuous fare, the chief and several of his mob paid a visit to us. We handed him a pot of tea, but he declined taking it, and so did several others to whom we offered it; but we could

observe that it was with reluctance they did so. The place had been tabooed against their taking food in it, and in presence of their chief they did not dare to transgress. On the night previous, when no chief was present, two or three natives who happened to be in the hut whilst we were supping did not scruple to despatch our remnants. Probably the secret of this taboo was, that as they would not administer to our wants, a sense of shame prevented their receiving any thing from us, for I never heard of an instance of a taboo proper having been violated. On a signal for prayers, we got rid of our mob, and as we were enjoying our "otium cum dignitate," a messenger from a pah a mile or two higher up, came and made signs for us to accompany him; we could not make out his meaning, but he became so earnest in his gesticulations, that I jumped up and followed his guidance, promising to send word if better fare was to be obtained. The guide led the way along the beach for about half a mile, and as some reddened pieces of wood stuck in the sands indicated the preposterous imposition of the taboo, we had to strike off and make a circuit through a native plantation. A great many huts and potato stores were scattered about the plantation, and at its termination we came to an extensive pah, where I was met by a white man, who had been residing amongst the natives for many years. We learnt subsequently that he was an escaped convict from New South Wales; be that as it may, he behaved to us with gentlemanly feeling, set before us the best his house afforded, and on our leaving loaded us with provisions, and would accept no remu-

neration. He has enforced some respect from the natives; and I may here mention as illustrative of his character an anecdote related of him. He had travelled to a port occasionally touched at by whalers, with stock of his own rearing, which he bartered for prints and calico. On his return he wished to commence trading with his new property, but the natives would not deal on old terms, and as he had no other way of convincing them of his sincerity, he took the whole of the cloth and set fire to it, for which reason he now goes by the name “Billy Maomo,” which being interpreted means “Wasteful Billy.”

On stepping into the boat to prosecute our journey, I was seized with a violent sick headache, and became so totally helpless, that my companions had to endure all the fatigue of working at the crank. I was so dreadfully convulsed with pain, that I almost imagined my hour was come; and gratefully relieved were my companions when they assisted me ashore at a sawyer’s station on the banks of the river, where we intended passing the night. I had a violent fit of vomiting, which left me without the power to stand, and with scarce the strength to speak: the sawyer and his mate made a bed for me on the floor, and there I lay in the most agonizing pain I ever experienced. Towards morning, a lethargic torpor came over me, and when I recovered from it I was free from pain.

This sawing station was on the skirts of what had once been an extensive and very strongly-fortified, pah, now nearly deserted, and falling to decay in all directions; nor do I wonder at it, as

the land on either side the river is nearly level with the water, and after heavy rains must be completely swampy. The tide rises nine or ten feet, and when we wanted to start, we found it was low water, and the boat fast on the slimy bank, certainly the most unctuous and adhesive in its nature of any banks I have seen. With much difficulty, we got afloat at half-flood, but had scarcely proceeded 300 yards, when we were aground in the centre of this much misrepresented river. The low, marshy, uninviting aspect of the country on either side ; the extent and unwholesome appearance of the unsightly, slate-coloured, fat mud-banks ; and the turbid, muddy stream, wriggling its course between them, offered anything but a tempting prospect to the enterprise of the settler. We were detained nearly an hour before we were afloat again, and it required the most watchful navigation to prevent our being continually aground afterwards. This exposed us to the chance of having to paddle a considerable distance against the tide, a benefit of which we were by no means desirous, as it sets with great rapidity, not less I should say than five or six knots, in the strength of the current. We proceeded between thirty and forty miles up the river, the character of the country continuing still the same, low, swampy, and unwholesome, with no appearance of pasture or timber of any size. The vale of level country, or the "Valley of the Thames," according to some, is from twelve to twenty miles in breadth, and extends to 120 in length. The mouth of the frith or estuary is studded with islets, as I noticed at the com-

mencement of this chapter ; and it varies in breadth from fifteen to thirty miles, until, at about thirty miles up, it suddenly contracts ; a tongue of land runs out, dividing it into two parts : the northern and most insignificant branch receives the waters of the river Piaka ; and the lower, or southern one, those of the boasted river Thames. We regained Waihoa just in time to secure a passage in a vessel bound to the Bay of Islands, whence I shortly after shipped for Sydney, not over delighted with what I had seen of this “ Granary of the Southern Hemisphere.”

CHAP. VI.

Harbour of Waikato.—Directions for taking the Bar.—Canoe Excursion.—Excitement of the Natives.—Anecdotes.—Proceedings regarding Adultery.—A Mission for Port Nicholson.—Get under weigh.—A Night Descent into the Forecastle.—A Meeting with the Chief.—Seizure of the Vessel averted.—Leave the Harbour.—Mount Egmont.—Cook's Straits.—North Part of the Middle Island.—Port Nicholson.—The River "Hut."—Erroneous Representations and Dealings of Land-sharks.—Waitimatta or Auckland.—A Stroll to Manukao.—Lady Franklin.—Return to Sydney.—Remarks on New Zealand.

" A - - - way!

Away! away! the white man's here,
The morn shines bright, the stream runs clear;
Row, brothers, row! cheer, brothers, cheer!

Te - - - na!"

Refrain of a New Zealander's Boat-song.

December 26th.—I AGAIN started for New Zealand on a general coasting voyage. We endeavoured to make the harbour of Waikato on the west coast direct; but a series of contrary winds drove us so far to the northward, that we came between the North Head and the Three Kings, and so worked down the coast, opening all the harbours and bays, till, after a tedious, procrastinated passage, we reached the wished for port. The coast, as we beat our way, presented every where the same sterile, savage appearance: hill rising abruptly above hill; and bold

repulsive cliffs, relieved at intervals by sandy wastes. The harbour of Waikato cannot be approached with a westerly wind, as it is a bar-harbour, with only two fathoms of water on it at low ebb; and the entrance to the bar is rendered difficult and hazardous by two *sandspits*, running in contrary directions, causing them to overlap, the one tending northerly, the other to the southward. From a long continuance of south-easterly winds, the bar was almost smooth when we sighted it; a leading wind also favoured us; but as we were all strangers to the place, and without charts, the captain took the precaution to sound the passage in the boat before taking it with the vessel. The report of the sounding party, being favourable, when the southern extremity of the north sandspit bore by compass E.N.E., and the southern extremity of the south sandspit, E. half N., we ran in E. by N. half N., and were carried over the bar in safety. We encountered a heavy swell, which, fortunately, did not break. Owing to mismanagement, our whale-boat, towing astern, got capsized, and we lost a set of oars; but this would not have happened if she had been properly hauled up. I was disappointed in the harbour: it is safe enough after you have passed the bar, but it is of no extent, and not fit for vessels over 200 tons burthen. The South Head is a frowning, black-looking mass, called "Woody Head;" it is covered with a dense growth of dwarf trees: the North Head is a sandhill, being the termination of a dreary waste extending for several miles, with scarcely the shadow of vegetation to be seen; and

when the wind prevails, and blows hard from the southward, the air is filled with showers of drift sand, exceedingly unpleasant both to sight and respiration. No sooner had we come to an anchor, than the deck became crowded with natives, who created the clamour and confusion of Babel. As usual, a white man, demi-civilised, was residing in the pah; and not far distant, two of the London missionaries, with their families, had taken up their abodes. The white man came off to us and proffered his services; and as I was desirous of engaging four boys to convey me up the river, I requested him to negotiate for them. Plenty were found willing to go, but demanded payment beforehand, which I would not give, and as they persisted, I bundled them ashore. I wanted to make all the haste possible; and knew that by prepayment they would take their own time. I would recommend to every one travelling in New Zealand, if they can manage it, to withhold compensation till services are performed, and proportion the reward according to the merit of the parties. The natives have no notion of the value of time. About seven o'clock in the evening, four of a party whom I had dismissed came off in a light, swift-pulling canoe, stating their readiness to go with me; but that if I decided on going, I must start at once, while the tide served. I imagined that there was some concerted plan in this, and that it was their intention to rob me; but not liking to mention my suspicions, I privately armed myself, and stepped into the canoe. The tide only affects the river for about seven miles, and you then have to contend against the force of

the current, which sets towards the ocean at about the rate of four knots. My "*boys*" — (it is customary, but I don't know why, to call all New Zealanders travelling with you boys or lads, though their being fathers may have fully justified their claims to manhood. I suppose it is upon the same principle that the French continue to call grey-headed waiters "*garçons*," or that we apply to sexagenarian riders the title of "*post-boys*") — my "*boys*" behaved very civilly, and continued pulling the greater part of the night. Towards morning, as they complained of hunger and fatigue, at the same time expressed their willingness to persevere in their exertions if I wished it, I consented to their securing the canoe, and reposing on the banks of the river for a few hours: I gave the poor fellows some of the salt beef I had with me, and their curiosity respecting it was quite ludicrous: they turned it over, examined it in all directions, smelt it, and at length appealing to me, made use of the monosyllable "*Cow?*" The missionary residents had some cattle at their stations, which, I suppose, gave them the idea. The country, generally, was much as I had left it, nor did I see any great improvement in my friend's farm. His natives had all quitted him, and he now found it a difficult task to procure workmen from amongst them, although for many years they had looked up to him as something more than mortal. The invasion of their land by so many European immigrants had created a painful sort of consternation amongst the natives, and many had drawn towards the European quarters to ascertain their manœuvres.

I could not afford a long sojourn with my friend, and on my return to the vessel he accompanied me to receive the goods I had brought for him ; we could only get two natives to assist us in working the canoe, those engaged by me having returned immediately. When about one fourth of our way, we met two large canoes, well manned and containing several chiefs. Observing how slightly we were attended, and that we ourselves were using the paddles, two of them, to show their respect, instead of ordering their slaves to assist us, stepped themselves into our canoe and aided in working her down. One of these chiefs was a kind, benevolent-minded man, and recognized as a missionary teacher. When in his heathen condition, some of his comrades taunted him with the fact, that his sister, the widow of a chief of high caste, was in the habit of granting personal favours to a slave. Few chiefs in New Zealand would have endured such ignominy “and yet have refrained to kill.”—Loth to shed the blood he could not restore, he warned the slave, and threatened him with death if he repeated the offence: this had its effect for a time.—But, as fatalists would say, “the wretch could not resist his fate.”—The chief was again apprised that the slave continued to visit his sister. Still reluctant to take life, he again admonished him, and extended his mercy even to a third warning. But this only emboldened the slave. He again renewed his visits; and the fourth time the chief was taunted by his compeers, who bitingly told him that his *slave-brother* was at that moment in a certain hut with his sister. Not a word did he utter in reply. Gather-

ing his mat around him, he hastened at once to the place designated, and raising his tomahawk severed the slave's head from his body. The chief's sister made no attempt to save her paramour; but when his lifeless body lay stretched before her, she threw herself upon her knees, and with the wildest pathos implored him "*not to cook his head,*" a token of the most contemptuous indignity.

As an instance of the high sanctity in which the chiefs are held, and of the fearful nature of the penalty inflicted on those who have the boldness to desecrate the taboo, I may here notice that on one occasion, when this friend of mine was travelling in the country, he halted for the night at a friendly settlement, and partook of the common fare. The season had been one of scarcity, and the crops, such as they were, not of good quality; the slaves in consequence fared badly. At the time of my friend's arrival at the kainga, a basket of superior koomeras or sweet potatoes had been set aside and tabooed for the especial use of a young chieftainess. One of her female attendants, prompted by hunger and a favourable opportunity, as she imagined, had the temerity to take some of these koomeras for her own consumption. In the morning, on my friend's turning out, he observed a pool of blood close to the hut in which he had been reposing. On asking the meaning of it, he was told, "Oh, nothing!" they had been killing a pig. Having heard no noise, and missing the woman, his suspicions were raised, and on further inquiry he learnt that the hapless creature had been detected in the theft, and was subsequently dragged outside the

hut and slaughtered. When these poor wretches are doomed, they meet their fate with absolute indifference, never giving vent to a murmur.

Formerly it was the custom, when a native committed adultery with another man's wife, to place the transgressor, naked and unarmed, about thirty paces from the injured party, who was provided with three spears, which he was allowed to hurl at the offender. If by his agility he could ward them off with his hands, he was so far safe; but if the injured husband still remained unsatisfied, tomahawks were placed in the hands of either party, and they were suffered to fight it out on equal terms. Polygamy was common amongst them; but the custom is fast disappearing before the labours of the missionaries. On regaining the "Heads," we had an opportunity of witnessing how different the proceedings in a case of adultery are now. Instead of suffering the accused party to run the risk of being speared if innocent, or of escaping by his address if guilty, a general meeting was convened by one of the tribe going from place to place ringing a large bell; at which summons upwards of two hundred assembled to be present at the trial. The husband stated his grounds of suspicion, and brought forward witnesses to prove certain appearances which tended to furnish tolerably conclusive circumstantial evidence. Judging by the countenance, I should say the accused was guilty; but he was a "master of that rhetoric the learned call *rigmarole*," and after he had surmounted the first embarrassment of his position, he pleaded with such success, that he was honourably acquitted, and pronounced "not

guilty." Had the verdict been the other way, his punishment would have been expulsion as a church communicant, a disgrace much dreaded.

Intending to proceed to Port Nicholson from the Waikato, one of the missionary residents requested that I would give him a passage with four of his lads, that he might on his return overland have an opportunity of visiting tribes who had not as yet received any European minister of the gospel amongst them. The subject had been mentioned to the Waikato natives, who expressed their approbation of the design, and their readiness to raise a contribution to defray the expenses of the mission. Having consented to take them on their own terms, the natives collected about 200 baskets of potatoes, between one and two pounds in money, three old knives, two half-worn cotton handkerchiefs, and the lid of a shaving-box. I told them it was no wish of mine to deprive them of articles we had introduced amongst them, and that the potatoes would suffice. "No," said the chief, "it is our free present, and all that we have to give; if you set such little value on the goods you now reject, we will go on board and take from you all articles of similar description." The missionary gentleman explained that it would be treating them with indignity to refuse any part of their *gift*, and I then accepted it as it was made. We had to wait a long time before a wind offered for our getting away, and when at length we made the attempt, just as we were on the bar, the wind died suddenly away, and we had to drop anchor to prevent driving on the North Head. Shortly after it came on to blow hard from the westward,

compelling us to return to our old anchorage. It was fortunate, perhaps, that we failed on this occasion, as it soon afterwards became known ashore that two of the seamen had smuggled two slave women belonging to the chief on board, and had contrived to conceal them from the knowledge of any one; and had we succeeded in getting out, the probability is, we should have been met by the natives in their war canoes, and the vessel would have been plundered. On resuming our berth, the chief suppressed all outer show of knowledge or resentment till the dead of night. The crafty savage, accompanied by a single attendant, then stole softly on board, and suddenly stood over the sleeping men as they were lying in the fore-castle. He aroused the delinquents by a gentle grip on their throats, and their horror may be imagined, on starting from sleep, to find themselves in the clutch of the justly incensed chief, whose eyes were glittering with ferocity. I was told the fellows were completely paralysed, and made no attempts at defence or resistance; not that either would have availed, as the two athletic savages could have destroyed with their tomahawks all in the fore-castle before they had recovered from their fright. The chief enforced silence by waving his tomahawk with one hand and placing the fore-finger of the other on his lips. The trembling women sank speechless to the deck; and the guilty seamen, with nervous trepidation, opened their chests and made signs for the chief to take anything he pleased as payment. He weeded them pretty decently, taking from them their Sunday clothing, their whole stock

of money, amounting to between four and five pounds, and every other serviceable article. Seizing the women by the hair of the head, he then dragged them up the fore-castle ladder, and forced them to descend into the water by the chain cable, and having secured his booty, he quietly got over the vessel's side and paddled after the women in the same noiseless manner he had come on board. Not a soul but those in the fore-castle knew anything of this summary proceeding, the news of it being carefully kept from the officers and myself. Of course no such occurrence could have taken place had a proper anchor watch been maintained; as it was, every soul lay buried in sleep. The chief administered a severe flogging to the women, and, not content with rifling the seamen's chests, the opportunity for plundering the vessel with an apparently justifiable motive was too great for his cupidity to withstand.

I had been passing the evening with one of the missionaries, and whilst wending my way back to the vessel, a native crept cautiously to me, and made me understand that the chief intended plundering her that night, and, by dint of broken English and broken Maori, acquainted me with all that had taken place. My astonishment was only equalled by my indignation, and I feed my informant to put me on board without disturbing any one. "All hands" were asleep, and I alarmed the captain not a little by my information: the mate was sent to summon all hands on deck, and I went up and harangued them on the egregious folly which had placed our lives in such jeopardy. We could

distinguish an unusual number of canoes hauled up on the beach, which added to the excitement of the crew. They begged me to give them arms; but I told them "No! I was determined to sell my life as dearly as I could in case of an attack; but as they had reduced me to this predicament, they might get out of the danger the best way they could." The fellows remonstrated in vain, and I went below, leaving them to adopt what mode of defence they pleased. Throughout the night they relieved each other in patrolling the deck with shouldered handspikes, and the danger for that time was averted. At daylight, putting two pair of loaded pistols in my belt and wrapping my coat over them, I went ashore to face the chief. He did not deny his intentions, but pleaded justification and the customs of the country. Suddenly I covered him with a pistol, and asked, "what could save his life if I chose to move my finger?" He started; and as I replaced the pistol in my belt, I bade him be cautious, for that we were all prepared and ready to mark the chiefs that should lead the attack.

"But," said he, "I can bring ten to one."

"Never mind if you can bring forty; you won't live to enjoy the plunder, even if our deaths follow." And I asked him, "Suppose one of your slaves came on board and robbed me, would you think it right in me to come and set fire to your house whilst you were sleeping; and, on your attempting to make your escape, to knock you on the head?"

"Ah!" he ejaculated, "that's very good talk; my thoughts never came to me in that way; but I know something of the wisdom of the white men, and am

not such a fool as to throw away my life for a trifle : and so, from this time, if your men do wrong, I will let you know ; and if my men do wrong, come you and let me know.”

To this I agreed, and we parted good friends ; but during the remainder of our stay, we did not relax in our state of watchfulness. No hostilities were attempted, and the gentlemen of the missionary station were of opinion that it was more talk than anything else ; although they admitted, that a year or two back nothing could have saved the vessel. 'Tis true enough that the chief had us all in his power beyond resistance, if he had chosen to exercise it, the night he surprised the fore-castle ; and I cannot divine the cause of his forbearance, unless it was ignorance of our unguarded state, and the desire to appear simply in the character of a complainant, if he found us on the alert : be that as it may, I would not repose implicit faith in their safe conduct.

We were detained so long in the harbour for want of a favourable wind, that I began to despair of getting out again ; early in the morning, a flaw of wind would prevail from the land for a short time, which might have sufficed to carry us over the bar ; but then if it died away again, as it invariably appeared to do, it would have been impossible for us to have escaped the rollers. Almost reckless from long detention, we at last resolved to run the risk, and, taking advantage of the customary flaw, with the first grey of the morning, we happily effected our escape, and secured a good offing before the wind fell light again.

Kawai is the next harbour to the southward, after you leave Waikato, and is of a similar nature; no other presents itself until you reach Port Nicholson. With our usual good fortune, we had to beat the whole of the way to Cook's Straits; and Mount Egmont, the highest land in New Zealand, was continually in sight: in some charts it has been estimated as 14,000 feet above the level of the sea, in others only 9,000; it is crowned with an eternal diadem of snow, which, at times, was all we could discern, glistening above the clouds: in more favourable moments, the whole of its bold outline would be revealed, again to be shrouded from our sight by a veil of mist. Cook's Straits separate the northern from the middle island, and is dotted by several small islets. Kapiti, the largest of them, seemed to me to be a barren rock; it is used, in the season, for a "look out," or whaling station, for which I have heard it said it is admirably adapted: the other islets are mere clumps, scarcely worth noticing. The northern extremity of the middle island appeared still more broken than any part I had yet visited; but from assurances of those holding stations on it, the land is generally of a more level character, and the soil of a better quality than that of the Northern Island. It does not, however, possess so many good harbours; and the climate is more frigid; for it is asserted that a range of hills intersects the island from north to south like a back-bone, which, for the greater part of the year, is covered with snow. Port Nicholson is situated in nearly the south extreme of the Northern Isle; and the

navigator is somewhat startled, on entering it, to see a belt of rocks stretching, apparently, across its mouth. Many vessels have at first been scared away by their unexpected rencontre, conceiving they had mistaken the entrance, not deeming it probable that any harbour existed beyond such foes to plain sailing. It was blowing half a gale, and we had to beat our way in almost dead in the wind's eye, as sailors have it; but we found plenty of room to work.

The country around is a succession of barren abrupt hills, or broken bluffs chilling to contemplate. The township of Wellington is situate on the western side of the harbour; it bears some resemblance to Kororārika, but is larger in extent. There is a semicircular sweep of sand, curving like a horse-shoe, backed by high unavailable ridges supporting a growth of thick impervious scrub. The houses are built without order or regularity, on the narrow flat between the sandy beach and these ridges: they are of various orders, at present the "Maori" being the most prevailing. There are some of the composite order, a cross between Maori hut and Irish hovel, plastered with mud inside and out; and again, there are a few of the ornate cottage style, built of weather-boards. The first attempt at location was made at the eastern extremity of the harbour, and the settlement was called Pitonia or Thornton; but the site was found too open and exposed for shipping; and though a motley group of hovels and huts at first rose quickly into being, they were as speedily abandoned, as the spot selected for the foundation of the capital proved to be the treacherous bed of a dried swamp; and when the rains

set in, the *flat* being below the level of the beach, with high, acclivitous, wall-sided hills inclosing it in the rear, the rush of waters was so great, that the unfortunate emigrants found themselves inundated, and for some time were compelled to communicate from house to house by means of canoes.

The river Hut, about which so many glaring misrepresentations have been made, is a miserable streamlet, just without the deserted township of Pitonia; it is navigable for small boats or wherries for about half a mile, or from that to a mile, perhaps, but it then doubles like a hare, and is choked with sand-flats; it deserves no other name than a watercourse, in fact it is no other, winding its way through an opening in the hills, its resources derived from their drainage. The land on either side this gorge is densely wooded with valueless timber. Where small patches have been cleared by the desperate exertions of the beguiled settler, or through the financial scheming of the land-jobber, the fecundity of the soil has been proved by the luxuriance of the vegetable crops produced; but the expense of clearing an acre of land to render it fit for cropping is so heavy, that no poor emigrant could stand it. It is asserted that this gorge opens to a fine vale, extending all the way to the "Thames;" but of course I only vouch for what I see. I was likewise assured that the land trending to the north-west, called the Taranake district, at the foot of Mount Egmont, is felicitously provided with every requisite for the agriculturist. Granting that this was true as regarded the *land*, it strikes me that the expense of conveying the produce to a market would more than equal

its value. There is no harbour for shipping near the Taranake district; and here I may mention, once for all, that the whole of the harbours on the west coast are bar harbours, dangerous and uncertain; the winds prevail from the westward for the greater part of the year, and if you succeed in entering safely, you cannot rely *on any time* of effecting your departure, which ought to be an item in the estimation of every trader speculating on the west coast. The harbours may not inaptly be compared to rat-traps; at times offering tempting baits and facilities of entrance, but on wanting to prosecute your voyage, you unexpectedly find yourself a prisoner, with the gilt taken off your {gingerbread. Vessels frequently get wind-bound in Port Nicholson, and, as I heard an old settler say, "It is a regular trap for fools." It possesses no exports: it is not a good flax district, if flax could be rendered a payable exportable commodity, which, from every experiment I have seen or heard of, I am inclined to doubt. Whaling ships rarely approach it; the cash is being drained from it, as it is incapable of making other returns; and, notwithstanding the pains taken to conceal the fact, the mechanics and labourers are fast leaving it for a more auspicious field for their exertions. It is subject to continual rains and heavy gales, common at all times of the year, from the south-east or north-west; and my own experience leads me to confirm the statement made by several masters of merchantmen, that three days in the week throughout the year are above, rather than under the average opportunities for discharging or receiving cargo; and to crown all, it is subject

to earthquakes, so vibratory that many have declared they would never think of erecting a brick house, for fear any casual shock should bring it about their ears. Port Nicholson appears to me to be a focus for the concentration of every wind passing over New Zealand; it is eternally blowing a gale, and the most obstinately prejudiced and interested were compelled to cry out, "there really was no standing these cursed winds." The communication from place to place being chiefly by water, the accidents occasioned by the capsizing of boats in sudden squalls are frightful; and the tumbling and rolling of the surf on the beach is such, that when a boat with ten persons in her was swamped within a few yards of the sand, and although the water was only breast-deep where the accident occurred, one only escaped with life: the bodies of the nine unfortunates repose in one common grave. We were instrumental in saving the lives of nine or ten individuals, who, but for our being anchored a considerable way out, must have perished ere assistance could have reached them.

It is laughable though pitiable to see the readiness with which the residents try and cheat themselves into the belief that Port Nicholson is a *paradise*; if they have a continuance of fair weather for three or four days, nothing is heard but congratulations. "Isn't this beautiful?" "Isn't this lovely?" "Charming weather!" "Port Nicholson will do yet!" are some of the exulting exclamations of *those who wish to be deceived*. It is stated that Port Nicholson belongs to a company in England, who were supposed to have paid a fair equivalent for it to the natives; but

this is denied, and private individuals have had prior possession of places which the company lay claim to. There has been a great deal of anarchy and confusion in the settlement, nor do I see any likelihood of a speedy arrangement of the matters in dispute. No individual will give up his claims merely because a body of scheming speculators, far away from the scene of action, choose to assume a right to this or that portion of territory. Allotments have been put up to public auction in England, and needy adventurers, allured by the descriptions given of the place and the prospects held out, have purchased to the full extent of their means, anticipating (can it be believed?) *that on their arrival in the new country they would be able to lease their property at an annual rental exceeding in amount that of the purchase-money.* The consequences can be foreseen on the true state of things staring the luckless speculator in the face, dispelling his dreams and dissipating his extravagant notions. Some, unable to bear up against the utter prostration of their aërial visions, have yielded to drunkenness and despair; others have appeared overwhelmed with stupor; and I have conversed with others who have been loud in their execrations of those who had caused their ruin; and there have not been wanting men of influential names, connected with the company at home, who have proceeded to Port Nicholson, and lent themselves to the cheat palmed upon the public. They have both *bought and sold* land, at second and third hand, *at enormous prices*, thus creating *a high fictitious* value for the land, to beguile others, and induce them to lay out

capital on these money-begetting investments; and so soon as the bait has taken, the crafty projectors of the scheme have *sold their interests and departed*, leaving the stultified purchasers to ponder at leisure on the changeful shadows of their bubble. *Private letters* remitted by these schemers to their *friends* in England, containing the most fallacious flourishes, have been *published* in the journals of the day, and no means have been spared to tempt others to embark in the same fortunate speculation. Hundreds have done so upon the chances, a large proportion of the buyers remaining in England, waiting till some subsequent period to resell their bargains, with the intention, I presume, of retiring from the cares of business with the happy results—infatuated mortals! The specious accounts sent home lately of the high prices that allotments here and there have fetched, will, I have no doubt, cause many to send out powers of attorney for the disposal of their allodial investments, and it would not be surprising if land in Port Nicholson became like stinking fish, every one eager to get rid of it, but no one willing to buy; but apart from this, the cry is that no man is certain of his title to land purchased of the company, that its rights have not yet been ascertained, and that they have in their sales exceeded all limits, in direct violation of orders from government; even so, I cannot see that the poor emigrants will be any the worse, as it may tend the more quickly to direct their energies into a better channel.

The native residents of Port Nicholson appear to me to look upon the proceedings of the European

settlers with a moody and jealous eye. It never entered into their imaginations that, when they sold their land, they were to be restricted from locating in any part they pleased. It is true that they have courted the residence of Europeans amongst them, but more with the idea of introducing one or two into each settlement, to assist them in trading and teaching them the ways of white men; and one or two in a kainga was all they ever wished for, so that they might be dependent upon the chief for protection, and the superior power remain vested in him; but it never formed part of their contemplations that swarms of Nga Pakihani should come and drive them from their dwellings when they stood in the way of their convenience; and every fresh arrival of immigrants seemed to me still more to excite their astonishment and discontent.

On leaving Port Nicholson we stretched away to the eastward until clear of the straits, and then skirted the coast till we made Waitimatta, a harbour in the estuary of the Thames. There are a number of small islands grouped about this part of the estuary which shut it in from the sea; but it is open to the seaman-like objection of being exposed to too long reaches. It is here that the government have determined upon fixing their capital, and to my regret, instead of preserving for it the euphonious native title of Waitimatta, they have bestowed upon it the pawkish name of Auckland. The harbour is of considerable extent and includes a succession of bays, styled with wretched taste Mechanic's Bay, Cooper's Bay, Official Bay, Commercial Bay, &c.

Commercial Bay will be the emporium for commerce, as it possesses greater facilities for landing or shipping goods than any of the others. Much difficulty and inconvenience attend this operation at present, for at low water shiny mud flats extend nearly half a mile from the shore, and it is only at the top of high water that you can land cargo, unless you go to the expence of dragging trucks to the boats, the trouble and expence of such a proceeding requiring no comment. If New Zealand should ultimately become a place of importance, of which I have my doubts, this evil might be easily remedied by throwing out jetties, as there is not the same surf to contend with that curls its crest upon the beaches of Port Nicholson and the Bay of Islands. Waitimatta is the only place I have seen in New Zealand adapted for the establishment of a commercial town to any extent. There are no native residents in its immediate vicinity, owing probably to the scarcity of fresh water, and the poverty of the soil. I allude more particularly to the point called Waitimatta, where the ground is covered with a sort of vitrified scoria. The absence of any commanding eminences to overlook the interior, and serve as stations to guard against surprise, may also be taken into account, as in their feuds the natives take more credit to themselves for destroying an enemy by treachery than in open fight, and in selecting a site for a Kainga or settlement, they rarely neglect the desideratum of a look-out station; but be the cause of their absence what it may, the European residents, I should think, would have no cause to regret it.

I walked from Auckland to a place called Manukao, the harbour of which is on the west coast: the distance is seven or eight miles, and in crossing this portage the country opposed no impediments for overland communication of any description; it is of a gently undulating character, and the soil, after leaving the capital, appeared rich and fertile, but there was an evident want of running streams, as I called at two or three native plantations for a drink of fresh water without being able to procure any, and on promising a lad sixpence if he would bring me some, he darted off, and after a prolonged absence returned with a little in a calabash, which looked as if it had been ladled out of a muddy puddle. There were no settlements till very near Manukao, but the place must at one time have been thickly peopled, as to the right and left of the country I traversed were the remains of native fortifications, which must have called for much labour and time. Advantage had been taken of high conical eminences rising from the plains like molehills, the summits furnishing a bird's-eye view of the surrounding country. These they had cut into flats or different landing places, so that if driven from the lower defences, they could have retreated upwards, and by withdrawing the means of ascent, rendered the further progress of their invaders nearly impracticable, particularly if each step or flat was surrounded by a strong palisade according to the present custom of their pahs or fortified places. Upon each flat were several deep pits, which I imagined were intended as snares, or, what is as likely, they may have been used as granaries or

depositories for their food and valuables in case of a siege. Many of these abandoned eminences were covered in places several feet deep with the heaped-up shells of the "pipi," a sort of fresh-water muscle much used by the natives as food. It cost me four hours' severe exercise to make these observations, and two or three times I was on the point of giving up the attempt. The ascents were difficult, although the soil had crumbled, rendering them less perpendicular, and I was aided by shrubs and fern, which have sprung up since the desertion of these admirable fortresses.

I must not omit to observe, as a proof of the facilities of land carriage in this district, that as I was pursuing my way to Manukao, an orderly on horse-back came galloping past me; and on arriving at the harbour, I found Lady Franklin and her female servant, with two or three gentlemen in attendance. Her Ladyship having unfortunately sprained her ankle in a former exploratory expedition, had been carried on a couch by a party of New Zealanders; and I do not know a place in New Zealand where the country would have afforded a similar means of gratifying her thirst for novelty and adventure. I afterwards heard that his Excellency, Governor Hobson, had received an invitation from the mission station at Waikato, to be present at the annual examination of the natives. Lady Franklin, being at Government House, begged to accompany his Excellency, and there being no wheeled vehicles in the country, several chiefs contended for the honour of carrying her, saying, that

as she was a great chieftainess, none but chiefs should carry her. I suppose that the jaunt was tedious; and it being late in the evening when the party arrived at the place of embarkation, the *Lady Errant* bivouacked with her attendants under tents which they carried with them, while the governor returned to Auckland, with the intention of rejoining the party early next morning; but whether the exertion had proved too much for him (his Excellency being in feeble health), or he had not been accustomed to bush travelling with ladies, instead of appearing himself, an orderly came with an apology for his absence, and stating that indisposition would prevent him from fulfilling his intention of bearing her Ladyship company. Lady Franklin is the wife of the governor of Hobart Town, and has acquired much notoriety from her masculine spirit of travel and adventure.

From Waitimatta we took the northern passage through the islands of the harbour, touched at the Bay of Islands, and then again wended our way to Sydney.

I am no geologist, botanist, or agriculturist, and cannot judge of the mineral resources of New Zealand. Botany is an amusing pursuit for the leisurely researches of superfluous talent in old countries; but I should have thought that our Pharmacopœia and alimentary lists were already replete with the agencies of life and death; nor do I see that civilized life, with all its aids, is extended to greater length of days than savage life. Many are of opinion that New Zealand will make a fine grain country: this may be; but my opinion is that it would be a much

finer one if its bogs and marshes were filled up by its tumultuous jumble of hills. This earth of ours must have been sorely troubled with the colic when New Zealand sprang into creation. It bears marks of having been upraised from the deep by the mightiest throes and wildest eructations: it possesses some good harbours, valuable as whaling stations, and it has limited capabilities of furnishing an export of timber. So long as the British government maintain an expensive establishment, and capitalists go there, the settlements around head-quarters will thrive, but an inversion of the order of things will take place; those who brought wealth will lose it, and the poor will become rich; the hard-working labourer and the astute store-keeper will be the principal recipients and holders of the money introduced into the country. I certainly am not favourably impressed with the unrevealed resources that are yet to be brought to light in New Zealand, and am of opinion that our Australian colonies would have benefited far more if we had suffered any other nation than our own to colonize it. Some dread that it might have nursed a naval power that would one day compete with our own, and interfere with British commerce in the Pacific. It is true that our formally taking possession will keep others from it, but it will prove rather an expensive act of diplomacy, or I am greatly mistaken.

CHAP. VII.

Bound on a wrecking Expedition, &c. — A Squall. — Howe's Island and Ball's Pyramid. — Norfolk Island. — Nepean Island. — Philip Island. — Sight the "Rapid" Reef, but a Gale coming on, stand for Rotumah. — Roadstead of Rotumah, the Island described. — A Crater converted into a Sepulchre. — The Cocoa-nut Tree. — Natives. — Their Government. — The Division of the Island. — The winning and the losing Side. — The Power of the Chiefs, and whence derived. — A singular Custom with their Virgins. — A Marriage Festival and attendant Ceremonies. — Punishment for Adultery, &c. — Attua Chiefs, and their Mode of proceeding to recover the Sick. — Interment of an Infant. — Painful Infliction on the bereaved Mother. — Women always the Sacrifice. — Kava, its Preparation. — Sensations of those about to drink, and its subsequent Effects. — Mode of propitiating an offended Chief. — Play Houses. — Burial Grounds. — Sports at Night. — Vanity piqued. — Disease of the Country. — A Method of taking Fish. — Islands of Rotumah.

"Though far away from sunny shores,
I toss where angry ocean roars."

June 17th, 1841. — LEFT Sydney Head on an intended speculative voyage to various islands in the Pacific, and to search for a shoal on which the brig Rapid was wrecked when on her route to China. The brig had been cast away upwards of six months, but it was asserted by the captain of her, that he had buried between four and five thousand dollars in the sands, which he firmly believed would remain there, even should the wreck be utterly washed away. Con-

vinced of his good faith, we purchased the wreck and all thereto appertaining. I received directions where to find the money, and the latitude given of the reef was $21^{\circ} 40' S.$; longitude, $174^{\circ} 28' E.$ The people made their escape in two small boats to the island of Rotumah; they did intend trying to effect a landing at some of the Teejee Islands, but the savages gave chase to them, which induced them to bear away for Rotumah. The captain carried with him his writing-desk and a considerable sum in gold ounces, which, owing to some jealousy excited between the chiefs, was subsequently taken from him; and he gave me a hint that if I arrived there before the American whalers put in for refreshments, I might recover a good deal of the money. As this jumped with my intention of bartering supplies for bone and oil I did not lose sight of it.

June 21st. — Encountered a very heavy squall from the south-east, attended with hail and lightning. The electric fluid, called St. Elmo's fire, ran along the yards, and encircled the mast-head with a halo of mystic light. The superstitious fears of the seamen were somewhat excited; and whilst I was admiring the phenomena an intensely vivid flash of lightning burst upon us, which was immediately followed with darkness so profound, that for a moment I thought I had been deprived of sight. The greenish white glare seemed to dissolve in smoke as it was swallowed in the inky atmosphere blacker than night; and the peal of thunder, which shortly succeeded, was louder than if a park of artillery had been discharged above our heads; the wind howled in concert,

the sea rose and dashed its foam over the deck like a snow-storm; and then the surcharged clouds again opened and treated us to such a pelting shower of hailstones, as compelled me to beat a retreat to my berth in double quick time.

June 24th—At dawn this morning sighted Howe's Island and Ball's Pyramid; the former when bearing E. N. E. of us distant eight leagues, loomed a huge rock, in shape like a saddle; and Ball's Pyramid, which is about seventeen miles to the south-east of Howe's Island, resembles the pointed spire of a church. Howe's Island has been tenanted for the last few years by three Englishmen and their wives (native women of New Zealand). They have cultivated some patches of land, and have amassed a considerable sum of money, so I hear, by supplying whalers when cruising on what is called the "middle ground," with pigs and potatoes. There is no anchorage off the island: the landing-place for boats is on the north-west side; but as it continued to blow hard from the south-east I did not venture to land. Had these voluntary exiles been sent to the isolated rocky islet by a mandate of their rulers, what interest and compassion the dreadful hardship of their case would have excited in many a sympathising bosom.

July 2nd.—Last night, shortly after the moon had risen, we observed land on our weather bow, which we knew to be Norfolk Island, an island rendered terrible to evil-doers from its being a penal settlement, escape from which is next to impossible. Many a hapless wretch, doomed as the penalty for his crimes to work the remainder of his days in irons,

cut off from the society of all save abandoned outcasts like himself, has doubtless felt in its full force, as he approaches this prison, the words of that terrific inscription, "He who enters here, leaves hope behind." And of a verity I never saw a spot better calculated to create such an impression. At dawn we made the northern phase of the island, and its whole extent, in length, lay stretched before us. It appeared as if it were a desolate mural rock, its summit crowned with miniature hills, partially covered with a low verdant scrub, a belt of rigid fir trees running along the topmost ridges. My knowledge of the purposes to which the place is turned may have influenced my feelings, but I thought, as I surveyed it from the deck, that no spot on the globe was better adapted for inspiring sensations of utter lonesomeness and desertion. About the centre of the island on the north side, a stream of water discharges itself over a ledge of rock, which is called the "cascade;" near to this is a landing-place for boats, but by no means a pleasant one. Wishing to see the interior, and if possible to obtain a supply of vegetables, I had a boat lowered, and pulled to the rocks. A sentinel waved for me to keep at a distance, but on mentioning my desire I was allowed to land, and the boat was ordered off till my return. The settlement is on the south side of the island, and in walking across to it I was undeceived as to its being a mere barren rock. It is about twenty miles in length, varying in breadth from three to six miles; the soil is exceedingly rich and fertile, capable of producing nearly all the tropical fruits and vegetables. There is but little level

land, the face of the country resembling a cluster of gigantic mole hills, the roads formed by government winding through the narrow vales at their base: the ground is covered with a verdant carpet, and every "woody hollow" is filled with fruit trees of various descriptions.

On waiting upon the commandant, he received me with evident alarm; and so far from gratifying me with any vegetables, he told me they were short themselves of every thing, and begged me to leave the island, as he should not feel happy until he heard that I was gone. The commandant, I was informed, had been attempting a legislation different from that practised by any of his predecessors. Many of the prisoners had been freed from their manacles, and greater liberty had been granted to them than they had ever before experienced under their penal circumstances. The return they made for this clemency was to treat with insolence those placed over them, and several attempted to effect their escape. One party, only a few days previous to my visit, seized a boat belonging to a brig that touched for refreshments, and got clear off with it; but as a heavy gale sprang up that same night, it is supposed they must have perished: and before this event, another party who had been engaged building a boat for the authorities, so soon as it was completed, succeeded in launching it and in getting away. Some time after, the master of a whaler out of Sydney landed at a barren island in a north-westerly direction, and picked up seven human skulls; and as they tallied with the number of those who made their

escape, it is not improbable that they reached this spot to die a miserable death from hunger and exhaustion.

The commandant admitted that the island was in a very disorganized state, which will account for his anxiety to cut our acquaintance short. The island was formerly a place of banishment for double convicted felons only, desperadoes of the blackest dye, on whom ordinary punishments had no effect. But since transportation to New South Wales has been done away with, several shipments of prisoners from England have been consigned to Norfolk Island direct; and this may have had some effect in causing the commandant to ameliorate the condition of the prisoners generally: but the common opinion seemed to be that they were allowed by far too free scope, and from what I observed I should think so too. Many appeared to be seeking their own pleasure, some were lolling about in apathetic idleness, and others were strolling apparently unrestrained; and long before the sun had made his *congé*, we could distinguish parties of eight and ten assembled on the rocks fishing with rod and line. Now, as there are 1800 prisoners on the island, and only 160 soldiers, including officers, I should be inclined to doubt the policy of allowing them such liberty.

With the exception of the wives of the officers, and those of a few of the soldiers, there are no women on the island, which tends to brutalize the prisoners to a frightful extent, and they are guilty of more *monstrosities* than probably they ever contemplated in the land they have been expelled from *to correct*

them of their crimes. The accounts furnished me by an overseer in tones of cool indifference were so revolting that my blood ran chill with horror; and I should be very sorry, under the existing state of affairs, to have any female in whom I felt an interest exposed even for a short time to the *chance of hearing the awful details.*

The south side of the island does not present so sterile an appearance as the north. You catch an occasional glimpse of its glens and glades, and the settlement occupying a considerable level space running down to the water's edge is sprinkled with buildings which make an imposing show. The landing-place here is dangerous, as occasionally a heavy surf rolls into the narrow passage. Many boats have been capsized, and some lives have been lost in attempting to go out in rough weather; that near the cascade forms the only other landing-place on the island. Maize or Indian corn is cultivated to some extent, and I saw some siloes or dry cells sunk deep under the earth well stored with grain; and I was told that garnered in this way, it would keep for years free from must or weevil.

About three miles to the southward of the settlement, there is a small grey sandy island called Nepean's Island, with no sign of vegetation on it save two or three stunted rugged trees, and four miles still further south an almost inaccessible islet about six miles in circumference rears its craggy head; it rejoices in the Christian name of "Philip," and we were informed that it abounded with wild rabbits. The weather having moderated, we lowered a boat, and

after one or two attempts effected a landing ; but this we should not have been able to have done, had the weather been at all rough. With some difficulty we ascended the cliffs, and after scrambling in various directions till we were quite knocked up, we returned to the vessel with one rabbit, the solitary reward of our exertions ; for though we saw several, they were so shy that we could not approach within gun range of them, and the underwood was so impervious it was idle to attempt following the cock-tails to their retreats. Disappointed on all sides in the hope of getting fresh provisions, we loosened our courses again, and bore away on our voyage.

July 16th. — It was nearly midnight when we supposed we sighted the north-west end of the “rapid reef.” We fancied we could discern the cauliflower crests of the roaring breakers, but it was blowing too hard, and was too dark for more accurate observation. Tacked and stood to the southward till daylight.

July 17th. — Blowing a gale and the sea in “one wild uproar :” no boat could live in it. Have come to the resolution of standing on for Rotumah in preference to beating about the reef in such impracticable weather exposed to unknown dangers. These seas have been very inaccurately surveyed, and we deem it advisable to get more hands, so that on our return to the reef we may have strength to work the vessel, and two boats’ crews to work at the wreck.

July 21st. — Came to an anchor on the north-west side of the island of Rotumah, a small roadstead ; and by a series of observations we ascertained the site of our anchorage to be in latitude $12^{\circ} 28' S.$, and

longitude 177° 10' E. The island is encircled by reefs, which run a considerable way out, with here and there boat passages through them. Inside the reef opposite to where we lay, the water alongside the beach deepens to seven fathoms, and if the place was of any importance my belief is that a passage might be easily widened through the yielding coral, to admit the ingress of vessels of burden. Many whalers call here for refreshments, and at present if it comes on to blow hard from the north-west you must slip and away, as there is no anchorage on the opposite side of the island. The south-east *trade*, as the wind prevailing from this quarter is called, is pretty constant from the month of April to December; but from December to April it is liable to interruptions, when it occasionally blows hard from the north-west: during the season of the south-east *trade* little chance exists of the wind suddenly shifting.

The island is about fifteen miles long, and from two to seven broad, except at a place called the "neck," where it is only a stone's throw across. Tradition says the island was formerly in two parts, which by accumulations of sand and vegetable matter have been joined into one; it is of volcanic formation, and is entirely covered with scoria and ashes. The natives, in clearing their plantations, use the conglomerated masses for fences, &c. There are several exhausted craters on the island, but no records exist of any eruption having taken place. At the mouth of the largest crater trees are growing, which seem to have been rooted there for ages. We endeavoured to form some idea of its depth by hurling down stones

and fragments of rocks, but it was like throwing into empty space, for no echoing sound came from the gloomy vacuum. Some few years ago, a party of New Zealanders landed upon the island, and one of their number dying recently, his comrades carried his corpse to the mouth of this crater, and after singing his requiem and firing a volley over the body, launched it into the immeasurable depth, fancying, I suppose, that they thus afforded him speedier means of mingling with the shades of his ancestors. The soil does not seem deep, though it teems luxuriantly, and produces a variety of tropical fruits and vegetables. Magnificent groves of cocoa-nut trees fringe the glowing white beach, and they appear to be the most valuable production on the island—they answer almost every purpose of life; the nut serves for food and drink, the husks of the fruit for clothing, cordage, &c., the wood for building and other purposes, and the leaves for thatch for their houses, brooms, &c.

It possesses about two or three thousand inhabitants, and their appearance strongly reminds me of the description I have read of North American Indians; they are copper-coloured, have long black hair reaching down to their waists, and go naked, with the exception of a piece of cloth girded round their loins. Male and female are clad alike; they have, according to our ideas, a very disagreeable fashion of lubricating their bodies with a yellow powder made from the root of the turmeric, mixed with oil, so that if you enter their houses, or come in contact with their persons, you quickly contract a similar dye, and it requires many ablutions before you can get rid of it;

they say they use it as an antidote to the stings of mosquitoes and other insects. They are a tall race, many of the males beautifully formed, and are seemingly very mild and inoffensive; they lack the energy and vigour possessed by the New Zealanders.

The island is under the sway of a chief named Riam Kao, called *par excellence* the Emperor; subordinate to Riam Kao, kings are annually elected, apparently for the sole purpose of eating, drinking, and sleeping. The emperor influences the election, and the reign is but a scene of inactive feasting; the people are bound to supply the king with provisions, and he deferentially submits the daily offerings to the emperor, who first supplies his own wants. The emperor neither in dress nor person differs from his subjects in appearance, except that he is more ordinary looking than usual: he is not of high descent, and it is only by dint of bravery and intrigue that he has become the head of the country. Formerly it was under the dominion of two chiefs, who divided the island, but hostilities ensuing, the defeated or losing party were made to dwell in the centre of the island, whilst the conquering or winning side occupy the two extremities. The losing side therefore cultivate the most fertile portions of the island, but then they are absolutely at the disposal of the victors; and the chiefs when they are in need of pigs, yams, &c. &c., send without ceremony to the vanquished party, who dare not withhold the involuntary tribute. The chiefs possess power in proportion to the number of people who reside upon the land claimed by them: they have the absolute disposal of

the young women born upon their estate, and their sanction is necessary before they can be given in marriage. A very singular custom prevails amongst them: all virgins arrived at the age of puberty wear their hair cropped close, and plastered with a cement made of burnt coral and the juice of a tree which turns it completely red, or of a dull foxy colour; a stiff white ridge bristles along the forehead. The name for virgin in the Rotumah dialect is Waitage, and English visitors, with their usual success and good taste, have converted it into "white head," which is certainly consonant with the appearance the plaster gives the head. They are not suffered to brush this cement out of their hair until they are married, nor are they allowed to wear it after the nuptial ceremony has taken place.

I was present at one of their marriages. The bridegroom makes a present to the chief who introduces the bride; the friends of the bridegroom lay offerings of mats, &c. at the feet of the bride, and her relatives make similar presents to the bridegroom: the happy couple are seated side by side, and their foreheads and bodies are profusely daubed with the turmeric powder and oil; pigs and fowls are killed and roasted, and abundance of vegetables cooked; bowls of kava, a species of narcotic drink, are prepared, and the friends of either party are invited to the festival. If the bridegroom is a man of any consideration, certain of his friends spring up and beat their heads with clubs and tomahawks, inflicting at times such serious wounds as to lay them up for months; and some continue to beat their heads till the old women of the party interfere,

and take their clubs from them. The newly-married man makes presents to those who wound themselves, and if they continue indisposed for any length of time, he is bound to supply them with food until they are convalescent. When the feasting terminates, the nuptial tie is complete. After they have lived together for a few days, the wife will sometimes beg the husband to leave her, and he will absent himself for three or four months, when he will then again sojourn with her for a few days, and so keep on until she is reconciled to live with him altogether: but it sometimes happens that the wife refuses to quit her relations, and the husband being equally unwilling to abandon his, they separate by mutual consent, and are at liberty to enter into a fresh contract. The girls of these dissolved matches are now free, and may act as libertinely as they please without their character being affected; but adultery in the marriage state is punished with death, so also is the forfeit of virginity before marriage. They have Atua or spirit chiefs the same as in New Zealand, and in times of sickness these chiefs pretend to address the Evil Spirit, and exhort him to cease troubling the persons of the indisposed. Sometimes they will endeavour to propitiate the demon of evil by hanging up green boughs in the house where the sick may be lying, and by assembling all the friends of the afflicted party to a solemn feast when, much hog's flesh and kava is consumed; at other times, when the complaint is obstinate or of long continuance, they will use the most angry threats to scare the evil demon away.

I was on one occasion sleeping at an inland village,

and throughout the night was kept awake by the most vehement denunciations. The cause of them proved to be a sick infant; and the chief was now entreating and now defying the evil spirit; he commanded it to quit the body of the babe: "If you don't go," was one of his expressions, "I will level the mountain above me, till it is as flat as the spot where my house stands." In spite of his threats the child died; and happening to return to the village at the time of its death, I staid to witness the ceremony of interment. I was invited to enter the house of mourning, and behold, it was a scene of lamentation: an old woman held the corpse in her arms, which was besmeared with red paint; the mother and three female relatives surrounded the body, and gave vent to the most piercing yells, which absolutely seemed to vibrate with agony; they beat their eyes with the flats of their hands till they were so swollen that they could scarcely see out of them; and at the intervals between the bursts of anguish they renewed pathetic supplications for the child to return. The scene forcibly reminded me of an "Irish Wake." The grave being ready, the father came into the house, and bending himself over the body of his child, he pummelled his face with his knuckles till he rubbed the skin off his cheek bones. The child was then carried out, and the very instant it had passed the threshold, the mother ceased her lamentations and suppressed all outward emotion, although just previously she had been shaking as if going into convulsions. I followed the party to the place of sepulture; the corpse was enveloped in four or five

fine mats, and deposited in a small excavation lined with stone, a funeral dirge was sung, muskets were fired off, sand was then heaped over the grave, and the party retired. On returning to the house of mourning, I was surprised to see preparations for a feast progressing, and from courtesy remained a spectator of the banquet.

Every occasion, whether of mirth or sorrow, is seized as an opportunity for feasting; and strange as the observance of this custom appeared to me, upon reflection, we shall see that we ourselves are guilty of many greater anomalies. Do we not feast the followers of our dead, and entertain those who assemble to witness our marriages? and if we bestow charity, do we not do so in the shape of a dinner, a ball, or a fancy fair? How much do we sacrifice to our own appetites and vanities, which charitable feelings alone could never extort from us? Many a man would give two guineas for a ticket to a "charity dinner" or "ball," that would not bestow a sixpence from pure benevolence: such is human nature. But to return from this digression. The father has expressed his grief for the loss of his child by rubbing the skin from his face; but the mother is called upon to undergo a much more painful mark of her regret; her beautiful long hair is cut off close to the scalp; and her body and arms are burnt all over from the waist to the neck, and from the wrists to the shoulders. Another female takes a lighted piece of stick, which burns like a flambeau, and applying it to the body of the bereaved sufferer, scorches regular rows of spots, of the bigness of a shilling. I was told by one of the sufferers that the

operation is peculiarly painful, and they are unable to lie down for many days after it, but are compelled to sleep in a sitting posture, supported by soft mats. I did all I could to convince them of the absurdity and inutility of such a practice, and they confessed that they were fools; "but," said they, "it is the custom of the country, and if we did not comply with it, we should be scorned and derided." They know no such thing as "silent grief:" the more they injure themselves, and the louder the lamentations, the greater is the affection they display, they fancy, towards the dead. I noticed several women who had lost the first joint of one or both of their little fingers; and ascertained that they had been amputated to propitiate the anger of the incensed spirit, and induce him to remove the sickness with which he was visiting their friends. The women appear to be the sacrifices on all occasions. Another curious manifestation of the power which the fear of ridicule has over them, exists in their custom of drinking kava. It is a nauseous beverage prepared from the root of a shrub in a very filthy manner: the root is brought into the house, scraped and wiped clean; it is then divided, and young men and women with good teeth chew it till it is reduced to a pulp; when a sufficient quantity is chewed, it is put into large wooden bowls, water is poured over it, and it is worked about with the hand, till all its strength and virtue is expressed. The pulp is next carefully collected, and using it like a sponge, with it they squeeze cups full of the precious nectar, to be handed to the assembled guests. The kava cups are generally made of the

polished shell of the cocoa-nut, and hold about half a pint. It is a most ludicrous scene to watch the parties drinking it: some toss it off with an air of heroic determination; some swallow it as if their lives depended upon the haste with which they could get it down; and others involuntarily shudder as they take the cup; and the stomachs of some have been known to reject it three times before they have succeeded in keeping it down, and all this because it is supposed to be a feat of manhood, and they would be laughed at if they declined drinking. I chewed a small portion of the root by way of experiment; but its pungent, disagreeable flavour speedily caused me to reject it. Every great chief has his orator or speaker, who presides over the preparation of the kava; and he selects for chewers only those who possess clean, wholesome-looking mouths. I never saw but one person drink it with an unmoved countenance, and that was an Englishman: the old women, when invited to partake of the dreaded draught, make the wryest faces imaginable; and all spit and sputter after it as if they had swallowed poison. When drunk to excess, it stupifies the senses, and renders the body powerless. It operates something like opium, those labouring under its effects, though incapable of moving a limb, imagining themselves monarchs, warriors, orators, &c., and they enjoy or suffer the most extravagant fancies and delusions; when the delirium passes away, it leaves them with a severe head-ache. *LSD!*

If one of a tribe offends his chief, it is imagined that he is endowed with the power to afflict the

offender's family with sickness, unless he makes immediate atonement, and humiliates himself to appease the chief's ire ; and the way they deprecate his vengeance is by prostrating themselves before him with a green bough suspended round their necks, when they express their contrition and sue for pardon. The chief rarely withholds the olive branch, and the pardoned offender presents him with pigs, yams, &c., in proportion to the nature or magnitude of the offence ; and a general feasting bout ratifies the peace.

Every village possesses a play-house and its own peculiar burial-ground ; the latter is constructed at the foot of a hill, by building a stone wall, four or five feet high, and filling in the back of it with sand, till a level is formed against the rising ground beyond, so that its extent is more or less in proportion to the height of the wall and inclination of the land. The bodies are only deposited just beneath the sand ; and after they have lain there three, six, nine, or twelve months, a rough, unhewn stone is placed upon the top of them, the size of the stone being regulated by the importance of the party when living. The stone over some of the chiefs cannot weigh less than seven or eight tons, and the graveyards have the appearance of Druidical remains. The placing of these covering stones is the signal for a feast provided by the friends and relations of the deceased ; the more massive the block, the greater is the number of hands required to raise it. Thus do they furnish lasting memorials of the rank and wealth once held by those who repose beneath them.

Owing to severe gales that visit the island during the prevalence of north-west winds, the houses are built at an extended angle, meeting a perpendicular of only sufficient height to admit of a person's entering upon hands and knees. They pay much more attention to the comfort of the interior of their dwellings, than do the New Zealanders, the floor of the very meanest being covered with mats. They have mats of a softer kind for sleeping on, and mats of a still superior quality for festivals and high occasions. Some of them, when they are about to build, enclose a space with low stone walls, two or three feet high: the enclosure is filled with earth and stone, and levelled off with fine dry sand; upon this made ground or terrace they erect their tenements, so that in the rainy season they are always provided with a comfortable dry floor. I have said that every village possesses its play-house: formerly the natives used to assemble in moonlight nights on the sands beneath their splendid palmina groves, and practise singing, dancing, and other athletic sports till the rising of the sun; but now they scarcely suffer a night to pass without meeting in the play-house to sing and dance. They have no musical instruments, and their songs are composed of sentences, repeated over and over again to a monotonous but not unmelodious chaunt, accompanied with peculiar movements of the body; they are admirable time keepers, but I cannot conceive that they have much ear for music, for on my favouring them with one of our bounding English lyrics, the rascals said my singing put them in mind of crying. Now if I had a "beau-

tiful nasal twist," like some snuffling psalm-singers that I have heard, my astonishment would not have been excited at the remark, but having a clear, full voice, my national vanity was piqued.

Except on feasting occasions, very little animal food is eaten by them; their diet consists principally of vegetables, and their heartiest meal is made in the middle of the night. The climate is excessively hot, and I imagine that the sensation of cold is scarcely known amongst them. They are subject to huge swellings of the members, called by us *elephantiasis*, but by them *fê-fê*; to scorbutic eruptions, and to the breaking out of virulent tumours, which eat into and decay the bone. I beheld some shocking spectacles. There is also a blight, which at seasons affects the atmosphere, and many are apt to lose the sight of one or both of their eyes. To the intemperate drinking of kava they attribute most of their complaints; but such is the anomalous perversity of our natures, that like our dram-drinkers, although conscious of the evil that is destroying them, they will not refrain from it. Inveterate drinkers of kava become utterly imbecile, and their skin assumes a rough and scaly appearance, like that of a fish. Talking of fish, I must not omit to notice a peculiar way they have of catching them. At ebb-tide they erect mounds of loose stones on the coral flats, which at high tide are covered: fish seek the shelter of the crevices in the mounds, and a large body of natives provided with seines will go out, and form a circle on the reef from half a mile to a mile in circumference; certain parties keep the nets in proper positions,

whilst others shout, and beat the water with sticks, gradually closing and contracting the circle; the frightened fish fly from one place of refuge to another, but the noise and turbulence still following and increasing, they dash at the nets, which, from their less turbid appearance, afford the most fallacious hopes of escape, and are taken in great numbers.

There are three or four small islands off Rotumah, one of which deserves particular notice. From its singular formation it has been called Split Island; it is as if a violent convulsion had rent the island in two, and it looks as clearly divided as if it had been separated by a knife; only, when the island yawned, its rocky summit must have toppled into the chasm, preventing the closure of the mighty fissure; and there it remains midway, wedged firmer than any arch ever spanned by man. The weather would not admit of my visiting it; but I am told that a boat may be taken through the passage by employing paddles instead of oars.

CHAP. VIII.

Sail for the Reef.—Difficulty in finding it.—The wrecked Hull heaves in sight.—The Reef.—Land in a Boat, and whilst over-hauling one Wreck, see our own Vessel fast.—Sleep on the Sandspit.—Apprehensions, and a narrow Escape.—Load three Boats, and pass another Night on the Spit.—Load two Boats, and go on Board for a spell.—The Dollars discovered.—Return to Rotumah.—The Tamaun Tree.—Native Canoes.—Process of Tattooing.—Circumcision.—Traditionary Origin of Rotumah.—Superstitious Observances on the Culture and Manufacture of the Turmeric Root.—An unprecedented Privilege.—Bearings of the Island off Rotumah from the Anchorage.—Particular Description of Auth Luna or Split Island.—Its difficult Landing.—A perilous Pass.—Bold Action of a Native.—Wea Islanders, excellent Cragmen.—A novel Egg Basket.—Bird Catching.—Kindness of the Wea Islanders.—Landing of the Party from Rotumah.—A natural Cave.—A Native Banquet.—Departure from Auth Luna.—Attan Islet.—Regain the Schooner.—Their Navigator deserts them.—A Row.—Departure from Rotumah.

“A death in every billow raves;
 I feel the soul within me shiver
 To gaze upon the gloomy waves.
 A rocking boat mine eyes discover:
 But woe is me, the pilot fails!
 In, boldly in! undaunted rover,
 And trust the life that swells the sails.”

July 31st.—HAVING made all necessary arrangements, taken in a good supply of wood and water, and added eight hands to the crew, this afternoon we again made sail for the “Rapid Reef.” We

noticed a strong westerly current, particularly when in sight of the western islands of the Feejee group, making allowance for this set. The next day we had still made more westing than we calculated on, and when we supposed we were in the position of the reef, there was no reef to be seen. We continued three days hunting for it, and I began to suspect that it might have disappeared by the same mysterious agency that had called it into existence:—that it had done its work of evil, and had withdrawn from the scene.

August 8th.—Towards evening the hull of a vessel was descried from the mast head, and we soon made her out to be the wreck we were in search of. The weather was very propitious, for though we had a commanding breeze there was scarcely a ripple on the waters. The hull looked like a child's toy. Both masts had been carried away six or seven feet from the deck, and she lay on her bilge apparently completely out of the water, and there was not the sign of a sheet of copper on her being strained. The sight of her helplessness created sensations of a melancholy nature. A range of breakers embraced a circuit of six or seven miles, but within them we could discern still water, which at this juncture glanced like a mirror; a glistening bank of white sand was in the centre of the still water, looking like the back of some monstrous Leviathan, who was being lulled to sleep in his clear calm berth by the music of the surrounding breakers. About a hundred paces to the eastward of the bank the poor "Rapid" was lying *faster* than she had ever "sailed." On the north-

west side of this dangerous reef the breakers form a concave crescent, and if any good could attend such a proceeding, a vessel with the regular trade wind might venture to anchor in the embayment. We sailed into it and saw bottom, rocky coral, bad ground for recovering anchors. Having circumnavigated the reef we found it utterly impossible to effect a passage through the surf on its lee side, as it was one roaring mass of tumbling foam. Our only chance was taking the breakers close to where the vessel went ashore, which was nearly as possible on the south-east side. She was going dead before the wind with royals and top-gallant stu'nsails set when she struck, and she must have gone on the top of the breakers and been carried by her impetus into the shallow basin where she was now lying nearly dry. We had a boat lowered and pulled to an opening where the breakers were not constant. Watching our opportunity we went over on the crest of one, and gained the sandspit in safety, when we found the water so shoal that in many places we had to jump out of the boat and track her along. The sandspit was littered with wearing apparel, plates, glasses, bottles, empty casks, and all the débris of a deserted encampment; old sails, canvas, books, and nautical instruments were strewed about, and a spar remained standing supported by a triangle of muskets; a bottle covered with net-work was suspended from the spar, and in it I discovered the written particulars of the wreck, with the account of the perilous voyage the unfortunatés were bound upon. At so many paces east from the spar the dollars were buried: we immediately commenced

digging according to directions, but not a ghost of a dollar did we find; we then tracked the boat to the vessel. She lay completely out of the influence of the breakers, and judging from appearances nothing could disturb her, not even the effects of a violent hurricane; her anchors were let go and her cables paid out in *four feet* water; spars, rigging, &c., commingled in inextricable confusion were lying beneath her; but the copper on the weather side was not wrinkled. At first I had hopes of being able to get her afloat again, but on closer examination we found her back was broken, the cargo scarcely appeared disturbed, but unfortunately it was not a very valuable one, consisting chiefly of Sydney beef, and bread, and bottled beer.

Whilst overhauling the wreck, signal guns withdrew our attention to our own vessel, and we had the satisfaction of seeing her hard and fast with her sails shivering. She had heeled on to a sunken patch in the offing. Fortunately there was no sea on, and by backing the yards she paid off again, but it gave us wreckers a tremendous fright. I sent the boat on board with a few odds and ends as it was getting late, and returned to the sandspit, determined to remain there all night, while the vessel stood off and on. My volunteers made a screen of the boat sail, and after we had got a jovial fire blazing, which served as a beacon for the vessel as well as a comfort to us, we renewed our search for the dollars, but without success, though we worked for an hour or two past midnight. I had a demijohn of spirits with me, and as the air from our exposed

position was keen and cutting, I served out an allowance to each man preparatory to lying down. But not content, some of them had been slyly helping themselves, and became drunk and unruly; quarrelling and fighting commenced, and I had much difficulty in preventing bloodshed. Scarcely relieved from this apprehension and about to close my eyes, all notions of slumber were quickly dispelled by fears of another nature. The tide was rising on us, and that with such rapidity, that I verily expected the bark would be submerged: the only two men that were sober were alive to the same suspicions, and I found them quietly watching the boat till turn of tide; the waters came high up, but left us plenty of sleeping room, if my drunken fellows would have suffered us to enjoy it. On refusing to allow one of them to take more spirits, he went away muttering, and moped at a distance by himself, and just as we had all sunk into deep sleep, the blackguard took a keg of damaged ball cartridges and clapped it on the fire close to our feet. The explosion, flying embers, and lurid glare which lasted half a minute, were awfully startling, as we could not conceive what had happened; one or two of the party went rolling down the bank heels over head in their hurry to escape from the unknown danger. I was very wroth, but could scarcely repress my laughter, when the great stupified bullock of a fellow pleaded in excuse "that he couldn't sleep, and as I wouldn't give him any more grog, and there was no one to keep him company, he thought he'd just have a *little quiet fiz to himself*." I don't know how we escaped, but fortunately there

was no one hurt, not even the ignorant originator of the alarm.

August 9th.—The first thing after day-light, we commenced at the wreck, and when the schooner hove in sight we had plenty in readiness, and succeeded in sending on board three boats deeply laden. One of the ship's compasses that I sent for was brought me. Took a more accurate survey, and tried again for the dollars without success; slept again on the spit, and having written for the drunken fellows to be detained on board, the night passed without disturbance.

August 10th.—Loaded two boats from the wreck and went aboard; re-perused the instructions about the dollars, and requested the master to try his chance for them whilst I took a spell, being much fatigued, and I advised him to work in the direction opposite to that given by the instructions. I had not been asleep an hour before I was roused up; it had come on to blow fresh, and I was obliged to stand off the reef for a day or two. The breeze still freshening, I was not sorry to see the boat returning with all hands in her, and my gratification was increased when she came alongside to find that she had brought the dollars. Instead of their being buried east from the spar, the spar was east from them, and by following my directions the first shovel struck in the ground disturbed the dollars. I never for a moment doubted their being on the reef, but instead of between four or five thousand we only found 2918. The breeze still increasing and blowing directly upon the reef, we came to the resolution of standing back

again to Rotumah, to land the cargo and take in a fresh supply of water, for, owing to our stock, and the increase of our crew, it was nearly expended.

August 17th. — This morning we again dropped anchor at Rotumah, not exactly at our old station, being somewhat closer in with the reef. We observed, as we came to our anchorage, that a large vessel was riding heavily off the eastern extremity of the Island; our position was much more sheltered and greatly to be preferred. As soon as we had got all snug, I pulled on board the stranger, to see if he needed supplies. She proved an American right whaler out twenty-two months, with 2300 barrels of oil in her. We did a little business, but water was what he principally stood in need of, and he was bound to the Curtis to try and fill up with sperm oil. It was dark as pitch when we again started for our own vessel, and blowing so fresh that on attempting to hoist sail we narrowly escaped capsizing, when nothing could have saved us. Taught caution we peaked our oars and flew merrily before the gale, till we were nearly alongside, having been propelled by our wooden sails nearly seven miles.

As my time was pretty much at my own command, I employed it in making observations about the Island. In my walks I was delighted with the great variety of trees, shrubs, and beautiful flowers. At every step some new floral beauty would burst upon me, glowing with the most brilliant colours; and unlike the flowers and shrubs of New South Wales, most of them possess a grateful perfume. Fruit, too, and vegetables grow in great abundance, and there are

several descriptions of both, which I never saw or heard of before. The Timanu is a tree deserving particular notice; it is a wide-spreading umbrageous tree, with a deep green foliage, its shade furnishing a cool retreat from the noontide sun. There is a fine grove of them on the beach opposite the anchorage, which the natives are very proud of. Like all the plants and shrubs on the Island, it is an evergreen, and at certain seasons it throws out bunches of white blossoms delightfully fragrant. The natives are passionately fond of it, and with it they impregnate the oil with which they anoint themselves. The wood is hard, of a deep mahogany hue, with a beautiful curling and waving grain: it takes a high polish, and looks extremely handsome when worked into furniture. The native canoes are of peculiar construction. They have no trees high enough of the proper wood to form the main body of the canoe, like the New Zealanders; they are therefore built out of several pieces, which are sewed together with a sort of twine, of their own manufacture, made from the husks of the cocoa-nut. They are deep and narrow, somewhat angularly formed; the thwarts for the pullers to sit upon are made fast to the gunwales, and, to prevent the canoe from capsizing, they have an outrigger attached. They are unsightly-looking things, wanting altogether the lightness and grace of a New Zealand canoe; their paddles, too, are clumsy and heavy, and lack the symmetry and grace of the New Zealanders. There are several large double canoes on the Island, connected together by a strong platform; and in former times, when the population

of the country exceeded the means of support, or it was feared that it would do so, oracles were consulted, and at their instigation a party would start off in one of these canoes in search of fresh land: sometimes failing in their object, they would find their way back again in a most miserable plight; but the result of the generality of such expeditions was never known. Of late years, there have been no adventures of the kind, and these ship-canoes from their long disuse are fast falling to decay; there are seventeen or eighteen of them upon the Island, carefully built over to protect them from the weather. These ship-canoes are no two of the same length; the longer one will be from eighty to ninety feet, while the smaller, answering the purpose of an outrigger, would not exceed fifty or sixty feet: each canoe has from four to five feet beam, but they have no floor; and, looked at separately, without their stem and stern pieces, they would be taken for troughs. They are kept about six feet asunder by cross beams lashed and otherwise made fast to the gunwales of both canoes; the beams are planked over, which furnishes a deck of from fourteen to sixteen feet in breadth. Both canoes are entirely covered in, and there are small hatchways with sliding covers. When a party has determined upon an exploring expedition, they build a house upon the main deck and stow their provisions, &c. in the holds of the canoes. Their sails are made of a species of rush marled together: in form they resemble the New Zealanders, being when set like an inverted triangle.

The natives of Rotumah do not tattoo their faces,

but their bodies, particularly from the waist to the knees, are ornamented with various designs, some of them very elegant ; and when I first saw them at a distance, I thought they had got on close-fitting blue drawers. Their arms are covered with fantastic devices, and being desirous of witnessing the operation I induced a native to tattoo a small figure on one of mine. Very few are skilled in the art of tattooing, and I was surprised at the number of the instruments used by the operator : they are made of small pieces of tortoise-shell of different widths neatly secured to handles, and resemble miniature garden hoes, with fine serrated teeth cut in the edges of the blades, sharp as needles. Having rubbed down the nut of a peculiar tree that had been burnt to charcoal, the operator mixed with it the juice of a herb, and water to render it sufficiently fluid. Without first tracing the design, he dipped the teeth of the instrument into the mixture, and placing it on my arm tapped it gently with a light piece of wood so as just to draw the blood, and he kept changing the instrument from very broad to very narrow, as the nature of the figure he intended to produce, required. The operation is painful, at least I found it so, and I should think it must be very severe to those who submit their whole bodies to the puncturing process ; but it is the "fashion of Rotumah," and the fear of being ridiculed by their companions overcomes every other dread.

Circumcision is practised among them, and the performance of the ceremony is looked upon as an eventful period in their lives : great feasting is always made upon the occasion, provided by the father of the

child. They do not know from what the custom has originated; in fact they seem to possess very little traditional lore, and what they have amongst them is generally of the most absurd description, that respecting the origin of Rotumah not the least so. They say that many ages ago it was only a rock, but that a man and woman swam across the sea with baskets of earth upon their shoulders and there deposited it. It grew, and from it sprang the fertility with which the island is now clothed, and this couple were the ancestral Adam and Eve of the Rotumah population. They seem to have various superstitious notions, but no religious faith, fully believing in the agency of evil spirits, but do not appear to have the least notion of the good offices of a benevolent one. They have no forms of worship amongst them. The friends of a sick party will sometimes indulge in abusive and fiery language to the evil spirit, to see if they can scare him from those afflicted; but finding he is not to be forced away by bullying, the females, who in all climes and countries are ever ready to devote themselves to soothe the couch of sickness, try their powers of propitiation by sacrificing to the demon first one joint of their fingers and then another.

I observed in my memoranda the last time I visited here, that the natives had a nasty practice of smearing their bodies with oil and powder made from the turmeric root. I had opportunity this time for noting further particulars: those who are engaged in planting the root are forbidden all intercourse with women, or even with their own families, and until the ground is prepared, and the business of planting is finished,

they abstain as much as possible from contact with any one; their food is prepared and carried to a certain distance from them, and they sleep in a house distant from the settlement, religiously convinced that if they fail in these observances the crops would not prosper. The same observances are maintained, and if possible with greater strictness when the root is being dug up, and during the time of its manufacturing process into powder. The root, after being carefully washed, is scraped and put into a covered trough, left open at one end to admit the arm of the manufacturer, who pours in water, and works the scrapings about with a round stick till its virtues are expressed; it is then allowed to stand awhile, when the refuse is carefully separated: after it has had time again to settle, the water is poured off, when a bright red sediment is found; this is made into conical cakes, rather larger than an ordinary wine-glass, and dried in the sun. If the manufacturer neglects or breaks any of the regulations imposed upon him, they assert that all his efforts will prove utterly unavailing. I laughed heartily at this intimation, and they told me I might laugh, but they had tested the truth of it by repeated experiments; hereupon I was rude enough to indulge in louder cachinnation, but it only had the effect of making them compassionate me as a fool.

A London missionary vessel, in visiting the island a short time since, had left behind, with the sanction of the chiefs, some of the Friendly Island natives who had been converted to Christianity, for the purpose of using their exertions in the same cause with the Rotumah people. At present they possess no in-

fluence whatever, for though the Friendly Island natives are enabled to read the scriptures which have been rendered into their own tongue by the labours of the English church-missionaries, the Rotumah dialect differs so much from theirs, that I did not hear of a single neophyte. The chiefs derided the idea of becoming missionaries, admitting, at the same time, that the Varao natives were quite harmless people, who neither "makee steal nor makee fight."

The following are the bearings and distances of the three islands noticed from our anchorage. Wēa Island, or Emery's Island, the latter name derived from a white man named Emery who resided there for several years, bore south-west, distant about four miles. It is high and conically shaped, and may be seen at a considerable distance. Attan, S. S. W., distant about seven miles, a small islet gently rising from a sandy beach, entirely surrounded by a reef; very difficult of access, landing being impracticable except in the finest weather. Split Island, or, as the natives call it, Auth Luna (the hollow stone), bore south by west, distant about ten miles. I entered a passing remark on Split Island when I was last here, and now, having the leisure, resolved to indulge my curiosity. Stepping into a canoe, with Emery as chaperone, and three natives as assistants, we took advantage of a fine clear day, and sailed for a nearer inspection of this wonder of nature. When we accomplished about half the distance, we observed two other canoes put out from Wēa Island, and make for the same destination. We steered for the south side of the island, that we might paddle through the

“split.” As we neared, the weather was so calm, that though no soundings could be obtained close to the island, and the side we were rounding rose perpendicularly from the water, the long glassy undulations of the ocean laved the rocky base without creating a ripple. We approached within an oar’s length of this immense rock: its grandeur imposed feelings of awe, and I could scarcely reconcile to my mind that we were in a safe position; however, I left it to Emery, who was an experienced hand. On gaining the passage, I felt still less at my ease; it is only of sufficient width to admit of a canoe being paddled through, and is about 200 feet in length. The two sides of the cleft correspond exactly, and at about one third from the summit of the opening a massive block is firmly wedged; and, from its appearance, I am confirmed in the opinion, that in the convulsion that caused this singular phenomenon, as the fearful chasm was about to close, the upper part of the island tottered from its centre and tumbled into the yawning gulf, where it got immovably jammed, and prevented closer union, leaving this passage a memorial of the terrific convulsions that must have troubled these seas, and reminding man of the insignificance of all his works when compared with the grand and mighty operations of nature. The water in the passage appeared of immeasurable depth, and the long smooth rolling swell that swept through it seemed like the convolutions of some monster of the deep. We had only one native with us who had been to the island before, and he desired us to turn face about, that we might work the canoe through stern first, as the

landing-place was on our larboard hand, and the outrigger being on the larboard side of the canoe we should get dashed to pieces unless we shifted. I was somewhat startled, and, being no swimmer, did not altogether relish the intelligence; but the imperturbable coolness with which old Emery set to work caused me to suppress any observation I felt tempted to make. On clearing the passage, prepared as I was for an awkward landing-place, I was not quite prepared for what I saw: the island is a wall of rock shooting upwards from 400 to 600 feet high, and curving like a horse-shoe, the south-eastern termination of the curve being split and riven into a thousand pinnacles and rocky needles. The passage we came through is exactly in the centre of the crescent; but instead of finding the sea placid in the "Hollow," as it was outside, it was tumbling about, foaming and seething like a boiling cauldron, roaring and dashing up the rocks as if trying to overleap the opposing barrier; and in its retreat forming such eddies, that I momentarily expected to be shivered like the rocks around us. The whole swell of the ocean sets into this "hollow," and even if there is no breeze, the contracting points of the curve confine the rolling billows, which, in their recoil, create this dancing turmoil.

Well was it for us that the natives from Wēa had paddled into the hollow before us, as they were accustomed to the island, and to land on its steep and slippery sides. The way they managed was admirable. They balanced their canoes so close to the precipitous rock, that the lashing surge broke just under

their bows and went roaring a hundred feet above them. Wondering what they were going to do, we noticed two of them plunge into the crest of a gigantic roller, and when it had spent itself and I expected to see their mangled remains swept back in its rushing retreat, the men were standing on the rocks high over head, smiling and nodding to us. One of them had a long rope coiled round his waist, and he threw the end of it down to us: Emery gave it to me, and told me when the next swell hove us nearly on a level with the men, to leap with all my might towards them. My amazement at this cool request was too great for utterance, but somehow I did as I was desired. Watching the favourable moment I gave a spring, and the natives who held the rope seconding the impetus, jerked me alongside them like a fish out of water; Emery followed immediately after, aided in the same way. The man with us who had already visited the island threw himself overboard, and in a few minutes he also had secured a footing, dripping like a water sprite. The two left in the canoe lost their presence of mind, and would infallibly have been lost, had not the natives from Wēa reassured them and directed them how to act. Extricated from their difficulty, they backed through the passage to wait outside till I was ready to return to Rotumah. My anxiety to witness how the Wēa people would dispose of their canoes, kept me standing on the spot where I landed: it had been their intention to have brought them up the shelving ascent after us, but the sea increasing in violence put it out of their power. The tide was about half ebb, and immediately

opposite to us, on the south side of the "split," a small sandy spot became visible at times through the spreading foam left by the heavy breakers that exhausted their fury on a shoal or reef that extended a short distance from it. Above the sandspit the rocks assumed all the ruggedness and variety of form that they would if a mine of gunpowder had been recently sprung beneath them; and this was the uninviting-looking shelter the Wā islanders now sought for their canoes. For nearly a quarter of an hour they remained balancing them with their paddles before venturing into the surf: at last they gave way, and I fancied they had mistaken the moment, for a roller heavier than any that had preceded it came sweeping after them, sending the canoe broadside on. Now was the time to admire their dexterity; every man leapt out and kept his back to the lee side of the canoe; except one, who seized the stern with one hand whilst he appeared to strike out with the other. They were overwhelmed in the foam, but when the strength of the wave had passed they had got the canoe hauled up and secured in a crevice, to which, under any circumstances, I should have had difficulty in clambering.

There is a little soil on the summit or wall-like ridge of the island yielding a growth of coarse grass, and a peculiar variety of scrub. The natives have likewise succeeded in rearing a few cocoa-nut trees. The ascent to a novice is rather perilous, and made me wink; you have to wind your way up laterally, and at one point you have to pass round the salient projection of a bald rock where the footing is shelving and not fourteen inches broad, the rock overhead

bulging forward, while below you have a sheer fall between 200 and 300 feet in depth. I was for giving it up, when Emery took the lead, telling me it was the only dangerous spot: but then he was barefooted, and for years had been habituated to go so; the tenderness of my feet would not allow me to dispense with shoes, and the slippery soles made my case more perilous; false shame prevented my retreating, but at the time I could not help considering that the object to be obtained was scarcely worth the risk. When I had sidled half way across this very awkward pass, my arms extended and fingers stretched out nervously clutching at any little unevenness of surface, and whilst I was hesitating where next to put my foot, groping in vain for some fissure into which I might thrust my fingers, or for some root that I might grasp, I caught sight of the frightful descent, my head swam, and I was turning sick. At this moment of imminent risk, a native daringly swayed himself outside me, striking me smartly on the back as he passed: this recalled my senses, and I arrived in safety on firmer footing again. The rapidity with which this bold action was performed is surprising; for a moment the man's body must have been off the centre of gravity, and I believe the poor fellow endangered his life to inspire me with confidence, for had I slipped when he was passing me, he would have been involved in certain destruction.

From long practice the natives of Wēa Island are excellent cragsmen, and we now ascertained that the present party had come for the purpose of catching

birds, and to prepare for a larger party to assemble on the morrow, both from Wēa Island and from Rotumah. They have a saying amongst them, that "he who does not visit Auth Luna (the hollow rock) will die a fool." Great feasting and playing are held on occasion of these initiatory visits, and being urgently pressed by the natives to stay and witness the ceremonies I agreed to do so. I could not induce the two natives that came with us, and who had not previously visited the island, to land; they declared that ill luck would follow them if they did, as they had brought no pigs nor any thing as an offering, but if I would allow them to go they would return in the morning with pigs, &c., and bring any thing from the vessel that I might require. I was glad of the opportunity, and away they went highly delighted. There are not twenty feet square of level land on this singularly eruptive formation; and the only walking or scrambling practicable without danger is a narrow foot track worn by the natives on the mural summit. I went to survey the "Split" from above, and had another opportunity of witnessing the coolness of nerve possessed by the Wēa islanders, and their ability as cragsmen. One of them had brought a coil of plaited lines made like sennit 200 or 300 fathoms long; they were knotted together, and the conjoint end he proceeded to make fast round a projection of the cliff on which he was standing. Approaching the edge, he bent forward and shook his lines clear from entanglement; and whilst I was admiring the steadiness of his nerves, catching hold of the lines he stepped down the upright precipice as deliberately as I would walk

down a flight of stairs. Eager to witness his proceedings, I crawled on hands and knees to the edge of the cliff, and by lying on my stomach brought my head so that I could watch his manœuvres. I saw him land on the rock mentioned as being wedged in the split, and recklessly scamper about in pursuit of half-fledged birds which were screaming in all directions, trying in vain to escape the merciless clutches of their unexpected visitant. Having collected all the game to be obtained, he made them fast to the lines, then letting down his hair which fell to his waist, he collected the long ends to a point above his head, which he secured by binding firmly round with grass, and immediately afterwards disappeared in some cavernous recesses. On again emerging to the light, he caught hold of the lines, and walked up the cliff with the same careless ease he exhibited in descending. The mystery of tying up the hair was explained; he had converted it into a receptacle for eggs, and had from forty to fifty stowed in it. I don't know any other plan he could have adopted to have conveyed them up the precipice without breakage.

The natives were particularly kind and considerate: they desired Emery to tell me, not to be concerned at the badness of my fare that evening, as in the morning I should have plenty of everything. They resigned a hurricane house, the only building on the island, to our use, and did everything in their power to render us as comfortable as the place would admit. By the light of the moon, which shone brilliantly, the natives prepared their bird nets. At

the end of a slender wand, from six to eight feet in length, they fastened two pliant switches, which were bent into a hoop, and to this the light but strong bag-net was secured. No sooner had the moon gone down, and the birds had ceased to hover on the wing, than off they started, clambering places that to me would have been inaccessible by broad day-light, scaring the wild fowl from their roosting-places, and dexterously catching them in their nets as they darted hurriedly into the air. I trembled for the lives of these extraordinary cragsmen; they dared passes no goat could attempt, clinging with one hand, and rapidly whirling the net with the other, as they disturbed the birds from holes and hollows in the bald precipices. The next morning proved rather rough, and it was impossible to effect an entrance to the "hollow:" the Wēa people began to doubt if the party would come; but come they did, though later than expected: they pulled round to the convex side of the island, where a broken ravine rendered the ascent possible: those on shore swam to them through the surf, and took their freight from them, swimming back with it to the rocks. The pigs were unceremoniously pitched over the sides of the canoes with their legs tied; and it was ludicrous to see how the gallant fellows handled them—big or little, they tucked them under one of their arms, striking out with the other, poor piggy endeavouring to twist his snout above the water; and when a heavy swell met them, it was surprising to behold with what dexterity they dived before it could break, carrying the unfortunate grunters with them. After the cargo was

all safely landed, they then attended to the safe conduct of the company; girls, boys, and women, all jumped fearlessly into the water, two of the bold Wēa islanders gallantly escorting each one, and occasionally giving them an arm of encouragement. Some of the bouncing huzzies did not wait for their escort, but sprang overboard, laughing with delight, and propelled themselves through the water like steam-boats. It was a wild and novel scene. Notwithstanding the pronounced impracticability of entering the hollow with the canoes, no sooner were they clear than the Wēa lads took possession of them, and fearlessly paddled them over the huge swells, each canoe in its turn having a rope fixed round the stern, which was hurled to those on shore. At a favourable moment the signal was made; with great skill the canoe was kept head on over both billows, and, as the swell rose, it was carried up the rocks, and before the drawback could affect it, a dozen stout fellows or more had hauled it out of reach of the waves, to a place where I had difficulty in simply maintaining my footing. The whole of the company did not assemble till evening, and the feasting ceremony was postponed to the following day. There was a strong batch of us, and no shelter but the small hurricane hut before mentioned. The appearance of the heavens had been very threatening all the day, and, now that darkness was closing in upon us, there were unequivocal indications of an approaching storm. All hands immediately set to work, and in an incredibly short time, they had constructed several narrow houses, covered in with the woven leaves

of the cocoa-nut tree, which rendered them weather-proof. Provided for the worst, they yielded themselves to fun and frolic; kava was made in abundance, the red paint mixed with oil was plentifully besmeared about their persons, and singing was going on in high glee, when suddenly the heavy rain came down, and put a stop to their sports; every one like a rabbit sought his burrow, all distinction was done away with, and our house was crowded like the rest. The storm was exceedingly violent while it lasted, the lightning was fearfully vivid, and followed by such tremendous reverberatory bursts of thunder, that it may truly be said we were electrified. But no traces of the storm existed in the morning, and the day showed calm and fine.

I was invited to visit a natural cave, which Emery assured me was the greatest curiosity on the island, but that its situation was dangerous and difficult of approach. He had witnessed it on a former occasion; I therefore could not see what was to prevent me from doing what he had done, particularly as my short stay on the island had rendered me less liable to vertigo, and I expressed my determination to go and see it. Some of the uninitiated from Rotumah agreed to accompany me; but, on starting, their courage failed, and they turned back. We partly descended the ravine near which the yesterday's party had disembarked, and then, diverging to our left, struck laterally along the face of a sloping ledge of rock, utterly bare of any sign of verdure, and where a false step would have precipitated you from a height of several hundred feet into the

sea. Having crossed this ugly spot, we descended a little, and had to win our way to a projecting angle, which contained the redoubted cave. For a few yards the path shelves, and does not exceed two feet in breadth; and, there being nothing to conceal the depth below, many a Rotumah native who had ventured thus far was brought to a stand-still. Before reaching the spot I had pulled off my shoes, and I accomplished the pass without pain or difficulty. But I was greatly disappointed in the cavern; it was merely a hollow, running horizontally, no considerable way, into the rock, and was absolutely devoid of any interesting or peculiar features. We had disturbed hundreds of birds in our transit, which filled the air with their shrill discordant cries; and whilst sitting to enjoy the full novelty of our position, we saw right beneath us in the clear, placid, sky-coloured water, a large brown shark leisurely sailing to and fro; his sharp fins and white belly every now and then appearing above the surface. It seemed as if the fellow was waiting the chance of a fall; and his pertinacity in remaining about the spot induced me to conjecture that he could smell us. A cluster of natives were assembled to witness our return; they evidently did not expect to see me again. My re-appearance inspired the timid with confidence, and twelve or thirteen set off to inspect the wonder, that they might hereafter recount their feat of daring. To the Rotumah people, indeed, such an exploit is one to be long talked of, but the Wēa islanders think no more of such a performance than they would of walking along any other narrow pathway; for when

the heavy rains came on during the thunderstorm, anticipating a long continuance of tempestuous weather, three of them took shelter in this cave for the night, when the road to it must have been rendered infinitely more slippery and dangerous, putting the darkness of the hour out of the question.

About noon, every thing for the feast being ready, I was summoned to attend. A spot on the highest elevation of the island, not far from the "split," was selected as the festal scene. A slab of rock formed a natural table, and three or four feathery trees, something resembling the swamp oak of New South Wales, partly sheltered it from the extreme heat of the sun; the leaves of the cocoa-nut tree were interwoven and spread as a table-cloth; and this was covered with junks of roast pork, birds, fish, yams, tarro, and other vegetables, with a variety of fruits all intermixed. Large bowls of kava were in readiness, and cocoa-nut shells of the much prized-scented oil and turmeric powder. Understanding the white man's fashion, a leg of pork and some birds, with some young cocoa-nuts ready opened, were laid before Emery and me. The table not being large enough to admit the whole company at once, the Wēa people were first invited to take their seats with the young women. Each having swallowed a bowl of kava, they fell to like wolves upon the provisions, cramming their mouths as full as they could stuff them; and in the midst of their voracity two of the party came round to "sope" them, as is their phrase. One carried, wrapped in green leaves, the roasted entrails of the pigs, and the other a large roasted head of an

awfully sanguinary look. These were presented alternately to every one at the table, and each took a mouthful to the full extent of his jaws, shaking their heads like sharks till the delicate morsels were rent asunder. When they had eaten to repletion, or nearly so, the females retired, leaving behind them the upper mats they had on, which were new and fine, and prepared expressly for the occasion, as a tribute for the gallant assistance rendered by the Wēa islanders.

The ladies had not long absented themselves when some of them returned, bearing the bowls of paint, with which they covered the whole of the men's bodies, from their waists to their necks, down their arms to their wrists. Seen at a distance they would have been taken for a bivouac of soldiers dressed in bright scarlet jackets. On the completion of this ceremony the whole party rose, and, standing in a circle, one of them commenced a wild chant; and, at the end of every peculiarly prolonged cadence, all would join in an extraordinary refrain, accompanied with wild gesticulation. Each of the party having precluded in this singular manner, according to seniority or rank, they retired to make room for another group. The table was again covered in the same profusion, and so it went on till all on the island had participated in the feast. Not one tenth part of the provisions prepared for the occasion was consumed, the custom being to share the remnants to be enjoyed in privacy at home. The afternoon offering fair for our departure, the gallant Wēa men came to see us off in safety. They carried the canoe down the declivity

till within reach of the sea's foam, and, bidding Emery and me take our seats, they waited till the sea floated the canoe above their heads, and then launched her with all their might. We descended nearly perpendicularly, but rose with the recoil; and, under old Emery's directions, I seized a paddle, and we worked away till we had got her without the breakers, and our Rotumah men then swam to us.

The islet of Attan, so named from the abundance of fruit which grows on it, called by the natives Atta, is another of those places to which the natives occasionally resort to feast and play. But they generally go there well provided against casualties; for sometimes, after having landed, they have been unable to get away again for upwards of a fortnight; and on one occasion, a party of more than a hundred were reduced to such an extremity as to be compelled to eat grass; and had it not been for the daring of the Wēa Islanders they would all or the greater part of them have perished. Emery was with the party when they landed, and, not liking the appearance of the atmosphere, he urged the chief to leave; but he had his spirit chief with him, who ridiculed Emery's auguries and prophesied that they should have the finest of weather. Two canoes with Wēa people in them, who were intimately acquainted with the atmospherical transitions peculiar to Auth Luna and Attan, put off without loss of time for their own island, carrying Emery with them; but the chief persisted in remaining. For a fortnight they were encircled with such a tumultuous sea of breakers that no canoe could face them; and in one attempt

three of them were dashed to atoms, and those in them were hurled upon the rocks, and so badly injured as barely to escape with life. Conjecturing the wretched extremity to which they must be reduced, the Wēa Islanders loaded their canoes with provisions, and, with practised skill, approached the boiling reef as close as was consistent with safety, and part of them boldly plunged into the whirling eddies, carrying the provisions for the relief of those on shore. Had it not been for this timely succour, many would have perished. No one attempted to follow the Wēa people to their canoes, that being a feat of boldness and dexterity peculiar to themselves.

There are two conical rocks on Attan resembling works of art: they are shaped like two gigantic sugar-loaves; the natives have entitled them King and Queen; and they are looked upon as the presiding deities of the island; and whenever it is visited by any of them, they make oblations to these insensate blocks, of kava, meat, vegetables &c., and plentifully besmear them with red turmeric. Should they fail in doing so, they say that the offended dignitaries would raise a tempest and prevent their leaving the island. Their superstition is very wilful; for, notwithstanding the many lying predictions of the spirit chiefs, they continue to repose the blindest confidence in their pretended prescience.

On regaining the schooner I received a note from the person who had undertaken to navigate her, apprising me of his intention to remain at Rotumah. At his own earnest solicitation I had taken this man from Sydney, I had conferred several favours on him,

and at the last hour had advanced him cash to save him from arrest. No one on board, save himself, understood how to ascertain the longitude by chronometer; and dead reckoning, where the currents were so rapid and changeable, could not be depended on. But I was so thoroughly disgusted with his ingratitude, and his many attempts at imposition, that, bethinking me of the uncouth uneducated men I had fallen in with—skippers of American whalers—I put to myself the question “what should hinder my acquiring a knowledge of navigation?” Hitherto I had not sought to know any thing about it, lest it should be thought I was interfering in matters I had no business with; but now, on the point of being abandoned by the man to whom I had always shown every attention and deference, the quicksilver in my veins rose to fever heat; and, rather than submit to any humiliating concessions, or make one effort for the ingrate to remain, *I determined to know that night* as much of the working of time into longitude as would serve to carry us on our course: and the sailing-master heartily approving my resolution, I wrote a quiet note back to the gentleman, telling him I thought he was acting very foolishly, but as such was his purpose I should make no efforts to induce him to alter it; and reminding him that, as we intended sailing at daylight the next morning, he had better lose no time in collecting any thing that belonged to him. This brought him on board; and, after exhibiting signs of nervous restlessness, but none of packing up, he begged I would let him have a few articles, that he might not be left destitute. I could

not help smiling at the way in which he framed his request; but, anxious to give him a lesson, I desired him to make out a list of what he wanted. It was rather a modest one, drawn out, I believe, in the hope that it would not be granted, and he should then have a pretext of volunteering to remain. But my mind was made up: I would submit to no more trickery, or the chances of it; and, as he had brought his position on himself, by his own double-dealing, and the attempt to practise on my fears, if he now wanted to quell his own, which were evidently considerably excited, he should make an express application to be allowed to continue the voyage. Slightly commenting on his notions of providing against destitution of his own seeking, I handed the list to the mate and desired him to put the articles into the boat. Completely taken aback at this un-hoped for liberality, the worthy snivelled out something about giving me an order on his agent in Sydney for the amount he would owe me; but never offered to write it; nor would it have been worth the paper blackened if he had. No excuse existing for his lingering on board any longer, with a lengthened face he called the steward to get his trunks on deck. I suffered him to go over the side; and when he was seated in the boat, seeing how wretchedly downcast he was, I said to him, "It strikes me you are not over happy in the choice you have made: if your heart misgives you, you can remain on board; but I have lost all dependence on you, and if you do remain you will in future have nothing to do with the vessel." I addressed him openly, as the mate had

just whispered to me that he had been tampering with the crew, and had assured the men that, without him, in less than a week, we should be rolling in the sands. Cur though he was, he could not, for shame falter now in presence of all those before whom he had been making his boasts, and he directed the men to put him ashore. When the boat came back, a letter was handed me from him, which wound up, after much incoherent rambling, with the words, "If I had been in any other place I would have demanded the satisfaction of a gentleman." "Oh," thought I, "no place so good as that where we are, and it is a pity you should be disappointed." Calling three hands into the boat, and taking the little skipper with me, I hastened ashore. The man of wounded honour was resting on the naked shaft of a cocoa-nut branch, and was surrounded by a mob of runaway seamen and escaped convicts. With his letter in my hand, I stepped up to this susceptible gentleman. "Is this your writing?" inquired I.

"Ye-e-e-s," was the hesitating reply.

"Indeed! So after you have been playing upon me by every means in your power, trying to excite disaffection amongst the crew, and doing all you could to injure me in return for the kindness I have shown you, you say, if you were in any other place you would demand the satisfaction of a gentleman. Go! get your pistols! here's a clear sandy beach and nobody to interrupt you." I had given the dog a fine pair of duelling pistols, and he used to boast of his ability to snuff a candle at twenty paces.

"No! no! no! my dear sir; you have mistaken

me altogether, that's not the satisfaction I meant; I only meant, that if we were in Sydney, we would have a little friendly explanation together in a friend's house, for I know there's somebody on board that's been running me down."

"What are you talking about, man? hasn't every thing you have done been your own voluntary act and deed? and after having written me your determination to stay ashore, finding that I don't seek to detain you, haven't you been tampering with the allegiance of the crew?"

"No-o-o-o; I never did."

"Oh, sir!" said the men from the boat, "don't say that; you know you came for'ard and told us that unless you went in the vessel she would be rolling in the sands in less than a week, that the captain knew nothing about finding the ship's position, and that we should be all lost."

"You're a liar!" was the gentlemanly rejoinder.

"Oh, I won't stand that," replied the man nearest him; and he struck at him right and left with his clenched fists before I could prevent it. In an instant the fellow raised the heavy cocoa-nut branch on which he was leaning, and struck the youngster violently over the head with it; and we were soon surrounded by his ruffianly gang, who were armed with sword-sticks, dirks, and bowie-knives, and inflamed with drink, which this worthy had given them out of the stock I had supplied him with. I wrested a knife from the hand of one vagabond; and the mate got possession of a sword-stick. We then cleared a space, and throwing the knife towards him, "There,"

said I, "is one of the weapons you have innocently prepared for us; but let no man come near us, or take the consequences. And now I tell you, for the last time, there rides the vessel; and if you really tremble to remain ashore, notwithstanding all your show, you may go aboard; but never presume to open your lips or take upon you the slightest direction as regards the vessel."

"Make way there!" and the blackguards fell back with respect, evidently overawed and astounded, bad as they were, at the baseness and poltroonery of their patron.

During the whole of this disturbance the natives, who had assembled to nearly the number of two hundred, maintained the most apathetic indifference; and, like the two Kilkenny cats confined in a sawpit, we might have fought with each other till nothing but our tails were left, without their attempting the slightest interference.

I sat up the greater part of the night overhauling Norie and the Nautical Ephemeris. About three o'clock in the morning a light burst in upon me; scales seemed to have fallen from my eyes, and I sung out with great glee to "Little Tom," the master, who was sleeping in his berth, "Eureka! Eureka!" and on *August* 29th, so soon as daylight favoured us, we tripped our anchor and disappeared, in the midst of a heavy squall that struck us from the land, like a spirit in a dream.

CHAP. IX.

Mywolla. — Make the Reef again. — The Captain takes all the Seamen to the Wreck, and it falls calm. — The Vessel drifts out of Sight of the Reef. — Westerly Current in part accounted for. — Abandonment of the Wreck. — Make for the Bay of Islands — Alteration of Plans. — The Vessel grounds on a Shoal off the North Shore opposite Auckland. — Auckland improved, but Cash scarce. — “Little Tom” quits the Vessel. — New Master engaged. — Under weigh for Tahiti. — Sight Huaheine and Raiatea. — Pass between Moorea and Tahiti. — The entrance to it. — Tahiti described. — Its People. — Missionary Influence. — Queen Pomare the Head of the Island. — The Government shared by seven Chiefs. — Laws in force at Night. — Ancient Rites superseded by more enlightened Instructions. — Avata Shark. — Horrible Sacrifice of an Infant by its Father. — The Symbol conveyed to an intended Human Sacrifice. — Form of the unhallowed Oblation. — Want of Jealousy towards White Men accounted for. — Conversation with Flowers. — Process of manufacturing Tappa. — Native Colours. — A curious Method of producing a Red Dye. — Canoes. — Novel mode of Fishing. — Native Houses. — Method of Cooking. — Diseases of the Country.

“Darker grew the heavens, as the sun descended,
Till the starless storm-sky with the wave was blended.
Soon a horrid calm fell on the gloomy night,
Nor a growling breeze now wing'd the vessel's flight.”

September 27th. — AT two o'clock A. M., civil time, we made the island of Mywolla, one of the Fejee group; for after a long and baffled search for the reef, we discovered that a false rate had been left with the chronometer, which was calculated to lead

us astray; and I had my doubts whether foul tricks had not been played with the instrument itself to insure the fulfilment of the predictions made by the scoundrel who deserted me. Every vestige of paper which contained the working of the sights was destroyed, and I had nothing to guide or direct me. Subsequently, I was fortunate enough to discover, in an old memorandum-book, the original error and daily rate of the time-keeper, given, to a certain date, by the Observer in Sydney. I worked up the rate from that time, and, adding it to the error, the island as laid down on the chart very nearly accorded in longitude with the time shown by the watch; but the island has been inaccurately surveyed, and, from the great disparity of its bearings to those expressed on the different charts, we could not prove the chronometer to any nicety.

Mywolla is much larger than it is laid down, and its points and bays bear not the remotest resemblance to those mapped. We circumnavigated it, and were nearly wrecked upon some unnoticed islets with reefs off them. As far as we could judge it is a rich and fertile isle: but the many reports of the treachery of the natives prevented my going ashore. We stood close along the land, but no natives put off to us, although we could see them on the beach running about in a state of nudity. They lit fires at night on the hills, which I was told was an indubitable token of friendliness; but still I did not like their keeping away so entirely from us, particularly as we noticed several canoes plying close in shore. On the third morning we

made a last effort to induce them to visit us, by standing as close in as it was advisable to venture; and after a while we were gratified by seeing two canoes bearing towards us. To provide against accidents, that is, lest our visitors should be coming with "hostile arms intent," we prepared our own, to give them, under such circumstances, a warm reception; but when the first fellow came alongside, our fears on that head were dispelled. They brought a few clubs, spears, yams, and some tortoiseshell for barter; but they had nothing with them of much value. Their canoes are something similar to those of Rotumah; but they have very wide outriggers, to counterbalance a square platform elevated above the gunwales of the canoe. They handle their paddles differently from any natives I have seen, as they stand upon the thwarts of the outrigger with their faces towards the stern, and in this manner they propel the canoe forward with a motion like that used in sculling; only in sculling the man stands with his back to the bow, and his oar rests in a chock placed in the stern, whereas they have nothing to rest their paddles against, which resemble broad-bladed oars; and the rate they go at is inconceivable.

The men, if we saw a fair sample, are a nobly built powerful race, darker than any other islanders I have seen; but this may perhaps appear from the custom they have of rubbing their bodies and filling their hair with a black powder. In the second canoe that came alongside was a chief of note apparently, and he was exceedingly anxious for me

to go on shore. He continued reiterating, with much earnestness, the word "Trunke, Trunke," and made signs that he would remain on board to answer for my safety. I was about to go; but the captain caught my arm, and earnestly dissuaded me from doing so, as he said he was certain that they only wanted to get me ashore for the purpose of obtaining ransom; and if, after I was gone, the chief jumped overboard and swam to his canoe, they would have no other means of rescuing me. There was reason in this; for if they attempted to shoot the chief for escaping, my fate would be inevitably sealed; I therefore suffered my inclinations to be overruled, much to the mortification of the chief, who bestowed upon the captain a most unmistakable scowl, only to be fully appreciated by those that saw it. This fortified me in my prudential resolution; and I returned, to carry on the best intercourse I could with telegraphic signs. One of the canoes pushed off for the shore, to bring, as they intended, some pigs and more yams and tortoiseshell; but on its return, it only had a few trifling articles in it, and some new faces, who earnestly pointed to the shore, and repeated the exclamation of "Trunke, Trunke." Finding we could make nothing of our intercourse, and determined not to put myself in their power, I hinted thus much to them, when they left us with a sullen air of disappointment and ferocity. We remarked that several of the men had lost their little fingers. The chief was one of Nature's noblemen; he stood nearly seven feet high, and his limbs, athletic in proportion, were beautifully moulded. He

had cicatrised wounds from musket-balls in two or three places, and I endeavoured to ascertain under what circumstances he had got them, whether in any row with white men; but he pointed to a distant part of Mywolla, wishing me to understand that they had been received in an engagement with an opposite tribe. I doubted it very much; for he pretended ignorance of the nature of a musket, and I detected the shining barrels of several, which were only partially concealed in the bottom of his canoe, and he was evidently familiar with fire-arms. From the bearings of the land, our chronometer, as we stood away again for a fresh trial at the reef, put us twenty-five miles to the westward of our position; but, as before observed, no dependence can be placed upon the bearings laid down on the charts. By a lunar observation, it made our position to the eastward: however, I hope this time we may be more fortunate.

October 5th. — Early this morning we again sighted the reef, and made directly for it. By our chronometer it was in $174^{\circ} 14'$ E., differing twenty-six miles from the instructions given us; but I cannot tell at present whether our chronometer is correct. $21^{\circ} 41'$ S. is the correct latitude. On one chart in my possession there is a reef laid down in this latitude or nearly so, and in longitude $175^{\circ} 15'$ E. By various daily observations, our chronometer still continued to give the reef in $174^{\circ} 14'$ E., which tempts me to believe it to be the true longitude. The placing it in $175^{\circ} 15'$ E. may have been a typographical error on the part of the engraver.

The fellow who quitted me at Rotumah, and who had previously navigated the vessel at his own urgent request, on the plea of his knowledge of the seas, made the reef to be in $174^{\circ} 28' E.$; but he concealed his work from every one, and, so far as lay in his power, I believe he did his best to cause us to be wrecked. And why? Because he thought that his services were indispensable. Even had they been so, that circumstance ought to have bound him the more to me, as it was at his own earnest solicitation that he joined us; but it served only as an inducement to throw obstacles in our way. I had reposed the fullest confidence in him, and never thought of inspecting his work, as I never could have surmised the result of his conduct; nor did it strike me as being any thing extraordinary that, previous to our first making the reef, we sailed for several days over and about the spot where he affirmed it should be. Roused to exertion, and to look into matters myself, I speedily acquired sufficient knowledge to detect him in error, as he certainly had left a false rate with the chronometer, whether from design or ignorance I will not say. By the bearings of the land at Mywoila, it was twenty-five miles eastward of what our chronometer gave; and twenty-five miles added to $174^{\circ} 14' E.$, will make the longitude within one mile of that given us in the instructions, which was the mean of observations by three chronometers: however, I shall keep the rate we have been applying lately, and ascertain the truth on reaching the first harbour we drop anchor in.

When we were about six miles from the sandspit,

the captain had both boats lowered, and carried with him all the seamen, leaving on board only the cook, the cabin-boy, and myself. Shortly after he had left us, it fell dead calm; and it was with some little apprehension that I noticed we were slowly, but gradually, drifting towards the reef. Not a ripple disturbed the surface of the water, and the ocean bore the appearance of undulating glass. The vessel lost her steerage-way, and at last we approached within two miles of the breakers. The boats and all hands being away, rendered our position somewhat precarious; and I was on the point of firing off the guns, as a signal for their return, when we had the satisfaction to find we had got into a counter current that was setting us in an opposite direction. The boats came on board about two o'clock P. M., and the hands having refreshed themselves they started off again. The calm continued, not a breath of air was stirring, and, towards sunset, we had drifted nearly out of sight of the reef; no boats made their appearance, the sun went down, and the reef was no longer visible. The night closed upon us very dark, and one, two, three hours passed away, and the boats did not appear, whilst we were helplessly drifting to where the current liked to take us. My sensations were by no means enviable; for, if the boats missed us, and it should afterwards come on to blow—the usual sequence of such a calm—what a plight we should all be in! we had not strength to work the vessel, and those in the boats would probably be lost. We kept a light burning at our fore-top-gallant mast-head, and we fired guns, and let off

rockets at intervals ; still no boats, and not a sound could we hear in answer to our firing. The deep silence of the night, the profound calm, and dead repose of every thing, was absolutely painful ; and my anxiety increased as the chances of their arrival decreased. Once more we fired. This time, to my great thankfulness, a responding shout came booming over the water, as if a legion of bulls had conspired to raise the cry ; showing, at all events, that the anxiety of the boating parties was little less than ours. We continued exchanging halloos until one boat only came alongside, *all hands sufficiently comfortable*. They had seen nothing of their consort. Whilst I was expressing my fears and anxiety, she also came alongside, having approached us in a different direction. *Her crew was also glorious*. It appeared they had been detained for the want of water, *assuredly not for want of beer*. The tide had enabled them to get in easily enough, but they were compelled to wait till half-flood before they could get out again with the boats laden.

I omitted to notice, when we had the navigator *par excellence* on board, the astonishment excited in me by the wonderful influence of the current in the space of twenty-four hours. Although we had been steering S., and S. by E., we had made seventy miles westing ; but now the murder was out. On casually turning over the pages of the memorandum-book before alluded to, I discovered that our scientific genius had been in the habit of subtracting the daily gain from the original error of the chronometer, although that error was too fast for Greenwich ; so that, accord-

ing to his system, we should soon have had no error at all. I heard the little master arguing with him upon the subject, and it seemed to me that the theory maintained by the other was erroneous; but concluding that a man of his vaunted experience could not be mistaken, the question ceased to trouble me. On coming now to look into matters for myself, and inquiring into causes and effects, by lighting on this chance memorandum it turned out that, on the day we made such a wonderful jump to the westward, our worthy had covertly become a convert to his error, and, without in any way alluding to the circumstance, made the necessary alteration, which naturally placed us so much further to the westward, but which he vehemently maintained was the effect of the current. There are currents it is true, but they appear to have no direct set; they are ever varying, and we have had ample opportunity of testing their inconstancy. We have had the current northerly, easterly, at other times westerly, and again we have had it southerly, in fact it has boxed all round the compass in the same latitude and longitude, and baffled all our calculations; and unless there is in these troubled regions some submarine action of fire to influence the waters, I am at a loss how to account for its instability.

October 27th.—On the evening of this day, in consequence of the unmanageable conduct of the crew, who would persist in getting drunk in spite of all remonstrance, and notwithstanding the dangerous proximity to the reef we were compelled to maintain, with much reluctance, I own, I came to the resolu-

tion of abandoning it. For three and twenty days had we been standing off and on — off at night, and making it again in the morning. We had contrived to get out of the brig all the beef that was in good condition and which was the only valuable part of the cargo ; but if dependence could have been placed upon the men, we should have likewise recovered her anchors, cables, guns, sails, and other gear ; but so much bottled ale lying loose in the hold offered such facilities for getting drunk, that sailor-like, the men could not resist it, and the lives of all hands were repeatedly endangered by their recklessness. In bringing off the beef some chance of escape might have offered if the boats had got swamped, as there was the capability of starting the goods overboard ; but a similar occurrence happening when the boats were laden with guns, anchors, chains, &c., the weight would have prevented the possibility of lightening them, and they would have been settled beyond the power of redemption. We might have constructed a raft ; but this would have required the calmest weather, for the weather that would have admitted of our bringing it off would not have suffered the vessel to come near the reef. And supposing we had made a raft, we might have waited long enough, and perhaps to no purpose, for the chance of getting it away : for the water is shoal over a long extent of coral reef, and the rolling swell that usually plays upon it would have baffled any attempts to have got the raft over it. Besides, it would have taken many days to have got all in readiness, which might have proved expensive, and labour thrown away ; and

above all, there was the drunkenness of the men to combat with; so, in reflecting upon the whole, I came to the resolution of abandoning further exertions. It had been my intention to have cruised amongst the islands for tortoiseshell, &c. until I reached Manilla or Macao; but so much time had been lost, and so much unexpected delay occasioned by the working at the reef, that I feared to encounter the changing of the Monsoon in the China seas, and, by attempting too much, lose all. Solacing myself with the reflection that I had used my utmost exertions, and hoping still to dispose favourably of every thing, we now stood for the Bay of Islands.

November 11th. — At four o'clock A.M. this day, we were beating between the heads; and at about nine, the wind falling light, I landed in a boat at Tapeka Point. From there I walked over to Kororarika, and was struck with the apparent solitude of the place. Scarcely an individual was to be seen; the place seemed deserted, and business suspended; silence had usurped the place of noise, bustle, and activity, that prevailed the last time I was there; and instead of the crowd of shipping that used generally to be at anchor off the town, the government brig, and one or two small coasting craft were all that could be seen. No improvements had taken place; and works I had seen in progress had been abandoned. "Something ails it now, the place is cursed;" but I don't see how it could have been expected otherwise, the whalers were the only means of keeping up any commercial activity, and the government impositions have driven them away.

Is it not extraordinary that we, who have colonies immediately upon the whaling grounds, should yet be beaten out of the field by the Yankees, who have to come a distance of from 16,000 to 18,000 miles? I am acquainted with the son of a gentleman who was formerly one of the largest owners of whalers out of Sydney. He served his apprenticeship on board one of his father's vessels; and amongst other remarks, the fruits of his experience, he stated that one of the most expensive items in the outfit of a whaler was her casks. The English casks are made of very stout oaken staves and heading, the latter being particularly so, and are long and narrow, with a great booge and depth of chime, bad to stow, occupying much unnecessary room, and not only difficult, but dangerous to up-end and cooper in heavy weather. The Yankee casks are built like a drum, the staves not much above half the thickness of ours, and the heads made of well seasoned pine: in consequence, they don't cost half the price, stow in much less room, the strain on each cask is more equally divided, and, as they have no more chime than is absolutely necessary, not only is there so much space saved, but the chimes stand less chance of being broken, and can be coopered without danger in any weather; and, from the jointing of the staves and beading being finer than that of the English casks, owing to the great thickness of the latter, they are less liable to loss by leakage. John Bull, amongst the operatives, is particularly pig-headed and wedded to his own opinion; he will not believe that a Yankee can teach him anything: and the captain of an English

whaler would rather pride himself on, and boast of, the greater expense of his outfit, than try and lessen that expense by taking a *wrinkle* from a Yankee.

I strolled down the beach to renew acquaintance with faces I had formerly known; but nearly all had deserted for Waitematta, the seat of government, and “nothing was moving but stagnation.” In the evening I pulled up the Kawakawa, where the Yankee whalers resort. Only two were there, and the acting American consul was absent, his affairs being in difficulty; and I was compelled to abandon the hope I had formed of exchanging supplies for bone, oil, &c. No business was stirring, and money was not to be had. We waited in the bay for a few days, to admit of repairs being done to the vessel; and, whilst these were going on with, a vessel arrived, bringing most melancholy intelligence of the state of the market in New South Wales and Van Diemen’s Land,—scarcely a house but what was in difficulty, and many firms deemed infallible had called a meeting of creditors. This distressing account altered my views, and I cleared out for Waitematta and the island of Otaheite, intending to meet the whalers about the time they would be seeking the harbour of the latter island, and to be guided thereafter by the chapter of accidents.

November 22nd. — Dropped anchor opposite the town of Auckland Waitematta: however, before coming to our anchorage, we grounded on a soft sand or mud-bank on the north shore. The water having suddenly shoaled whilst they were heaving the lead,

from five fathoms to ten feet, we had to wait till high water before we floated again, and sustained no injury. Auckland had assumed an improved appearance; new and neat-looking stores and houses had superseded the straggling buildings of the composite order, between Maori hut and Irish hovel. Streets had been formed (many of which, by the by, will have to be laid out anew, their unwholesome narrowness engendering filth of every description); and in front of many of the houses were patches of garden ground clothed with verdure. But business—business—was in the same desponding state; most of the settlers had exhausted their capital in the purchase of their allotments and the erection of their dwellings, and now they were without cash to carry on business, or to liquidate the liabilities they had incurred. The saying, that “fools build houses, and wise men inhabit them,” seems equally to apply in new countries as in old. When the government first planned Auckland, and put up building allotments for public competition, certain officials and land-sharks from Port Nicholson purchased all they could at the first flush, upon speculation; and subsequently dividing and subdividing their purchases, have sold their divisions at such ruinous rates as to tie the hands of the artisans and petty traders. Any one coming into the market now, with plenty of money, might buy house-property cheap enough.

Having effected what sales I could, my old travelling companion of the East Cape joined me; and “Little Tom,” the master, not wishing to extend his absence from his wife, whom he had left in delicate

circumstances, I engaged another in his place; and, on November 27th, we left Waitematta for the Great Barrier, to allow the new master to collect his traps which he had left on that island. As we neared the land, a thick mist enshrouded it; and not thinking it safe to make the harbour till it cleared away, we stood off and on till four o'clock A.M. *November 28th*, when we came to our anchor in Port Abercrombie, at the west end of the island. The harbour is completely land-locked, circular as a basin; no winds can affect it, as it is shut in, and surrounded by Alpine cliffs. On entering the harbour, we got the south-east end of the Little Barrier, to bear W. half N., and run in E. half S. The Westernmost headland, as you enter, is called Wellington Head, from the semblance, real or imaginary, it bears to that hero's profile. A captain Nayle has fixed his solitary abode in this secluded bay, and contemplates opening a copper-mine in the island, veritable specimens of valuable ore having been detected. As he was not present, I did not hear the particulars; but from the superficial glance I had at the rugged character of the island, I should think the operations of mining and transporting the ores for shipment would be found an expensive undertaking.

November 29th. — Again purchased our anchor, and are now on our way for Tahiti.

December 31st. — Our passage has been tediously prolonged by a succession of head-winds. To-day we sighted the islands of Raiatea and Huraheine, which lie in a W.N.W. direction, 100 to 140 miles from Tahiti; we passed to leeward of them. They

are high and bold. In the evening tacked ship, and on January 1st, 1842, we found ourselves between an island called Moorea, or Eimeo, and Tahiti. Moorea is nearly due west of the north part of Tahiti, and distant about fifteen miles. It is bold and lofty; its summit is broken into pinnacles, resembling spires, obelisks, and castellated ruins; and it is intersected with many fertile valleys, such as Oponohu, whose picturesque beauty forms a pleasing contrast to the alpine grandeur of the mountain scenery which girds it on either side.

January 2nd.—By our observations we concluded that at daylight this morning, we were abreast of Matavia bay. Seeing neither sign nor token of any harbour, we continued sailing close along the land, as we imagined; till no curve, or break, or other indication, announced the vicinity of a harbour. Hill shot above hill, and mountain above mountain, and the whole seemed a conglomerated mass precipitated at once from the sea. We could see surf, and hear the roaring of breakers, but no symptoms of any place of anchorage. The hills and mountains had this peculiarity—the angular slopes appeared to have been cut by the hand of man into polygonal surfaces. They are, for the most part, clad with a bright verdure, with here and there a patch of darker foliage and occasionally a cluster of cocoa-nut trees. Being all strangers to the country, we were sadly puzzled what to do. At last I had the boat lowered, and then we discovered our error: instead of being close in shore it gave us upwards of two hours' hard pulling to make it, and we opened several low points not dis-

cernible at any distance. Pulling through a passage in the reef that surrounds the island, we ascertained, at the residence of a missionary, that the vessel was immediately opposite Point Venus, the northern extremity of the entrance of the harbour. It is a low sandy point, covered with cocoa-nut trees; and, from our position in the vessel, it was lost in the bold background. We were not long hurrying on board again; and had as an attendant a monstrous shark, longer than our whale-boat, which kept even way with us, close to the dip of the oars, till we came alongside; disappearing as I called for the harpoon. We were about attempting the passage ourselves, when, luckily for us, the pilot made his appearance. I say luckily for us, for, of a surety, if he had not come on board we should have run the vessel on shore. Matavia is the station originally located by the first missionaries; but the commercial settlement, called Papeeti, is farther to the westward. Its eastern entrance is off a place called Taonoa, easily known by a singular but beautiful land-mark—a mural crown, rising perpendicularly between two lofty mountainous sweeps. The passage was startlingly intricate. It was “Starboard! Port! Port! Starboard!” every instant. We could distinguish the clear white sand at the bottom; coral rocks were grinning on either side of us, and sometimes the pass between them was so narrow that it appeared only of sufficient width to admit the vessel. The pilot is a Tahitian, but was for many years in the service of captains of English merchant men. He handled the schooner quite masterly, and we reached our anchorage in safety.

Otaheite, or Tahiti, more properly, has been termed the Gem of the South Seas, — Queen of the Islands in the Pacific. It is, in fact, two islands, connected by an isthmus; their extreme length being about forty miles. The land is exceedingly bold and mountainous; the highest eminences rising in the centre of the island, and diminishing in altitude as they approach the sea. A narrow belt of level land runs round the island, at the foot of the mountains, but it bears no proportion to the mountainous extent of country. There are many beautiful valleys and mountain glades, ornamented with picturesque waterfalls and cascades, and with countless variety of foliage and alpine scenery. It is encircled by a continuous reef, from half a mile to a mile from the land, save two or three places, where it runs closer in shore, and the breaks in it, which form the passages to the various harbours. Papeeti is about seven miles from Point Venus; and, independent of the Taonoa passage, it has egress on its western side. At times a very strong current sets upon the lee reef; but with a moderate and fair wind there is no cause for apprehension, as you are soon through. The elaborate instructions we received for entering the harbour, were not of the slightest service; nor would I recommend any to trust to their own pilotage. By hoisting a flag at the fore, the pilot will put off to you, provided you are not at too great a distance. And as, from the boldness of the land, it is very deceiving to the optics, it may be as well to state that you may stand close into the reef without danger; and unless you do stand well in you will subject yourself to

much uncertainty and delay. There is shallow water a little to the eastward of Point Venus, called the Dolphin Shoal, extending about three miles from the land. We passed over it, but a ship of heavy burthen could not do so; for the water is rarely seen to break upon it. The vale of level land, though narrow, is exceedingly fertile and beautiful. It is well intersected by numerous mountain streams, and abounds with fruits and vegetables of almost every description that grow beneath the tropics. If a person only passed by the island he would be apt to exclaim, "Is that the Queen of the Pacific?" but after a residence of some time and sundry excursions, the prolific nature of the soil, the variety and beauty of its sweet-smelling shrubs and flowers, its varying foliage, its noble trees teeming in fruitfulness, its delightful climate, and lovely prospects, would make him exclaim, "Indeed this is a beautiful island!" It produces spontaneously all the fruits and vegetables necessary for the support of life, and the natives are consequently freed from the necessity of serf-like labour; and they seem a buoyant, jocund race.

Some years ago a missionary gentleman introduced into the country some guava seeds, which he brought with him from Norfolk Island; and so well have they liked the soil, that the land is now overrun with them. The natives are too listless to attempt exterminating them, although they see the fearful rapidity with which they spread, choking and destroying nearly every thing in their way. They have killed vast numbers of the bread-fruit and other valuable trees, and unless some means are adopted to

keep them under they will prove a great curse. I circumnavigated the islands, and have travelled round three fourths of it on horseback, occasionally assisted by a boat, where it was not practicable for a horse to proceed. The scenery is romantic — beautiful as fairy land. In many parts, waterfalls precipitate themselves like streams of silver over the moss-grown ledges of rocky fissures; and the varied relief of the foliage, the graceful waving of the cocoa-nut trees, the sombre, dark, frowning cliffs, the green hills and the lofty mountains, mellowed into a bluish tint by the distance, together with the purling streams and cool gushing springs, afford as delightful a prospect for the eye to feast upon as is to be met with in any part of the world; but, as I have before remarked, when at sea, and at any distance from the land, all this beautiful effect is swallowed up in the general verdant appearance of the island.

The natives generally are tall, athletic, and well proportioned; and the females, in comeliness of appearance and cleanliness of person, surpass any of the savage or half-civilized races I have seen. Many of them are of faultless symmetry; but they look awkward when dressed in the waist-confining robes of our countrywomen. Their dress consists of a loose frock or roundabout, of fanciful colour, with a piece of print of a different pattern rolled round their waists and reaching to their ancles. This is occasionally worn outside the roundabout, but more generally beneath it. They are lighter in colour than the New Zealanders; and the women possess beautiful long raven hair, which they keep scrupulously neat and clean, per-

fuming it with scented oils, and ornamenting it with wreaths of variegated flowers. Taking them altogether, they are a handsome people; but I think one more ready to abandon themselves to sensuality cannot be found under the canopy of heaven. From personal observation, and information from many sources, I believe it is rare that a female native preserves her chastity till she arrives at the age of puberty. Delicacy is a feeling unknown to either sex; and there is scarcely a man but would wink at his wife's prostitution, or even abet it, rather than work to obtain the end he proposes by her sacrifice, — if sacrifice it can be called, when the wives are nothing loth. This character applies equally to the natives of the Leeward Islands; and the missionaries, instead of trying to suppress this evil by examples of the strictest continence in their own persons, have endeavoured to check it by the institution of sumptuary laws, making the crime a marketable offence, to be atoned for by the payment of so many dollars. This system of punishment is eluded and laughed at; or, if the parties are detected, the paramour pays the fine, and the crime continues. Nor is this all. I will not sully the pages of my journal with recording the details that have been given me, both by natives and Europeans; but if one tithe of them be correct, and, unfortunately, I have seen corroborative testimony in certain instances, instead of improving the native character, the missionaries have superinduced upon their other bad qualities hypocrisy of the deepest dye. I speak dispassionately when I say, that I conscientiously believe the moral cha-

acter of the natives has not been improved by missionary intercourse. It is true, that by long sojourning with them the missionaries have instilled the conviction of the power and grandeur of European nations; by this means taming their ferocity, and rendering them more harmless to visitors, and less dangerous to shipwrecked mariners; but fear, and not religious restraint, is the governing principle. I do not mention names, nor will I quote even authentic anecdotes to support my assertions; but it is right that the world should know, and that the zealous supporters of missionary exertion should be made acquainted with the fact, that there have been as many wolves as shepherds amongst the folds; and that many have "come to the marriage without being provided with a wedding garment."

I mention no names, "nor ought set down in malice;" and perhaps these remarks will not fall to the ground. Can an apostate to his Maker expect to be *listened* to when he pretends to preach the Word of Truth? I have heard scores of arguments about being "guided by my words, not by my deeds," &c., but will a blighted tree bear fruit? I esteem and venerate holy men who act according to their profession, and am aware that no man is infallible; but when one yields to the "old man" the corrupt portion of his nature, and finds himself incapable of subduing his sensual passions, let him resign the sacerdotal character, and not doubly pollute his soul and body; bringing contempt on the missionary cause, and standing forth to the heathen *a mocking comment on the Word of God.*

On attending a meeting of natives in their houses of assembly, your olfactory nerves are not so offended as they would be on entering the hut of a New Zealander, approaching the "gunnia" of a New South Wales black, or coming in contact with a negro. Their bodies are remarkably sweet; which may be attributed to their constant habits of ablution, and their natural fondness for fragrant odours. Both men and women wear flowers in their hair; but the oil they scent it with is not exactly in accordance with the more refined taste of Europeans. Nevertheless, there is something about the refreshing cleanliness of their persons, that is fragrant and agreeable.

Queen Pomare is the head of the island; but she scarcely interferes with its government, which is carried on by seven supreme judges. An old fellow named Uata, the queen's foster-father, is her treasurer and speaker, and appears to be one of the principal men. In the queen's absence he is appointed regent; and, though not a chief of high rank, he seems to enjoy a good deal of executive power. On a meeting of chiefs to effect new laws and regulations, the queen rarely interferes, or withholds her sanction from those submitted to her. They have a calliboose, or lock-up, supplied with stocks to fetter the limbs of the drunken or disorderly; and, upon the commission of any offence, you have only to apply to the chief of the constabulary, who forwards your complaint, when an immediate meeting of two or three of the judges takes place, and summary justice is administered. They have a law in force here very much like the system

of the curfew-bell in olden times : at half-past seven o'clock a gun is fired, and at eight o'clock a second gun ; if, after the second gun ; any sailors or natives are detected strolling about, they are seized and taken to the calliboose, when, before they are released, they must pay a fine of two dollars to the queen, or complete so many fathoms of work on the public road. A large body of constables perambulate the whole of the night, and keep a vigilant look out. This regulation does not apply to foreign residents engaged in commerce, to masters of vessels, or gentlemen visitors ; but if any *loafers*, sailors, or natives, are detected strolling after the second gun is fired, they are pounced upon and dragged off. All the roads, dams, and other public works, are executed by those under sentence who have been unable to pay their fines. Drunkenness supplies the country with most convict labour ; as, though spirits are prohibited from being landed on the island, yet the natives express the juice from oranges and some other fruits, and let it ferment in the sun, which produces a most intoxicating liquor ; and numbers are daily added to the list of those doomed to work for their country's good. A constable inspects and measures their work, and if it is done carelessly, or in a superficial manner, they are compelled to undo what they have done, and commence again.

In almost every village there is a church or chapel, the missionaries having succeeded in putting down many of their ancient rites and ceremonies. They have reasoned or ridiculed them out of many of their superstitious customs and notions, and in their stead,

have substituted the forms of our worship, which have certainly a more harmless tendency; for the Tahitians, like the New Zealanders, are fond of assembling in bodies; and there is a peculiar charm in their newly acquired power, of being able, in the same moment of time, by the aid of books, to give utterance to the same sounds and words. They seem to understand little, and to care less, about the principles of the Christian creed. The missionaries have conferred benefits upon them, by teaching them many useful arts, and by suggesting laws for the maintenance of order and the preservation of property, which have aided in putting a stop to the bloody wars that so frequently broke out amongst them in former days. The heads of the island have the discrimination to appreciate these services, and the policy to support and encourage the missionaries,—so that the latter are feared even by those who apply the word missionary as a term of reproach to another party. Moreover, it is known that the missionaries greatly influence every new act or law; and their power, though not ostensible, is dreaded in proportion to its unseen but widely felt presence.

A church-meeting is held every morning, when the reading-desk is occupied by one or other of the native teachers. Their singing is pleasing; they appear to have ears finely attuned to music, and some of the females possess voices of the most silvery sweetness and delicacy. I have been present in their houses when five or six have commenced singing together: no harsh discordant notes came jarring on the ear, but their voices have blended

with the most perfect harmony, superior to the performances of many tutored singers.

In former days the natives worshipped idols of wood and stone; and they had atua, or spirit chiefs, who used, from some unknown caprice, to select animals of the brute creation and exalt them into deities. A shark was no uncommon object of their adoration; and the superstition with regard to this voracious monster of the deep still exists. Four or five years ago a chief was drowned off the reef at the north-east end of the island, and shortly after a monstrous shark appeared about the spot. It has continually showed itself in the same place since. The natives say it is the shark we saw on pulling ashore to ascertain the harbour. They hold it in fear and veneration, and assert that it is their drowned chief. There are one or two similar avatas occasionally seen between the reefs of Moorea and Tahiti. When a canoe capsizes and lives are lost, the natives will pretend to point out the exact spot where the accident occurred, and where the bodies might be found; and they will tell you it was so ordered by the avata of that locality, who required the services of those that were drowned.

It was the custom to immolate human beings to their deities; and their prayer-meetings, or morais, were held with the most solemn privacy. It was instant death for any one to be seen where they were holding their barbarous rites; and a tale of horror is told which took place at one of their meetings worthy only of the Roman Brutus. A child had strayed from its mother till it had unconsciously approached the forbidden precincts; sud-

denly it spied its father amongst those assembled, and ran and threw its arms around his neck. The hapless father rose, and, though two or three voices were faintly heard remonstrating against his imposing upon himself the dreadful task of sacrificing his own child, yet, knowing if he did not he would lose "caste," and no longer hold the same importance with his tribe, he caught his unfortunate infant by the feet, dashed its brains out against a stone, and sternly cast its lifeless body into the midst of the assembly.

When a day of sacrifice was appointed, a stone in the shape of a pestle was sent as the deadly symbol to the intended victim; and so utterly useless was all resistance—so certain the doom of all who received the fatal warning—that they invariably resigned themselves to their fate without a murmur and without a struggle. The eyes and heart of the victim were plucked out, and first presented to the king or chief ruler, who having mimicked the motions of eating them, they were carried away and laid upon the altar of their deity.

One thing which struck me as being peculiar in the character of the natives was, that though extremely watchful and jealous of their wives with their own people, and quick and deadly in their revenge when they had just cause for suspicion, yet with Europeans they appear alike careless and indifferent, and will even bargain for the disposal of their wives. I inquired of one how he accounted for this paradoxical behaviour. His answer was, "When a 'papa' takes one of our wives, he

makes her a present, passes on his way, and thinks no more about her; but it is very different with one of our own people, for he would be continually hovering about her, and would perhaps ultimately succeed in stealing her affections from her husband." The legal punishment for adultery, if the crime is committed by a single man, is a fine of ten hogs to be paid to the husband; and the latter may repudiate his wife and marry again. If the adulterer is a married man, he is compelled to pay ten hogs to the husband he has injured, and the participator in his guilt must pay ten hogs to his wronged wife; and it is optional with the injured parties to be divorced or not from their faithless mates. The unmarried girls have a custom of conversing with flowers not unlike the Orientals. If a coolness has sprung up between a young pair, the female will separate a flower partially down the centre. One half of the split flower is intended to represent the man, and the other half the woman; and it is meant typically to imply that, though separate bodies, they are joined together at the heart. If the lover puts the flower in his hair, it is a sign that he wishes to preserve her favour; but if he tears it asunder, it is a token that he has lost his regard for her, and wishes to be entirely separated.

The natives manufacture a species of cloth called tappa, which is the only article of domestic manufacture I have seen amongst them. It is made from the bark of the bread-fruit tree, and a tree called by them ora (the paper-mulberry). The inside lining of the bark is stripped off in long or short narrow

strips, just as they can separate it, and it is left to soak some time in water. When steeped sufficiently, they lay it, one piece upon another, on a log of timber squared for the purpose; the under part hollowed to give it a spring, and the upper surface rendered perfectly smooth and level. Thirty or forty females, with mallets of heavy wood, having four grooved sides, each side increasing in firmness of groove, then beat it out to the width required. They first use the coarsest sides of their mallets, and so on progressively. Sometimes they will beat the tappa over dozens of times; and, by adding fresh bark, they can increase it to any length or width. They are highly dexterous in the use of their mallets; and their beat is a regular tone, which they vary at pleasure. Occasionally two or three couple will start up and dance whilst the others beat; but the missionaries have looked upon this with a disapproving eye, as tending to debauchery; and now, if they are detected, they are brought before the judges and fined. This arises from their ancient dances, which might have commenced in decency, but which invariably terminated in wanton abandonment.

The primitive national colours of Tahiti are red and yellow; but their present flag, introduced to them by Captain Laws, of H. M. S. *Satellite*, is red, white, and red, in horizontal bars, the white being the centre one. They are passionately fond of the colours red and yellow; and they have a singular way of manufacturing a red dye, described to me by one of the missionaries. They take the berries and leaves of a certain plant, called by them *mati*, and upon every leaf they express

the juice of a berry, which does not yield more than one or two drops. The leaves are placed one on the other, and when a sufficient number is collected, they knead them together; and the combined qualities of the juices expressed after this process produce a dye of a beautiful red, which, taking the leaves or berries separately, is not to be obtained. The native canoes something resemble those of Rotumah, and the Feejee Islands, but are more carelessly built. They have no very large ones: those intended for fishing outside the reef are provided with a long curving bowsprit, secured by a stay to the mast, from which they fish or cast their nets; their sails are of lateen form, and stout brown calico has entirely superseded the mats with which they were formerly constructed. They are expert fishermen, and have numberless devices for capturing the finny tribe. I was highly amused with one of them. They prepare light buoyant pieces of wood, about the size of an ordinary schoolboy's peg-top, but shaped like an hour glass, with a cone-formed bottom. Round these they wind their lines, the baited hook depending a few inches from the bottom of the float, and the lines being prevented from unreeling by a false hitch. In boisterous weather, when the heavy surf is thundering on the beach, they throw these floats just beyond the breakers; and when the bait is seized, the hitch is cast loose, and, the line running out, the float serves as a drogue, to deaden the way of the largest fish to be taken in this manner.

Their houses are neatly built, and have a very

pretty appearance. Bamboos, or uprights of the white puran, about six feet high, and secured together by an encircling band form the enclosing wall. The rafters meeting the ridge pole are also generally of the white puran; and the covering is a thatch made of the dried leaf of the pandanus. The leaves are bent over wands a fathom long, the edges overlapping, held fast by wooden skewers. The thatch thus prepared is laid upon the rafters, commencing from the bottom, and it is secured to a vine running from the top to the bottom of each rafter; but at every four feet, the sinnett, with which the thatch is secured, for greater security, is made to take a double turn round the rafters. It is exceedingly neat, as, in a well-thatched house, each overlaying wand is not more than an inch above the other. When the summit of the ridge pole is reached, it is rendered weather-proof by a top coating of peculiar wiry grass, with which grass they also cover their floors. They are cleanly in their houses; and nothing better for airy coolness and lightness could be adopted for the climate. Some of the better class are even elegant; the rafters and uprights supporting the ridge pole being ornamented with matting of variegated patterns, neatly bound with sinnett.

Their food is cooked in the open air, after the fashion of the New Zealanders: a hole is dug in the ground, and a fire kindled in it; stones are heaped into the fire; and when these are rendered red hot, and the wood has smouldered to embers, layers of grass or green leaves are laid over the stones, and the food intended

to be cooked is placed upon them; a fresh layer of grass intervening between each variety of food. There is then a finishing cover of grass or leaves, and earth is heaped over all, effectually confining the heat; and in the course of half an hour or an hour your food is beautifully cooked in its own natural juices, there being no escape for them. The elephantiasis, termed by the natives *féfé*, is very predominant. Some have attributed it to the people being continually in and out of the water, and to their rushing from one extreme of temperature to the other. Frequently, after having been up the mountains, and returning heavily laden with bananas and plantains, beneath the scorching rays of the sun, they will jump into canoes, pull off to the reef, and there remain for hours fishing, now in the water, and now in the canoe; yet the chiefs, who scarcely do any thing but eat, drink, and sleep, and are rarely exposed to the vicissitudes which mark the daily lives of the common people, seem to suffer most from this painful and unsightly disorder. The natives themselves do not pretend to assign anything in particular as the cause of it; they tell you it is incurable, that they have periodical attacks of pain, and that when the fit comes on their sufferings are agonising in the extreme. They eagerly seek for wines and spirits on these occasions, — I suppose, from the desire to drown their pangs in intoxication. Englishmen have been afflicted with it, but have had every symptom of the disease removed on their returning to a colder climate. I do not know of many diseases incidental

to the country ; but they are cursed with a very foul one from their intercourse with Europeans, which, from ignorance, neglect, and improper treatment, has become very general, and of a virulent nature ; otherwise they are a healthy race, and are generally long lived.

CHAP. X.

A Pearling Expedition. — The Island of Maitea. — Chain Island. Engage Divers. — Neingo Neingo. — Bow Island. — Amanu. — Entrance to Bow Island. — The Fārā Tree. — A Morai. — Custom of making Offerings to the Spirit and to the Manes of the Departed. — The Manner of Diving. — Finish Diving. — The Bow Islanders. — Visits Agatan, a Savage Island. — Words not Deeds. — Timidity of the Divers. — Singular Ceremonies. — Valorous Deportment of the Interpreter. — Takumē or Walchonsky Island. — Risks which the Writer had unconsciously encountered. — Raroia. — Tainga. — Makimo. — Katin. — Migratory Disposition of the Natives. — Faiti and Tania. — Red Pearls. — Advantages which the Cocoa-nut Tree confers upon the Chain Islanders. — Their invading Disposition. — War with Angatan averted. — Character of the Natives. — Get under weigh for Manilla. — Spring a Leak and put back. — Alter the Voyage, and clear out for Valparaiso. — Sight the Andes. — Narrowly escape being wrecked. — The Port of Valparaiso. — The Town or Almadral. — Sunday Practices. — Saints' Days. — Road to Santiago, the Capital. — Agricultural Instruments. — Muleteers. — Country Waggoners. — Costume of the Oxgoaders. — A mounted Wassan. — Mode of Life common to the Muleteers and Carriage Drivers. — Santiago. — Anniversary Rejoicings. — Anecdote of an English Equestrian. — Equestrian Skill of the Chilenos. — The Maypo. — Its Bridge. — Traditionary Saying of the Indians. — The Almeida. — Signoritas. — Ball-rooms. — Gota. — The Theatre. — Quiltota. — Exports of Chili. — Foreign Commerce. — Extraordinary Requirement to render written Documents valid. — A Case in point. — Périodical Visits of Small-pox. —

Shocks of Earthquakes common. — Aboriginal Race apparently extinct in the Neighbourhood.

“There are jewels rich and rare
In the caverns of the deep ;
There its pearly treasures sleep.” *Song.*

February 12th. — LEAVING my partner in Tahiti to conduct what trade he could with the whalers, which now began to flock in, I this day started for the Paumotu Islands, or the Low Islands of the Dangerous Archipelago, to try and collect a cargo of mother-of-pearl shells, with the pearls to be obtained therefrom. I engaged an interpreter, agreeing to give him one thousand dollars on his entering into a penal bond, guaranteeing, with a certain number of men, to provide me with fifty tons of shell, to be dived for in my presence, with the pearl to be obtained from them, &c. &c. &c., in the space of three months, from the time of my starting till the time of my return. The divers to be employed in procuring the shell are fed principally on tihoho, which is bread-fruit buried in pits, and kept till it becomes like kneaded dough, and of a sour flavour. We went in the vessel to every likely place in Tahiti to try and obtain a supply ; but so many years have passed away since there has been any call made for it, that the natives have left off preserving more than is necessary for their own immediate wants : we therefore bore away for Chain Island.

February 16th. — Ran close alongside the island

of Maitea, a small spot of high shelving land about sixty miles due east from Tahiti. We observed groves of cocoa-nut trees at the water's edge; landing is difficult; no anchorage; the island is used as a place of banishment for great offenders. We had very light baffling winds, and it was *February 23rd* before we sighted Chain Island, which deserves its name. It is a broken cluster of coral sandy patches, densely covered with cocoa-nut trees, enclosing an extensive lagoon; there is no roadstead or anchorage; and so deep is the water close to, that the largest vessel that ever floated might run her jib-boom over the partly submerged coral reef girding these singular patches, without striking. The passage for boats to the shore is hazardous, even with the assistance of natives; but without their aid, to one unknown to the coast, landing would be impracticable. A canoe came off to us, and, taking one of the natives from her to serve as pilot, we made for the shore with our own boat. Twenty or thirty natives were in readiness to seize the boat the moment she neared the rocks; and without our sustaining the slightest damage, we went over on the top of a swell, and were hauled three or four hundred yards over a sharp coral reef and landed in safety on the white sand at the south-eastern, or weather extremity of the island. The broadest part of the widest link of land that forms the chain, is not more than half a mile in extent; and were it not for the density of the cocoa-nut trees, the land is so low, that in hazy weather you would be apt to make your first ac-

quaintance with it on finding yourself ashore. The only edible vegetable production the island yields is the cocoa-nut; and yet it is thickly peopled, there not being less than 2000 native residents. They rear pigs in great abundance; but their diet is almost solely the cocoa-nut, which, in its different stages of ripeness, provides them with both meat and drink,—the pigs being reserved to exchange for calico and other articles with the ships that occasionally touch there. Notwithstanding the poorness of their living, the natives are strong and hearty, differing in no respect from the Tahitians in appearance, excepting that they are coarser, and a shade darker, which is to be accounted for by the greater heat of their climate, and from the refraction of the sun's rays on the glistening sands. To a depth of eight or ten feet the soil is literally composed of nothing but coral debris; after that you pass through a strata of sandstone, and then come, so they tell you, to a black earth. I saw many abandoned pits, constructed with great labour, where the natives formerly cultivated tarro; but they have allowed them to tumble in, as the roots were so small that they did not repay the labour of keeping them in order. To judge from the surface, one would be apt to imagine that no decomposition of vegetable matter had ever taken place there, yet cocoa-nut trees flourish luxuriantly as thickly as they can grow on the whole cluster of hummocks.

The island lies nearly SSE. and NNW. Crossing the link on which we landed, we entered

a canoe in the basin, and paddled to its opposite extremity. It may be about fifteen miles in length, and eight in the broadest part. The natives traded readily with us, and we purchased 50 or 60 hogs, 6000 cocoa-nuts, and a number of pearls. We had no difficulty in engaging divers, making an agreement with thirty of them at so many fathoms of cloth per month, besides taking a lot of lads to assist in opening and cleaning the shells. They expressed their satisfaction at our not having brought tihoho, as they say they prefer cocoa-nuts with a little biscuit, and an occasional mess of pork. The native name for Chain Island is Anā.

March 5th.—Passed the island of Lostanges, by the natives called Neingo Neingo. In Arrowsmith's chart it is laid down as a narrow patch stretching due east and west, and only five miles in length; whereas it is similar in character to Chain Island, without its cocoa-nut trees, being broken ridges of land, a few feet only above the level of the water, enclosing a lagoon; and its length is from ten to twelve miles: its breadth varies. When about the centre of the island, from the mast-head we could see, in faint perspective, the trees on the opposite side of the lagoon. It is a nasty place to make at nightfall. At the south end there was a gap for nearly two miles without a break upon it. We stood within a cable's length of it before discovering the sunken barrier of sand with its detached patches of red rock, their points just grinning above the water. The island is uninhabited; there are no cocoa-nut trees upon it, nor trees bearing any de-

scription of food ; the resuscitated patches are principally covered with a vividly green low shrub, which gave to the passing breeze a pleasant odour, not unlike that of new-mown hay.

March 10th. — The evening of this day saw us close in with the land at the south-western extremity of the Bow Island of Captain Cook, called by the French *La Harp*, and by the natives *Heyow*, spelt in the orthography of their language *Hao*. We were ranging along the coast to the northward, about two miles from the shore, when we observed four natives swimming off to us ; we hove our topsails aback, and took them in. Shortly afterwards seven more black objects were descried making towards us ; but as we had good way upon the vessel again, and more hands on board than we could accommodate, we hailed for them to go back again. I never saw such powerful swimmers.

March 11th. — At daylight we were off *Moller Island*, by the natives termed *Amānu*. *Bow Island* being our destination, we tacked and stood for it. These islands are not more than fifteen miles asunder, and are lagoon islands, similar to those already described. *Bow Island* is between thirty and forty miles long, and lies in a south-east and north-west direction. The entrance to the lagoon is by a narrow passage at the north-north-western end ; it has a rapid tidal current, the time of flow and ebb being subject to lunar influence. At 11 A. M. we went in one of the boats to examine the entrance ; the tide was setting out so strong, we could scarcely contend against it, and the natives recommended our waiting

till after 12 o'clock before attempting to take the vessel in, as it would then be slack water. We followed their advice, and entered the lagoon in safety, being favoured with a leading wind. There is a slight overfall in the passage, and we shot through it so quickly we had scarcely time for soundings: three fathoms I believe to be its shoalest water. We steered for the south-eastern part of the lagoon, the report being that shells were most abundant there. The lagoon is full of coral knolls, which can only be avoided by a bright look-out aloft. The broken ledges of scarcely habitable earth are not so broad as those of Chain Island; there are a few groves of cocoa-nut trees, and the ground is covered with dead coral. The natives live principally on fish and the fruit of the pandanus, which here grows abundantly, and is by them called *fārā*. The fruit is a collection of cones, which they separate. Very little of it is edible, but each cone contains three or four white kernels of the bigness of a plum-stone kernel; and after the small portion of esculent matter has been gnawed from the inner end of the cone, the natives may be seen, for hours at a stretch, pounding away at them to extract the kernels. I imagine they contain a deal of nourishment, as the people, far from being a puny race, are stout and robust, and *fārā* is the only vegetable production they have as daily food. I found breaking the cones hard labour, as it jars every muscle in your body. Use, and the absence of more easily acquired food, has reconciled the natives to the exercise; and groups may be seen pounding from morning till night. They live in wretched little huts,

and are not much better provided with domestic comforts than the blacks of New South Wales.

There is a morai, or place of sacrifice, where, in former times, human beings were immolated to the heathen deities, on the eastern side of the passage. Various tumuli still remain — rude monuments of broken coral — and the natives are still in the habit of making offerings to the Tupapan (spirit of the dead); but when I taxed them with it, they exhibited symptoms of shame, and denied it. We saw the remains of some large turtle, and the skeletons of fish, suspended to the trees about the morai, and lying on many of the altar-like erections. One old man, less sophisticated than the others, told me, with much *naïveté*, that they did not dare eat the turtle, as it was sacred food reserved as offerings to the Vairua (spirit). In the same way, on the death of an individual they hang over the grave a calabash of water with some fish for the Tupapan; nor could I make them sensible that the water evaporated by time, and that birds and maggots consumed the fish. No, they say, the Tupapan comes at night and partakes of the refreshment: nor will they believe otherwise; and they have the greatest dread at approaching their burial-places at night, fearing lest they should meet the Tupapan. All the women residing at the spot where I landed assembled and greeted me with a dance. They stood in a row, and sang in concert to a singularly wild chant; keeping time with the hands and feet, and accompanying the song with extraordinary lascivious movements of the body, impossible to be

conceived by Europeans. Their songs are all of a gross and sensual character.

The morning following the eve of our coming to an anchorage, we again got under weigh, to proceed further down the lagoon, and our divers started with the boats. They returned with but few shells in the evening, owing to the long pull they had had; afterwards we averaged a ton of shells per diem, but we added to our gang of divers nearly an equal number of Hao Islanders. I accompanied them several times on their diving excursions. At first I was filled with compassion at what appeared to me the distressing nature of their exertions; but observing that they sustained no apparent inconvenience, my sympathy became less excited, and I used to rate them soundly when I came upon them and found them idling. On coming to a stationary anchorage, the divers erected temporary huts for themselves ashore; and their custom was to start away at daybreak for the diving ground, and return to the vessel by three or four o'clock in the afternoon. The times that I accompanied them they were absolutely diving for about six hours; and the only relaxation was pulling from one coral knoll to another, indulging in an occasional smoke by the way, and resting for a few minutes to partake of a little cocoa-nut and dried fish. The coral knolls have about two-feet water on their heads, and the water round them varies from three to twelve fathoms. The knolls are composed of sprouts of coral, which have a growth something like broccoli or the heads of cauliflowers; and the pearl oysters are found attached to, and lying around

these marine productions. On arriving at a reef or knoll, the boat was secured by its painter to a projecting branch, and the divers proceeded to dive from it in all directions; and as they brought up the shells, so they threw them into the shallow water on the knoll, until the shells became scarce, or they became tired and wanted to pull to another station. Shell-fish of various descriptions are attached to and wedged in the coral branches, apparently having grown with their growth. On a still calm day you may see to the bottom at ten or twelve fathoms, and the shell-fish when feeding reflect tints of the most brilliant and beautiful hue; and fish of every conceivable form and colour may be seen sporting in the interstices of the coral branches.

It is a curious sight to watch the divers: with scarcely a movement they will dart to the bottom like an arrow, examine beneath every protruding rock, and, on continuing their investigations, by a simple movement of the arm will propel themselves horizontally through the water, and this at the depth of seven and eight fathoms. I timed several by the watch; and the longest period I knew any of them to keep beneath the water was a minute and a quarter, and there were only two who accomplished this feat. One of them, from his great skill, was nicknamed by his companions the "Ofai" (stone). Rather less than a minute was the usual duration. In fine weather they can see the shells, when, if the water is deep, they dive at an angle for them; and as the shells adhere firmly to the coral by strong beards, it requires no little force to detach them. I was

astonished on one occasion at witnessing a diver, after one or two ineffectual attempts to tear away a large oyster, sink his legs beneath him, and, getting a purchase with his feet against the coral, use both his hands and fairly drag it off. When they dive in very deep water they complain of pains in the ears, and they sometimes come up with their noses bleeding; but it is rarely that you can get them to attempt such diving, as, let the shells be ever so abundant, they will come up and swear there are none; the exertion from the great pressure is too painfully distressing. It has frequently happened, after a set of worn-out divers have sworn that no more shells could be obtained, that a fresh set has come and procured from fifty to sixty tons without difficulty. We had to shift the vessel three times to please the divers, although our so doing made no difference in the quantity or quality of shell procured. The last remove we dropped anchor on the eastern side of the lagoon, six or seven miles from the mouth of the passage; and, accompanied by the interpreter, I went with the gang and roughed it on shore for a fortnight on the opposite side, where it is not safe for vessels to lie. We had great difficulty in inducing the men to continue their work; and they complained bitterly at having quitted the last station, although it was at their own urgent request: they acknowledged the fault was theirs, and confessed that where we now were, shells were not only scarcer, but in deeper water. By dint of bullying and persuasion, we got them to complete their agreement; and in eight weeks' diving we had forty-seven tons of shell,

which, with what I purchased from the Hao Islanders, made about sixty tons in all taken on board. The pearls derived from the shells were principally seed pearl; in the whole lot there was scarcely half a dozen that could be selected worth ten dollars apiece. In this respect I was greatly disappointed; two or three I purchased from the natives were of more value than all of the fifty tons of diving put together. I was not sorry when I found myself on board again. The sails were loosed, the anchor hove apeak, and we were all ready for a start, when the wind chopped round suddenly and blew right in our teeth; and then, for four days we had nearly a stark calm. I was urged to tow the vessel out; but as I found no one willing to insure the risk, I preferred avoiding it by waiting for a shift of wind.

The natives of this island are miserably poor: soil there is none to cultivate; their only fruit or vegetable is the cocoa-nut and fārā; and, as before remarked, the cocoa-nut is not abundant, and the fruit is only partaken of on rare occasions. They have no quadrupeds, save a few wretched dogs which they keep for eating, and a small species of rat which infests the islands in myriads. A small dove, three or four varieties of land birds the size of larks, and no great variety of sea fowl, are the only ornithological specimens I saw; and these the natives take no trouble about. The lagoon is abundantly supplied with an infinite variety of fish, many of which are excellent eating. The dress of the men is a belt round the loins, called a maro, which is passed between the legs and fastened at the back. The women wear simply

a mat, reaching to the knees and girded round their waists; they seemed to me, to be naturally indolent and dirty, and as if they would prefer going with hunger half-appeased without labour, than satiate it by active exertions. The greater share of the duties devolves upon the women. They are heavy sleepers, and can pass away an immense deal of time in that way. I think it is a habit they have acquired for allaying the gnawings of hunger. They seem to prefer being engaged in downright hard labour for us, on the chances of what food or nick-nacks we might give them, to relying on their own resources; at least my observation for two months leads me to suppose so, as we had thirteen or fourteen shell-openers and cleaners on board, who used to work much harder than ever I saw them do for themselves on shore; and we might have commanded the services of almost every person upon the island. On many of the land patches there are holes of fresh water; but they are so small that water can only be baled out with a calabash or cocoa-nut shell, and the supply is soon exhausted. Can they be springs, or do they arise from the percolation of evaporated moisture?

Our Chain Islanders hinted to us, that to the northward of Bow Island and Amanu was an island called Angatan, that had never been visited by white men. They stated that its inhabitants were in their primitive condition, and that they wore pearls strung round their necks and in their ears. Many large double canoes from Anā had made the attempt to reach it, but not one had been successful. This

intelligence induced me, when a wind sprang up that liberated us from our confinement, to bear away for it, in the hope of picking up some of these necklaces and ear ornaments. Our natives say they derived their information from a few half-starved beings who got blown from Angatan in a canoe many years ago.

May 14th. — It being too dark this evening when we sighted the island, we stood off and on till morning. Our divers, who had been all agog to get there, now that their wishes were about being gratified began to exhibit signs of fear and uneasiness. They insinuated that the people were very ferocious, that they ate men, and were terrible warriors; however, as I determined on landing, they requested me to allow them to make a first essay, to ascertain if they could hold intercommunication with them. To this I consented; and two boats were lowered, with seventeen men in them and a few muskets, to check any attempt at a surprise. We had sailed round two-thirds of the island and had seen no vestige of a human being, and we began to surmise that it was uninhabited; but after some of our fellows had landed and were walking along the beach, we observed some naked red skins stealing through the trees. By and by they showed themselves, and a parley ensued. Either party seemed frightened of the other, and what communing they had was at a safe distance. In about half an hour our heroes returned to the boats; and then we observed that the stranger natives were armed with long spears, which they had laid on the beach during the interview.

One of our divers who could talk a little English

told me that there “were plenty man—too muchee makee fight—plenty spear—eat man. I say, captain, lookee out!” said he, with a foreboding shake of the head. Not at all discouraged by his ominous frowns and misgivings, I persisted in going ashore. The interpreter went in one boat, and I in the other. It was agreed that I should land, and that the interpreter should lie off, to guard against accident or treachery; not that I entertained feelings of apprehension, as I believed all the talk of our fellows arose from their own groundless fears. On nearing the shore only two natives could be seen; and they ran along the beach waving their arms, and pointing out the best place for us to land. Both had spears in their hands. The beach is flanked by a flat coral reef, and consequently there is a heavy sand upon it; and before we dared approach with the boat, the oldest native in her jumped overboard and, swimming on shore, commenced tokens of peace and amity; the opposite party continuing very coy. Whilst they were in the midst of their gesticulations, a favourable swell setting in, despite the entreaties of the men, I ran along the thwarts and jumped on land. This at once settled the matter; the stranger natives caught up their spears and retreated to the bush, “staying no further question;” and as they fled they were jabbering out to us in amazement. I called after them, but it only accelerated their flight; so I cautiously followed, gun in hand, and finger on the trigger. All the natives from the boats, with the exception of two in each, to keep them at a safe distance, on seeing me land, jumped into the sea and swam to me, earnestly

entreating me to stop. All my endeavours to reassure the flying fugitives were unavailing; they disappeared in the thick underwood, and I thought it prudent to come to a halt. There was a tolerably large canoe hauled up under the trees, and, lest it should prove a cover for parties concealing themselves, I went and examined it. But I saw no signs, nor did I hear any movements indicative of hostility. I encouraged some of the men to go with me a short distance into the bush. They protested against going too far, as they vehemently declared they could detect traces of a recent human sacrifice. All was quiet; we shouted and halloed, but not a soul appeared. I was at a regular nonplus, and at a loss how to proceed. The fears of my companions would not allow me to incur the risk of marching through the island, as I knew they would fly on the first signal of alarm. Whilst meditating the best plan to adopt, a lot of armed men was seen coming along the beach skirting the wood. I immediately started to meet them, on observing which, they appeared to pause in alarm. The two foremost of the party held green boughs in their hands, which I considered the emblem of friendly intentions; and as they continued to stand and wave them, I returned to my followers and handed them my gun, and making one of them give up his musket, I desired him to follow me; which he did, with many misgivings and entreaties of "Captain, lookee out! Too muchee man! Plenty spear! Lookee out! Lookee out!" Disregarding all that his fears impelled him to say, I walked directly up to those who held the green boughs, throwing up my arms to show that

I was weaponless. Upon this, the one who afterwards proved to be the head chief, seized my right hand with a nervous grasp, and my left was secured in a vice-like gripe by the other. Thinks I, "You've done it now, young fellow." I was fixed without the power of resistance; and as I cast my eye over the wild-looking savages, armed with their long spears and clubs set with sharks' teeth, for a moment I yielded to the belief that my hour was come. Preserving outward composure, I turned my head and called to the Chain Islander to come and interpret for me. In fear and trembling he drew nigh, when the man who held my left hand set it at liberty to seize the diver's; but my relinquished digit was instantly pounced upon by another of the party. The chief addressed a few words to Tiemu, the diver, who seemed to offer explanation. My hands were then extended, and the whole party joined theirs over them. In this position the chief favoured us with an oration, as energetically wild and savage as can be imagined. At the end he broke a young cocoa-nut; and putting one hand to the back of my head, with the other he raised the nut to my lips, a green bough being waved over me. Tiemu then repeated some words after the chief; and the ceremony was wound up by all, but myself, dropping on one knee and celebrating the event in a chant to the gods. Tiemu explained to them, as well as he could, who I was, and my object in coming there. Their curiosity was unbounded; it was with difficulty I could induce them to free my hands, as each party wanted to secure me as his friend, *in case I had any thing to*

give. At the time, I attributed the tightness of their gripe to a *very different motive.*

I was the first white man they had ever touched, and they examined my naked breast and arms, forcing up the sleeves of my coat and opening my shirt bosom. The light colour and softness of my hair was another object of admiration: in short, my dress and appearance generally was a subject of unmitigated wonder; and their first impression was, that I was a spirit that had come from the clouds. In the course of an hour we were all as thick as inkle-weavers; and our people were as jolly amongst them, singing, dancing, and laughing, as if they had known them for a century. Many curious ceremonies were used at the first greetings, and much rubbing of noses and embracing took place. Of course I submitted to nothing of the kind in my own person, Tiemu having taken care to let them know the greatness of my power, and the difference of the habits of the white men. This increased their awe, and put me on maintaining a reserved bearing; and as the crowd around us began to thicken, and many held spears and clubs, I pointed to them with signs of disapprobation, and desired that they might be put away. They instantly complied with my request, by darting their spears into the neighbouring bushes.

The Paumutuan dialect differs from the Tahitian, though most of the Paumutuans understand the latter. Tiemu informed me that the "talk" of the people of Angatan is similar to what was anciently used in Anā (Chain Island) before they had seen any white men, or intercourse was so common with

Tahiti. He had great difficulty, he said, in recalling his memory, though doubtless his perceptions were quickened and rendered more acute by his bodily terror. Ignorance of their habits might lead to fatal and irremediable mistakes; but as far as I saw, the natives of Angatan are a harmless inoffensive race. They are what is poetically termed "Nature's unsophisticated children," which, in common parlance, signifies, that they are as they came from the hands of God, with very little assistance from art. They go all but naked, are particularly wild and savage-looking, with matted dishevelled hair, thick mustachios on the upper lip, and long beards. They did not appear so stout as the other islanders, but, generally speaking, taller; several were nearly seven feet high. There was no tattooing on any of them; and their implements were similar to those of most savage nations, constructed of wood and bone. I distributed a few articles amongst them, which they seized with avidity; in return they brought me cocoa-nuts, a mat or two, and some other little trifles. I saw no pearls amongst them, nor could they comprehend what the divers meant when they asked if they had any. Only four or five of their women came to see us — tall reedy-looking beings, but with rather a soft and pleasing expression of countenance. They seemed lost in amazement, and scarcely kept their eyes off me during my stay. They had an evident inclination to fondle me, and I was obliged to submit to their resting their arms on my shoulders, and allowing them to play with my hair. There was nothing on the island to purchase;

and having made my gifts, and somewhat disarmed their jealous fears, I returned on board again. I lost more than half the interest of my interview with them for want of a proper interpreter. After the league of friendship had been solemnly ratified between us, and we were on the most social terms, I requested my interpreter to come ashore, and assist in explaining all that was going on. But arguments and persuasion had no effect; he would not venture his fat sides out of the boat; and when I reproached him for his cowardice, he tried to excuse himself by saying, "No, no, no, sir, you'd never catch me ashore; but goodness me, sir! if they'd killed you, sir, I was determined to have revenged your death." He exhibited a curious proof of the way he intended avenging my fall. After good-fellowship was established, my fellows had stacked their muskets on the beach, more fully to enjoy the new-formed league. But the gallant interpreter, fearing that they might fall into the hands of the Angatan natives, made one of the men from his boat swim off with them to him; so that had we sustained an attack, we should have been slaughtered without the means of self-defence, and beyond the reach of any harm he could have effected with the muskets. We sailed round the island, which is not above fourteen miles in circumference. Its central lagoon was small, and I thought I detected a boat passage to it on the south-east side. We landed with the boats on the north-west. It is the island called by the Russians Ayrackcheef, and is accurately laid down in Arrow-smith's chart of the Low and Society Islands.

May 16th. — Between seventy and eighty miles due west from Angatan is Walchonsky, another lagoon island surveyed by the Russians; its native name is Takūme. At 8 A. M. this morning we were about eight miles to the north-east of it. At 10 I had the boats lowered and went on shore. The island is nearly fourteen miles in extent, and the lagoon is in no part broader than between two and three miles. It has no harbour, and is nearly surrounded by a bold coral reef, with a flat surface; the best landing is at the north end. It has some beautiful groves of cocoa-nut trees, and is rather a pretty looking spot. Its inhabitants have frequent intercourse with Anā, and vessels from Tahiti have had boats diving there. Two of the double canoes from Anā were then lying there; and it transpired, that before we called to engage the divers, one of these canoes had started for Angatan, the other following soon after our departure for Hao; and it is rather singular, after so many years of bootless trial, that both should succeed in reaching Angatan at this time. The first canoe gave a very vague and unsatisfactory account of their proceedings: they had made the island, but seeing a great number of armed people assembled, were afraid to land, and there was a whispered rumour that they had wantonly fired upon and killed four of the unoffending islanders. The second canoe had only left Angatan the day before we arrived there; they gave us their story with several contradictory versions. One of their party, however, got killed; and another was speared in his back and right arm, and with the remainder

of his companions escaped with difficulty. I cross-questioned them. Their description of the island and its people was accurate enough, but their particulars of the affray were confused and mystified; and it was the unanimous opinion of our divers that they had brought the punishment upon themselves. This may account for the timidity of the islanders when we landed, and for every one of them being armed, even to the women. No doubt they fancied we had come to inflict retribution for the man they had killed. On the fall of their comrade, the Chain Islanders made a precipitate retreat to their canoe, which they say they gained in an almost exhausted state. They saw the Angatanians lay their dead companion across their spears, and carry him inland; and they asserted their conviction that he was eaten. This accords exactly with our own people's notions, that a recent human sacrifice had been committed. I staid at Takūme four or five hours, trading for pearls and other island productions, and then stood away west-south-west. We sighted Barclay de Tolly Island, recognised by the natives as Raroia: it has an extensive lagoon, and its coral ledges are much broken.

May 17th.—Holtz Island, by the Russians called Yermoeloff, and by the natives Tainga, is laid down in latitude $16^{\circ} 24'$ S. and longitude $143^{\circ} 12'$ W. Our longitude corresponded, but we thought its position was placed six miles too far to the southward. It is a lagoon island. At this time there were no inhabitants on it, and I did not heave to.

May 18th.—Early this morning we made a long

low island which the natives called Makimo. We lay alongside it nearly becalmed the whole day, the vessel just having steerage way. It ranges nearly east and west, is upwards of thirty miles long, and there are two ship passages through its northern belt of coral into the lagoon. There are but few inhabitants on it, and I did not land. Its longitude corresponded with our observations, but it is also laid down six or seven miles too far to the southward. At 3 A. M. of *May 19th*, a breeze sprang up, and at daylight we discovered ourselves considerably to the northward of Sacken Island, known to the islanders as Katin — dangerous land to make, from the wide gaps in the ledges encircling its lagoon. In many of the broken intervals, the sand and rocks were nearly level with the water. Here and there are occasional clumps of foliage. The lagoon is large: there is a clear ship entrance to it on the north-east side and another on the west-north-west.

The inhabitants of nearly all the Paumotu Islands are of roving migratory habits; they wander from island to island in their large double canoes, so that at times an island will appear to be thickly peopled, and at others scarcely an individual is to be found. The latter was the case with Katin in the present instance, and was more than once so with Bow or Hao Island during my stay there; and unless a person dwelt amongst them long enough to be able to recognise features, he would be apt to return a very false estimate of the island population. The centre of Katin is laid down in latitude $16^{\circ} 16' S.$; it is at least six miles too far to the southward. The

longitude we found to be correct, viz. $144^{\circ} 19' W.$ From Katin we took a direct course for Chain Island, and sailed between Myloradwitch and Chichagoff, known to the natives as Faiti and Tania. The channel between them is about ten miles broad. They are both lagoon islands, differing little from those already noticed. Their positions on the chart corresponded with our observations, only Faiti is represented as being the larger of the two, which is incorrect; Tania being of considerably greater extent. The latter has three entrances to its lagoon on its eastern side. The wind being fair, and our provisions low, I would not delay to land on either of the last-named islands, particularly as our divers apprised us that the inhabitants were all away. A singular peculiarity attaches to the pearls procured from the shells of a small island, forty or fifty miles to the north-west of Katin, called by the natives Taiero, they being invariably of a dark or orange-red color.

May 20th. — At 1 A. M. we sighted Anā, and made short tacks till dawn. On the charts this island is laid down twelve or thirteen miles too far to the westward; and if we had not known this, we should have had a troublesome beat back again. Its latitude was correct, and we made its longitude $145^{\circ} 28' W.$ instead of $145^{\circ} 41'.$

I was more struck with the appearance of Anā or Chain Island on my return to it. The south-east point is densely crowded with cocoa-nut trees, and the land being so low and flat, they appeared of one altitude. The whole scene, from the sombre hue of the grey

dawn, and the waving plume-like tops of the trees, reminded one of a gigantic hearse covered with its funeral pall and dark nodding feathers.

The Chain Islanders are alive to the advantage the cocoa-nut tree gives them over their neighbours; and though so wonderfully abundant, they are continually planting them. From the great superiority in the number of its inhabitants, Chain Island takes the lead of all the islands in the Archipelago, and the other islanders are looked upon by them in little better light than we would look upon dogs. Wherever they go, they commit the most wanton excesses with impunity; for if the injured party should dare to rise in their own defence, on the news reaching Anā, they collect an overwhelming force in their large double canoes, of which they have from fifty to sixty, and take fearful vengeance. Some years ago they overran nearly every island in the group, burning and slaying all before them; rooting up, and destroying every cocoa-nut tree standing, which accounts for their scarcity at the other islands. It is only of late years that the scattered remnants have been allowed to return in quiet to their homes and renew their plantations; and the poor fellows are in absolute dread of visits from the Chain Islanders, for they are like locusts, and almost commit as much devastation. I heard that these impudent fellows once contemplated the conquest of Tahiti, and gave the old king a fright. He was not the most valiant of men in his own person, but a clever diplomatist; and he averted hostilities by ceding certain points of land in Tahiti for the use of the Paumutuans whenever they

chose to take up a *temporary sojourn* upon the island; and by this stroke of policy he got them to acknowledge his supremacy.

I kept the worthies pretty well under restraint, but I am conscious that many petty impositions took place which I could not prevent; the aggrieved party thinking it better perhaps to put up with trifling inconveniences than risk complaining to me, which might provoke a serious quarrel when I was no longer by to protect them. Much debate was held amongst the leading men as to fitting out a fleet for an attack upon Angatan; but I set my face against it, and opposed every argument in my power. I was listened to with deference, as they looked upon me as braver than their own people. One of the divers, too, was an influential man, and he strongly sided with me. We caused the parties to be re-examined, and not a doubt remained in the minds of the assembly, that their own countrymen had been the aggressors; and they faithfully assured me that they would drop all idea of making war upon them.

I could not avoid being struck with the selfish illiberal dealings of the Paumutuans one towards the other: arising perhaps from the poverty of their food, and the precarious way in which they obtain it. Even when it puts them to no inconvenience, they will not accomodate each other; nor does it seem to be expected amongst them. It is literally "every man for himself;" and I have frequently known our shell-openers compelled to swim ashore, in rough blowy weather, because the *owner* of a canoe would not allow them to take a passage.

I expressed my astonishment at such illiberality amongst people so few in number, and who must be all more or less related by kindred ties. They only laughed, and said it was the custom of the country. It was represented that the Paumutuans were far more strict in their observance of the marriage rites than the Tahitians; all I can say is, that at Hao there was not one who would not sell his wife or sister to our sailors for a shirt or a yard or two of print.

June 16th.—Got under weigh for Manilla, intending proceeding through the various islands to the westward, making a running trading voyage of it.

June 18th.—Sprung a leak, and with difficulty could keep the vessel free. The leak increasing, held a consultation; and the result was, that considering it too dangerous to prosecute the voyage contemplated, we stood back for Tahiti, in the hope of getting assistance from the “Favourite” man-of-war, lying there when we left. We were nine days beating our way back, confined by strong easterly breezes between the islands of Raiatea, Huaheine, and Sir Charles Saunders Island, or Maihau.

June 27th.—Again dropped anchor in Tahiti. The “Favourite” had taken her departure; and being unable to procure copper or nails, and many other things necessary for heaving the vessel down; reflecting also on the great expense attending it, and the probable loss we should sustain from theft and breakage on discharging the cargo; we altered our views. Deeming the island route to the westward too hazardous in our leaky condition, we had the

hooden ends, and one or two suspicious-looking places in the bows looked at, and, provided with extra pump gear, on *July 2nd* we cleared the harbour for Valparaiso, and endeavoured to call at Anā; but after a week's contention with strong easterly breezes, gave up the attempt and stood to the southward. We reached 31° south latitude before we got into the "variables," and by that time were in the longitude of Tahiti again. We sighted no land upon the passage, although we ran close to the parallel of latitude of a cluster of islands marked upon the chart, "Islands, according to the Spaniards, — seen also in 1825."

August 19th. — At sunrise the snowy tops of the Andes were visible above the clouds, which disappeared as the sun gained power.

August 20th. — We were within an ace of being wrecked on a shoal, about twenty miles to the northward of Valparaiso, and stretching eight miles from the land. At eight o'clock A. M. it fell calm, and we were at the mercy of the drift. At six P. M. we could distinguish houses, and a sickly twinkling light, which one of the crew said proceeded from the light-house.

August 21st. — We drifted past the harbour in the night, and the current was setting us towards the rocks. Pulled into the harbour for assistance, procured two boats, and towed the schooner into a place of safety; and as we had been compelled to pump her every two hours from the time of our leaving Tahiti, we were not at all sorry to see her safely moored in port. The harbour of Valparaiso is more properly

a roadstead: it is an extensive bight, fully open to north winds, which blow at times with great violence in the winter season, particularly in the months of June and July. Our position was on the west side of the harbour, at a place called Fisherman's Bay. The holding ground is good, and the pull of the anchor against a hill, as the water shoals gradually, from forty to two fathoms. The port, to my eyes, had an extraordinary appearance. One narrow street runs along the base of a jumble of broken hills, and the houses appear packed one on the top of the other. About a mile and a half from the port is the Almadral, or town, built on a sandy patch of table land, the only reposing level facing the sea which the roadstead offers. The surrounding country is rugged and hilly; and to the northward, far away in the distance, colossal mountains rear their tops, crowned with eternal snow. The streets of the Almadral are laid out so as to form squares, crossing each other at right angles. There is nothing enlivening in the outside appearance of the houses and shops. The windows are small, and are protected by heavy iron gratings; there is nothing on which to feast the eye, like the exhibitions of wealth and beauty in art to be seen in the shop windows of Old England. There were from seventy to eighty foreign ships, varying from 100 to 1000 tons burthen, lying at anchor on my first arrival; and during every day of my stay vessels were going out and coming in. From the nature of the harbour there are no wharves for the convenience of loading or discharging vessels: large

open lighters are employed for this work, and hundreds are to be seen riding at their moorings. All goods have to pass through the Custom House, and duties are levied upon them according to the judgment of government inspectors. The *del credere* of the country is six months; and the celerity with which vessels are discharged, and cargoes sold, forced itself particularly upon my attention. A vessel arrived from China whilst I was there, bringing a very valuable cargo: in two days goods were sold to the extent of 200,000\$; and in four or five she was entirely discharged. There are no banks in the country, and all payments are made in hard cash. Ounces, dollars, and reals is the currency; mercantile books are kept in dollars and reals: I saw no copper money.

In Valparaiso they have no regular troops, but an organised militia, who are exercised every Sunday on a plain to the westward of the town, extending to the cliffs, called the Plaiyanche. On the edge of the cliffs facing the ocean is the lighthouse, a paltry wooden erection with a fixed light.

Nothing surprised me more than the observance of the sabbath in this country. Instead of being devoted to quiet, orderly, religious purposes, it is a day of mirth and revelry. Business is suspended, it is true, and the churches are opened, but pleasure and amusement reign paramount. The celebration of Saints' days, which are annoyingly frequent, oppose great interruption to commerce, no ships being allowed to continue loading or discharging when they occur; the shops are closed, and the business must

sleep. Some queer mummary ensues on these occasions: a lay figure, representing the saint, dressed in gaudy tinsel, preceded by a procession of priests, and followed by a band of music and the mob, is carried about; and at different halting places squibs and crackers are let off, and occasionally a rocket is sent up into the air. Foreigners of a different persuasion are bound to take off their hats on falling in with these processions.

Santiago, the capital, is between ninety and one hundred miles from Valparaiso; the road to it over high hills and rich plains. At very little expense the roads might easily be kept in excellent condition; but they are most deplorable. We were frequently compelled to make a *détour* of a mile to avoid being bogged. Our travelling conveyance was exactly suited to the nature of the roads; it was a sort of Stanhope, with a hood that could be raised or depressed at pleasure, mounted on very long springs, otherwise the shocks we received from the ruts and holes would have dislocated our limbs. A mounted horseman rode on each side of the horse in the shafts; and attached to their saddles they had leather thongs, with hooks at the ends, which they could fix to eye-bolts in the shafts, to assist in drawing us. Whenever we approached a dangerous or doubtful place in the road, one of the fellows immediately unhooked his thong and rode through it, to sound the way. In like manner, on going down a hill he would take his hook from the shaft and fix it in an eye-bolt at the back of the birloche, and keep backing his horse till we had descended in safety. The road leads over

two mountainous ascents. That over the *Questa Prao*, from its altitude and steepness, has been cut with great labour: it winds laterally on its broad bosom, and has scarcely less than thirty serpentine turnings. On gaining its summit, the view from it on either side is glorious: wide cultivated plains clothed with verdure, level as a bowling green, spreading away to the base of the mountains; the *Cordilleras* in all their magnificent array, closing the scene. The agricultural instruments of the farmers and peasantry are of the most primitive construction: the plough, consisting of a clumsy triangular piece of wood, the open ends of the angle forming the handles, and the point, somewhat prolonged, shod with iron, forming the coulter for breaking the earth, two bullocks draw abreast; their harrows are constructed from the nearest bush. Drove of mules are employed for transporting produce in packs; and I was frequently reminded on seeing them toiling their painful ascent up the steep mountains, of the "Muleteer's Song."

"Then haste my mules, we must not creep,
Nor linger on so slow;
The journey's long, the mountain's steep,
We've many a league to go."

For bulky articles they have huge lumbering waggons, with wooden axle-trees, drawn by oxen: the creaking and groaning of these waggons may be heard nearly a mile off. They are now introducing more civilised vehicles; but I was told that it was the policy of the government in former times to suffer none but these slow-moving musical conveyances in

the country, as a protection against smuggling; it not being possible to put them in motion without their announcing the fact to a considerable distance. The oxen are yoked together in couples by a heavy bar of wood made fast to their horns, and they may be said to push rather than pull. There are from five to seven couple in each waggon; and two oxen are always fastened to the back of the waggon on going down hill, and are taught to hold back, answering the purpose of a drag chain. The drivers use goads instead of whips like our waggoners — sticks from ten to twelve feet long, armed with sharp iron points, which they dig into the poor animals most unmercifully. The costume of these fellows, which, with slight variation, is the dress of the peasantry of the country, is rather picturesque. Over the shirts they wear a poncho — a sort of cape, reaching as far as their knees on either side, drawn over the head through a slit in the centre. This slit and the edge of the poncho are bound with a fanciful border of bright colours. They wear wide white drawers, reaching to about mid-leg, and over these another pair, still wider, of blue dungaree or camlet, white cotton stockings, and short scarlet woollen socks over these again. Their heads are bound with a fancy-coloured handkerchief knotted behind, two ends being left to flap about. A high conically shaped straw hat completes the garb. In riding a journey it is the custom for almost every one to wear the poncho, and to tie a handkerchief round the head; as the flapping of the loose ends contributes to keep you cool, and the poncho not only protects you from the dust, which is very troublesome

here, but by its fanning motion creates a current of cool air not to be rejected.

Many of the Chilenos pass half their lives on horse-back, and a well mounted wassan deserves a particular description. On his saddle he has seven or eight pillows or coverings, made of prepared sheepskins with the wool on, dyed of a uniform colour, all trimmed to the nicest degree of evenness, an embossed sheet of leather being girthed over all. His reins, stirrup-leathers, and horse's head gear, are mounted with silver; but instead of stirrup-irons, he has heavy wooden boxes, beautifully carved, which receive the toe. Himself,—dressed in a gay poncho, beautifully embroidered with flowers worked in silk, a broad sombrero with the ends of a bright-coloured silk handkerchief streaming from beneath it; his jacket slashed and braided, with leggings of polished embossed leather over his well fitting trowsers; his spur-leather mounted with burnished silver, and the rowels of his spurs of the same metal, seven inches in diameter,—fixed like a centaur in his seat, with his noble horse, faultless in symmetry, well groomed, bounding and caracolling beneath him, affords a gallant spectacle. The mul-teers and carriage-drivers make the pillows serve the purpose of bed and blanket. They rarely sleep within the walls of a room, and in every inn-yard they may be found resting under the gateway, or beneath the vehicle they have been conducting during the day. Their mode of life renders them apparently hardy and healthy, but I am told that few attain to old age. The reason of their using the large wooden rest instead of stirrup-irons is to protect their legs, which

otherwise would often be subject to serious damage in riding through a country particularly liable to be thronged with mules laden with copper ore, &c., which scramble along quite regardless of what damage they may inflict with their insensate burdens.

Santiago is built on an extensive plain, which, surveyed from the surrounding heights, appears level as a billiard table. The streets are laid out in squares, and in the centre of the city is the Grand Plaza, or great square, the palace of the president occupying one side of it. In the middle of the square is a marble fountain, erected in commemoration of the independence of the country; and from the basin of this fountain the city is supplied with water. The houses, as seen from the streets, have a dull prison-like appearance. An arched gateway occupies the front of nearly all the private houses, which leads into a court; the building forming the sides of a square encloses this court yard, and, generally speaking, a parterre or a fountain ornaments its centre. If their dealings are conducted as much upon the square as they seem fond of applying the principle to their dwellings, towns and cities, &c., they deserve to be esteemed as a rigidly moral people. I had great difficulty in finding my way about from the sameness in the appearance of the streets, which are without name or number. On falling in with any one who could speak English to direct me, I became as much puzzled in keeping count of the squares as though I had received no instructions; hence I infer that the bump of locality cannot be very strongly developed in my cranium. The best expedient I could resort to on

wishing to return to my hotel was, by blundering my way to the Grand Plaza; and then I could not well miss it, as it was in the street on a line with the president's palace. My arrival at Santiago happened at a felicitous moment for witnessing the national rejoicing which takes place on the 18th, 19th, and 20th September, in celebration of the anniversary of their independence. The troops are reviewed on a beautiful plain called the Pampilia, three or four miles from the city, and extending with a gentle rise to the base of the Cordilleras, when thousands of both sexes congregate on horses, in carriages, and vehicles of every description. Pic-nic parties may be seen grouped in all directions, whilst good-humoured mirth and frolicsome fun reign around. Various are the feats of skill in horsemanship that take place. It is next to an impossibility to unhorse a Chileno when seated on his pillows; and on these days it is customary amongst them to dash at any one off his guard, and try to unhorse him. A person on a naked English pig-skin, with its neat stirrup-irons, stands no chance in these rude encounters. The pile of pillows stretches the legs to a certain angle, and the large wooden rests preserve both rider and horse from the shock of the charge, at the same time inflicting severe punishment on an adversary's legs or horse not similarly provided.

On one of these holiday occasions, I was informed that an English gentleman, beautifully mounted, in Meltonian style, on a coal-black steed, an admirable rider, careered the plain, avoiding every encounter with dexterous skill, and by his graceful address

exciting the admiration of the fair and the burning envy of the wassans. The latter feeling at length prevailed to such an extent, that one of the wassans, bestriding a very powerful animal, and watching his opportunity, set spurs to his horse and charged him in the flank, as he was bending over his saddle conversing with some ladies, a terrified shriek from whom announced his danger. At a glance he saw that any attempt to escape would be almost certain death to his fair friends; he therefore reined up his noble steed, and plying whip and spur dashed at the wassan, meeting him full tilt in his career. At the very instant of the encounter, the Englishman threw himself from his saddle, without relinquishing the reins, and escaped uninjured, though his noble courser perished in the encounter. The wassan and his horse were killed upon the spot. I received several rough contusions on my knees and shins; but having no pretensions to skill in horsemanship, whenever I saw any one about to charge me, I made a point of dropping the reins and throwing up my arms, and it generally had the desired effect. The Chilenos certainly manage their horses with consummate skill: I have seen them urge them to their fullest speed, and check them so suddenly as to throw them back upon their haunches; and I was assured by a gentleman of credibility, that he has known them gallop their horses to the verge of a precipice, and when to the eye of the bystanders nothing could save them from being dashed to pieces, they have, by a dexterous use of their powerful curbs, brought their horses completely round, their fore legs describing an arc in the air

beyond the cliffs as they accomplished the manœuvre. This may be accounted for in some measure by the horses being trained to the use of the lasso. In chasing wild cattle, the moment the lasso leaves the hunter's hand, the horse instinctively throws the weight of his body on the opposite side, to receive the shock when the cattle come thundering down. The hunters are unerring in their aim and when, as it sometimes happens, they become outcasts from society, and take to highway plunder, the lasso in their hands becomes a fearful weapon. Ere the unsuspecting traveller has time to defend himself, or to judge of the nature of the assault, he is in the coil of the deadly lasso, and at the heels of his murderer's horse, being dragged towards his retreat.

I rode out a few leagues in different directions from the city, and invariably found, after we had gained the summit of a range of more elevated land, that a magnificent plain, under high cultivation, spread its rich surface till bounded again by gradually rising eminences. There are no important rivers in any part of the country I traversed. A watercourse called the Maypo runs through Santiago, which is confined within certain boundaries by a wall several miles in extent, and of great strength and thickness. This watercourse (over which I stepped dry-footed), in which the rubbish swept from the streets of the city is deposited, where grass is growing, and where mules were browsing, is spanned by a bridge of ten arches, built by the old Spaniards. It is a massive solid construction of brickwork, on stone basements; the space in the bed of the course between the

arches being flagged with heavy stones. In the present state of the watercourse, one would be at a loss to conceive the import of such stalwart erections; it appears like employing a sledge hammer to destroy a gnat. But not many years ago, a more than usually heavy rainy season combining with the melting of the snows on the Cordilleras, Santiago was in danger of being swept away, the bed of the course being above the level of some parts of the city. Such was the rush and fearful accumulation of water, that the arches of the bridge, though not less than thirty feet in height, were blocked up by the whirling torrent. If either wall or bridge had given way, nothing could have saved the devoted city from destruction. A traditionary saying is recorded of the Indians, who prophesied that the Maypo would one day revenge all the wrongs and injuries they have sustained at the hands of the Spaniards. They have foretold that Santiago is to be destroyed by a flood; and I must confess that when I contemplated its dead level site, shut in as it is on all sides by a barrier of mountains, the supposition that such might be the case did not seem to me to be beyond the bounds of probability. One could easily imagine it to have been the bed in ages past of an inland lake, which has been left dry from subsequent elevation.

A little distance from the city there is a beautiful public walk called the Alameda. It is a double promenade, formed by three rows of Lombardy poplars, nearly two miles in length, kept scrupulously clean, with stone benches between the trees on either side,

and clear limpid streams, confined by masonry, running at the feet of the trees. Here it is the custom for the ladies to enjoy the cool zephyrs of evening till the darkness disperses them. I have not yet spoken of the ladies, which, doubtless, might cause my devotedness to them to be questioned; but it is always with a timid and unassured step that I approach these shrines of heaven's chief workmanship. When young, the señoritas are eminently beautiful, possessing brilliant eyes and complexions, and the most luxuriant tresses, with exquisite forms; but these fair proportions are subject to early decay, and the girl seen two or three years after marriage would not be recognised for the fairy figure that fascinated all eyes previously to it. In this they differ from my own fair countrywomen; and lovely as the former are in youth, there is yet in the abiding loveliness of the ladies of my own land, a charm I have rarely seen equalled, never surpassed. The education of the ladies of Chili is not attended to with the same zealous care as that of our English girls, music and dancing forming their principal accomplishments; but there is much suavity and graceful ease in their manners. They enlist themselves so warmly in behalf of a stranger, and evince such an unaffected yet earnest desire to please, that the warmest feelings of your nature are irresistibly enlisted in their favour. I think they surpass our countrywomen in their taste for dress and choice of material. They are happy in their selection of colours, which are of pleasing contrast, rich without being gaudy. During the gala days, the promenade

and ball-room presented a lovely assemblage of elegance and beauty. I cannot speak much in favour of the way in which their balls were conducted (the balls in honour of the anniversary of their independence). Each ticket costs an ounce (3*l.* 6*s.*); and nothing but ices were furnished as refreshments. The gentlemen, it is true, could retire to a saloon adjoining, and procure what they pleased, by *paying for it*, but the delicate beings who stood far more in need of refreshment, were restrained by conventional forms from leaving the ball-room. I purchased a parcel of *dulces* and handed them indiscriminately to every lady I approached, the affable tone of society permitting them to be received in the friendly spirit with which they were offered; and I only regretted that I could not venture to introduce something more substantial.

The Chilenos of both sexes, are passionately fond of *dulces*, or sweetmeats, to which some attribute the premature decay of the teeth, as it is rare to meet a person of middle age possessing a good set. In Santiago they are afflicted with a very unsightly complaint called "gota," the same disease that prevails in some parts of Switzerland, and its primary cause attributed to the same source — the water produced from the melting of the snow. The effect of two of the loveliest female faces I saw in Chili was destroyed by huge swellings in the neck, resulting from this distressing malady. When incipient symptoms first betray themselves, the complaint may be subdued by skilful treatment; but if allowed to obtain head, it is incurable. They have a

neat little theatre in Santiago ; but from not understanding the language, the proceedings had very little interest for me ; and I confess that, in consequence of my ignorance, the gestures of the actors appeared ridiculously absurd.

Between thirty and forty miles east by north from Valparaiso, is a town called Quillota. It is situated in a rural district of considerable extent and great fertility. The streets are laid out in the usual form of squares, and, from the little commercial business carried on in them, they may be traversed at almost any hour of the day with scarcely a soul to be met with. Every house, with its attached garden, is surrounded by a high mud wall which imparts the gloomy impression that you are walking within the confines of a prison. On being admitted within the walls, your sensations are changed to admiration at the snug retirement of all you see ; at least with those who, like me, find enjoyment in a country life. The houses, as usual, are built in a square, enclosing a court yard. In the country they are generally only one story, having comfortable verandahs covered with vines and flowering shrubs, which lead by separate doors to the various apartments. A little fountain plays in the court, or a beautiful spring of water is conducted by masonry along the verandahs. The garden, well stocked with fruit trees and vegetables, and watered by the same rill that sparkles past the verandahs or plays in the court, furnishes as pleasant a home to my taste as is to be desired. The pursuits followed here are strictly agricultural ; wheat is

raised in great abundance, and I saw many extensive vineyards. The grapes will not dry into raisins; but from them are manufactured large quantities of a miserable description of wine called "chicha," the common drink of the country people.

Chili abounds in copper mines, and it has some of gold and silver. The shortness of my stay did not admit of my visiting the mines about Santiago. The copper mines on the coast, more to the northward, are the most profitable, as they yield more abundantly, and supply the richest ores. Copper ore, wheat, hides, tallow, horns, and timber, are the natural exports from Chili. Hides, tallow, and horns were scarce at the time of my visit, and commanded high prices. Of the foreign commercial houses in Valparaiso, the English take the first rank, the Americans next, and then come Germans, French, and Italians; but unquestionably the greater proportion of foreign commerce is conducted by the English.

In Chili, no man's signature is valid without a flourish appended, although the flourish subscribed to a promissory note or other document *without the signature* is esteemed legally binding. In illustration and confirmation of this, the following anecdote was instanced:—A man who could not write, but who had amassed considerable wealth, and was in the habit of negotiating monetary matters to some extent, had a bill presented to him subscribed by a ✕, the party's usual sign-manual. Having attentively considered it, he denied the genuineness of the document, and declared it to be a forgery. The matter was submitted to the tribunal; when the president inquired,

how as one cross was so like another, he could prove the individual one in dispute before the court was not of his own design. The man submitted that it would be a great hardship to compel him to betray the secret that was his sole protection, but if the president would solemnly bind himself not to divulge it, he would convince him that the cross attached to the bill now in court was a forgery. The president gave the necessary assurances, and the man explained, that on each occasion of making his cross, he invariably used his thumb as a guide to both strokes; and he produced many documents, and every cross corresponded in its diagonal strokes to the outline of his thumb. The holder of the forgery was nonsuited.

Valparaiso enjoys a temperate and healthy clime; but in the summer months it is an exceedingly disagreeable place of abode, as the strong winds then prevailing from the southward involve it in clouds of dust and showers of sand, which renders quitting your house not only unpleasant, but absolutely painful. The country, though salubrious, is subject to periodical visits of that ravaging disease, the small-pox; and there is a pit on the *plaiyanche*, near the lighthouse, where the bodies of the poorer classes are thrown in just as they may have died. I had the curiosity to examine it; and there, in a festering heap, lay male and female, infant and adult, old and young, ruthlessly hurled together; the slimy and mouldering garments of the hapless wretches adding to the melancholy horrors of the revolting spectacle. I am at a loss to divine the wisdom of thus exposing to

strangers the baleful disorders of the country, and the little respect that is shown to the dead.

Valparaiso is liable to repeated shocks of earthquakes, and it was matter of surprise that, during my stay, none were experienced. It is usual for a shock of greater or less violence to occur every week, and sometimes oftener. They have created more alarm at what might be the consequences than serious damage. But Concepcion to the southward, and Realejo to the northward, have both been laid in ruins. There is consequently a want of security in household property, which, though by no means generally admitted, is, I can plainly see, sufficiently felt.

The aboriginal race would appear to be extinct in this part of Chili, as during my peregrinations I did not fall in with a single Indian.

CHAP. XI.

The classes that should quit England.—Under weigh for Tahiti.—Gambier's Islands.—French Priests and their Influence.—Timoe or Crescent Island.—Osnaburg Island, or Matilda Rocks.—Sight Anā.—Drop Anchor in Taonoa Passage, Tahiti.—French Protection forced on Tahiti by Admiral du Petit Thouars.—Taken to the Calliboose by Natives.—A Dish of Sauce from a Mutineer.—Condolence from a Descendant of the House of Israel.—Liberation from Confinement.—The Captors tried and fined.—The Author of "Typee" and "Omoo."—His Memory assisted.—Commodore Wilkes.—Bound for Raiatea.—Industry of the Natives.—Tapoa, the King of Borabora.—Tahaa and its Reefs, &c.—Bound on another Pearling Voyage.—The Island of Ohiteroa or Rurutu.—Tedious Passage to Rapa.—Engage Divers with Difficulty.—Tioo.—The Queen of Rapa.—Her Character for Gallantry.—Religion of the People.—A narrow Escape.—Bass's Rocks.—Adverse Winds.—Gambier's Islands again.—Conduct of French Priests.—Behaviour of Mareva Natives.—Leave Gambier's Islands.—A Comet.—Sight Lord Hood's Island.—Les four Facardines.—Thrum Cap Island.—At Anchor in the Lagoon of Bow Island.—Engage Bow Islanders.—Sudden Sickness and Death of a Native.—Visible Tokens from the Tupapan.—An Arrival from Amann.—Perfidy of a Sandwich Islander.—Fishing Excursions.—Cease Diving for want of Food.—A Fugitive from the Island of Faetae.—Return of the Schooner.—Captain's Report.—The Jules de Blossville, a French Brig.—Conduct of her Captain.—Give up Diving.—Remarks on Pearls.—The "Doctor's" Saucepan.—A Calm.—Aviri, or Prince William Henry Island.—A Gale.—Sight Rapa.—Go ashore in a Boat.—Mortality amongst the Natives.—Superstitiously accounted for.—Parting Benediction from Rapa.—Gale renewed.—

Speak the French Barque Jules César.—The Gale continues.—Again fall in with the Jules César.—Isle Masafuera.—Juan Fernandez.—Reach Valparaiso.—Arrival of a Schooner.—Bad Passage made by every Vessel coming from the Westward.—Loss of the Vessel into which Cargo had been transhipped at Tahiti for Sydney.

“Thy spirit, Independence, let me share,
 Lord of the lion heart and eagle eye;
 And I will follow with my bosom bare,
 Nor heed the storm that howls along the sky.”

I WOULD recommend any young man, “grounded in the rudiments,” capable of using his hands, or possessing any kind of useful knowledge, and who may be ashamed *to work* in England, or who may be struggling for mere existence, or the means of concealing that poverty which is blighting his soul, to quit it; never mind in what capacity, or how humiliating for the time. England is too crowded with shabby gentility for it to obtain much trust; and to confess poverty is almost as good a recommendation as a written discharge from Bridewell. But on a young man’s going abroad, if there is no stain upon his character, more sympathy is felt towards him by his countrymen, and the generous hand of assistance is much more promptly extended.

Let him refrain from *abusing* any change in his fortune for the better, and ten chances to one but he succeeds in life. Too many, after finding themselves relieved from a life of pinching care and griping necessity, are apt to fall into excesses by too freely indulging in those pleasures which were formerly beyond their reach. Above all things, let him abstain

from the wine cup; for if he once yield to this intoxicating vice, — good bye to him.

Having experienced much kindness and liberal accommodation in a business point of view, on *October 1st* we cleared from our moorings, and got under weigh for Tahiti. We had two French passengers to be dropped at Gambier's Island, and a French lady for Tahiti.

November 2nd. — This afternoon we let go the "mud-hook" in the harbour of Gambier's Island.

Gambier's Isles are a cluster of five or six, surrounded by a coral reef, with breaks in it; the water within the reef is full of coral patches, forming innumerable beds for the mother-of-pearl oyster. The best passage through the coral belt on entering is the break at the S. E. by S. extremity, and the best channel out again is S. S. W. by W.; but Captain Beechey's chart of the group is so accurate, that any one possessing it needs no other instructions. The islands rise high and bluff directly from the water; there is scarcely any level land upon them adapted for agricultural purposes. Peard Island, the largest of the group, rises nearly 1300 feet high, in two conical peaks, which by Captain Beechey has been christened Mount Duff. The native name for this island is Mangarava, and that of the group collectively Marava. The natives resemble the Paumutuans, but their dialect approaches more nearly to that of the New Zealanders. Within the last seven years, three French missionaries, of the papal persuasion have established themselves upon the island; and the control they have contrived to acquire over

the simple inhabitants must be seen to be believed: it is so absolute, that their very movements appear to be guided by what the missionaries would think of them. They have churches erected on every island; and that on Pearl Island would not disgrace any civilised country. It is built of stone; the roof supported by two rows of massive stone pillars, nine in each row, forming an aisle on either side; the ceiling in the centre of the building being dome-shaped, arching over from the pillars. The floor is neatly flagged; and where the altar is erected, it is elevated two steps, and formed of tessellated black and white stone. A neatly carved balustrade separates the chancel from the main body of the building, and a crucifix, "as large as life," surmounts the altar. So much scenic display, and the mysterious ceremonies used in the Romish Church, are well calculated to dazzle the senses, and instil awe into the minds of the ignorant heathen, as in their own practices they invariably used emblems to appeal to the senses; and, short as is the time that it has taken to effect it, and few the labourers, the natives are completely enslaved body and soul. The wonders that have arisen before their eyes, through the instrumentality of these priests, have inspired them with fear as much as any other emotion; they are full of amazement at their resources and their power; and their displeasure is dreaded in proportion to the extent that this feeling can be excited. What filled me with the greatest astonishment was, that the priests have actually established a nunnery, in which they have contrived to immerse, at this

present writing, ninety native women. The building is on a bare shoulder of Mount Duff, so that no one can approach or leave it without the priest's knowledge. The women on the island are instructed to conceal themselves on the approach of a man, and during my rambles every woman that I saw at a distance made her escape to some place of retirement on my meeting her observation. With the exception of two withered old women I had no opportunity of judging of the features of any of the females on the islands. I only saw two of the "Fathers,"—jolly, portly built fellows, with such rotundity of paunch that one is irresistibly led to the conclusion, that *such* could only be obtained by the fasting, vigils, and denying penances of Robin Hood's friar. I wonder if their visits to the nunnery are frequent; it strikes me that the Harem of the Grand Turk is more excusable than such a system of Church government.

Pumpkins, plantains, cocoa-nuts, and other fruit and vegetables, with fish, form the chief diet of the natives. I saw no quadrupeds but a dog and a few sheep belonging to a Frenchman. The natives are expert divers, and many cargoes of pearl shell have been collected from this group; but any attempt to procure a cargo now, by their assistance, would be almost certain to leave a loss.

Between twenty and thirty miles east from the southern belt of coral of Gambier's Islands, a low sandy isle just shows itself above the water. We ran past it, and congratulated ourselves that we did not make it at nightfall. By us it has been called

Crescent Island, by the natives Timoe; and is scarcely discernible six miles off. There are no cocoa-nut trees on it; and though marked on the charts as being inhabited, it has long ceased to be so, the inhabitants, from its extreme unhealthiness and scarcity of food, having migrated to Gambier's Islands.

Nov. 3rd. — Having landed the two Frenchmen with their goods this afternoon, we again shaped our course to Tahiti.

Nov. 5th. — At eight o'clock A. M. made Osnaburg's Island, called also the Matilda Rocks. It is of considerable length, very low, and at the east end, judging from the surf, a sunken reef runs out to some extent. We ran past it at four or five miles distance; and the only vegetation distinguishable were clumps of the fārā or pandanus. It exhibited no tokens of being inhabited; and the Chain Islanders informed me that, like most of the Paumotu Islands, it had a lagoon, which was large, but so full of sharks, that they had never ventured to dive there. It is laid down in latitude 22° S., and longitude $138^{\circ} 37'$ W.; our chronometer put it ten miles further to the westward at noon. We likewise discovered that its correct latitude is $21^{\circ} 50'$ S.

Nov. 8th. — At daylight we were about seven miles distant from Anā. The land bearing nearly west from us, we ran in as close as we dared, and hove to for a couple of hours, to see if any canoes would come off to us; but such a tremendous surf was breaking on the reef, that we supposed it was impracticable. We could see the natives walking along the beach, and two or three new houses they have erected for the

accommodation of traders, which were greatly needed; as, when I first landed there, my brains almost boiled in my skull for want of shelter, and the refracted heat from the white sands peeled my nose like an onion. Not seeing any canoes, and the wind being strong from the south-east, at eight o'clock A.M. we packed all sail upon the vessel, and on the afternoon of the 9th of November dropped anchor in Taonoa Passage, Tahiti; and somewhat to our astonishment, received the intelligence that Admiral du Petit Thouars had, during our absence, visited the island in the *Reine Blanche*, and, by the terror of his guns, forced Queen Pomare to accept the protection of the French government. He had left on shore two officers from his vessel, who, with the French consul, now formed the provisional government of the country. There was great talk of what the French were going to do; but being busied with my own pursuits, I paid little attention to idle speculations, till they were forced upon my notice in the following unpleasant manner. Two or three evenings subsequently to our return, in taking a stroll in the cool shady walk at the back of the settlement, I stopped at an open native house to light a cigar. Suddenly the house was surrounded by men, and two or three of them entered and commenced jostling me. Not dreaming that any violence was intended, I merely pushed the intruders good-humouredly from me, and finished kindling my cigar. "Hare ute, hare ute!" (Go away, go away!), said the leader of the mob; "Eiaha e ru!" (Don't be in a hurry!), I replied, as I stepped into the moonlight: but now they began

handling me in a way that excited my suspicions, and I indignantly shook myself free from their impertinences. In a moment I was prostrate: some of the younger of the party had precipitated themselves to the ground and jerked me by the ancles, which had caused me to stumble backwards across their bodies; and before I could recover myself, I was elevated on the shoulders of ten or a dozen of them, who clutched my body wherever they could find hand-room. I was so surprised that, for a time, I remained speechless, incapable of either remonstrance or resistance. Presently, a sense of my situation came over me, and I made so desperate a struggle to release myself, that we all went rolling in the dust together. But it would have been better had I remained quiet, for I was on their shoulders again in an instant, and this time they clutched my flesh as well as clothes.

“Put me down, you fools; put me down,” said I; “you don’t know what you’re doing, fools that you are!”

“Mama fa rue” (a cant phrase, tantamount to “Fools, with a hook”) was the only rejoinder, and they persisted in carrying me further inland. In this way I was conveyed for about three quarters of a mile, when, to my horror, I discovered that they were taking me to a calliboose, where a party of mutineers were confined. Again I struggled to free myself, and once more we were rolling in the dust. But without troubling themselves to raise me a third time, they caught me by the heels, and dragged me along the ground until they had forced my ancles into a massive pair of wooden stocks, in which six or

seven of the worst of the mutineers were also confined. My passion at this outrageous indignity was so great, that my tongue refused its office, and with my throat, became parched as if by fire. The mutineers appeared mightily tickled at my position, and indulged in exceedingly gross and insulting remarks, — one of them excepted, who, feeling for my situation, kindly doubled his mattress under my back, which brought my head to a level with my heels. But there was another of them who had contrived to liberate himself when the stocks were raised for the reception of my legs; and this fellow, apparently the ringleader and spokesman for the others, commenced an oration, addressing me in the most offensive style, instituting comparisons, rejoicing that one of the “swells” had got a taste of the stocks, and offering me a highly spiced dish of ironical sympathy: this loosened my tongue.

“You cowardly ruffian! Can’t you confine your remarks to those of your own station, without taking advantage of the ignorant folly of these natives to insult a man who never offered you any injury, but whom a caprice of fortune has thrown into this degraded position — a position doubtless well merited by you? If I but had my limbs as free as you have got your tongue, I’d play such a peal about your ears as should teach you for the future to confine it to its proper sphere.”

Uttering a volley of oaths, the dastardly dog hereupon drew his sheath knife, and threw himself upon me, helpless as I lay; and such was the maddened state of excitement I was in, that, regardless

of all consequences, I turned to grasp him; and it was well that his companions interfered, for if I had caught him, I should have inflicted upon him summary justice. The natives outside, hearing the scuffle, made their appearance, and quickly disposed of this specimen of the bowie-knife genus, by making his head take the place of his heels, and again reducing the latter to the loving embrace of the heavy timber; but whilst he was undergoing the operation, four of them held me like a vice in my position. Order restored, and the peace-makers having retired, the same kind fellow who had given me up his mattress volunteered to liberate me from my confinement; but this service I could not accept at his hands, for infamous as the treatment was to which I was subjected, I could not render myself the accomplice of a mutineer. The impotency of my wrath was devouring me, when the sound of horse's feet was heard, and the grinning face of one of the tribe of Issachar presented itself at the prison door. In gratitude for the prompt aid he afforded me, let me delineate the portrait of this unique sample of his race. He was a petty store-keeper, and impressed to admiration with notions of his own importance, endeavoured by the aid of highly polished boots, tightly strapped trowsers, a close fitting cloth coat, and an almost throttled neck, to inspire others with similar views. This classic face, innocent of whisker, was not exactly in true Grecian keeping, as the hand of the modeller had passed heavily over the lower extremity, and had given a twist to his jaws which imparted to the facial angle an appear-

ance not badly illustrated by a lay down *O* formed in a tyro's copy-book. He admitted that he had a peculiar nose, which, with his pursed up mouth, vacant eye, and heavy brow, gave him, when his features were in repose, an expression like that of a meditative sick monkey.

"My eye!" chuckled this sapient son of the descendants of Israel, as if it was the finest piece of fun imaginable, "Is that you?"

"You grinning idiot, have you lost your sight? Can you do nothing else but stand there and grin?" enquired I. "Are you aware that you yourself are liable to be thrust into this disgraceful position? Why don't you go and raise the neighbourhood, stating the way in which the British residents are being treated, instead of showing your teeth there like a buck rat?" Somewhat startled at this energetic appeal, the alarmed Israelite ducked his head, hastily remounted his horse, and made the best of his way to his own quarters.

Judging by the tones of my voice that all was not right, the natives began to be alarmed for the consequences of their proceedings, and despatched a messenger to the French consul to know if they would be supported in what they had done. It was by the intrigues of this very consul, and under a plea of far less consequence than the gross outrage inflicted upon me, that Du Petit Thouars caused Pomare to sign away the independence of her kingdom. The consul's trepidation may therefore be conceived when the intelligence of my arrest was conveyed to him. Two of the chiefs were immediately

sent to liberate me; but I refused to move until I knew for what reason I had been so shamefully handled, and until the parties who had maltreated me were placed in my situation.

“To-morrow! to-morrow! go to bed now: the men have been fools; we are very sorry, but they shall all be tried;” and raising me from my flea-bitten couch, the two chiefs accompanied me to my residence. Five days elapsed before the men were brought to trial: and then thirteen who had been implicated in the assault were tried before a native tribunal, the members of the provisional government being also present. The only defence set up was, that as I was out after eight o'clock they thought they had a right to capture me, although I was well known to the whole of them. The judges, after mature deliberation, found the men guilty of a wanton assault, and fined them in the penal sum of twenty dollars. Twenty dollars! I demanded leave to address the court, and then told it, that if twenty dollars was all the punishment to be inflicted, I would freely pay double the sum to cause each individual to undergo the same corporal punishment I had experienced; for my body was bruised from my feet to my neck, and a suit of clothes had been torn to ribbons.

“Don't be in a hurry! don't be in a hurry! let us look more carefully and see what the law says.” The second examination proved more satisfactory, and each individual was fined twenty dollars; one half the sum to go to the government, and the other half to me. I expressed my willingness to be con-

tent with this verdict, provided the sentence was enforced. The judges undertook that it should be ; and in order that it might not be supposed I was governed by mercenary motives, I requested that my share of the fines should be handed to the missionary resident, that the same might be applied in repairing the native church, which had fallen into a dilapidated condition.

Since the above entry was made in my journal, two works have appeared, "Typee" and "Omoo," purporting to have been written by Herman Melville. By his own showing Herman Melville has been a most reckless loafer, caring not a pin what enterprises were ruined so long as he could indulge the gratification of his own propensities. Gratitude for his escape, and horror at the reminiscences of the hardships to which he had been exposed, impel him to acknowledge the kind manner he was received on board the Julia, where he met with every attention. His sketches are amusing, and skilfully drawn, but bear as much relation to truth as a farthing does in value to a sovereign. It is as if the said Herman Melville had burnished and gilded the farthing, and then circulated it as the gold coin. With those unable to detect the difference, it would of course pass current. Herman Melville—I love to repeat his name—working upon detached images profusely scattered throughout Polynesia, has drawn largely upon a fertile imagination in grouping them, and thrown together an exceedingly spirited narrative ; but regardless of all truth, gratitude, or manliness, has grossly scandalized by name some worthy men living at Tahiti, who very

probably have done more good, gratuitously, to their fellows since their residence there, than Herman Melville has done during his whole existence. I allude more particularly to Dr. Johnstone, who has been most grievously misrepresented, and considerably to his injury. But as Herman Melville has been so free in giving publicity to certain names, it is a pity he did not extend his candour, — perhaps his memory failed him, as he “kept no notes.” However, I will try and jog it for him. After the first desertion with which he pleases to acquaint the public, and his subsequent escape from the horrors of a residence in a narrow ravine, shut in by boulders and inaccessible cliffs, his companions naked savages, hideously tattooed, and ferocious as demons, unable to speak their language, trembling for his life, and without food adapted to his European origin, — I say, after his escape from this wretched state of existence, in his first deep-felt emotion at the mercy that had been vouchsafed to him, he acknowledges the debt and expresses his gratitude; but how does he ultimately repay it? Why, according to his own account, he is incapable of all bodily exertion; and he knows no other way of repaying the obligation he has incurred but by being the instigator of a mutiny, that he, and others like him, may be sent ashore at Tahiti, where they could loaf and sponge at will, till the chance offered of their ruining some other voyage, if peradventure any one could be found to receive such worthies on board his vessel. It was the Sydney whaling barque *Lucy Ann*, Captain Ventom, that had the honour of

bringing Typee-Omoo Herman Melville to Tahiti; and in the month of June 1848, this said barque Lucy Ann was lying at Anatum, one of the New Hebrides, taking in sandal wood. So much for the way in which the cook used to pick her to pieces for firewood. Herman Melville, undoubtedly the ring-leader of the mutineers, was lying in the calliboose when I was dragged there; and from the un-English way in which the ruffian who assaulted me handled his knife, I have the strongest suspicion that it was Herman Melville who threw himself upon a bound defenceless man; and I only regret that, amongst his other reminiscences, he omitted to take notice of this. That he was in the calliboose at the time, there is not a question; and that the man was a Yankee who threw himself upon me I will swear, not only from the peculiar intonation of his voice, his pale unwhiskered face, and the thatch-like way in which his hair fell on either side of it, but from the glib-like nature of his tongue—a qualification by no means uncommon with ordinary American seamen, which may be accounted for from the fact, that many of them are grown men before they think of gratifying a roving fancy, and are much more devoted to loafing and reading, than attending to their duties.

I had the curiosity to search Dr. Johnstone's medical diary: the names of all the mutineers were enrolled there, and amongst them stands Herman Melville's. The whole of the doctor's charges for medicine and medical attendance amounts to but a few dollars; and the only item charged against Her-

man Melville is a bottle of embrocation, as the man complained of pains in his limbs: but the doctor believing him to be an impostor, which by the way I think he has clearly shown himself to have been, paid no further heed to his complaints. His pains, I expect, might be traced to the same source as the valley which he describes in Moorea, and which has existence only in the regions of his imagination.

Herman Melville possesses a felicitous pen, with a humorous knack of hitting off little peculiarities of character; and if he had confined himself to these, without publishing names, or making gross aspersions upon worthy men, his works might have gone down the stream with other harmless and amusing productions; but he has passed base coin for sterling, and for so doing, deserves exposure and contempt.*

* When in Hong Kong (see Chapter XXI.), I saw by the Reviews that another work, yecept "Mardi," purporting also to be written by Typee-Omoo Herman Melville, had been introduced to the world. It has not been my chance to peruse the whole; but, from what I have seen, it would appear the opening part *might* have come from the "ready pen" to which common rumour has ascribed it, but that the fustian rant of the great bulk would indicate other paternity. From the similes and comparisons introduced in "Typee" and "Omoo" having reference principally to English prototypes, and from the warm partizanship displayed in defence of Lord George Paulet's proceedings at the Sandwich Islands, I am irresistibly led to infer that the said "Typee" and "Omoo" were not a little indebted to a more skilled and practised hand than Herman Melville's. True to himself, however, in one respect, Herman Melville does not hesitate to let us know that he again practises the unmanly trick of desertion from the very next vessel he enters on board of. Is it likely then, that a man so unscrupulous would have

Another American writer against whom there is just cause of complaint, for the unworthy use he makes of his pen, is Commodore Charles Wilkes, the compiler of the "Narrative of the United States Exploring Expedition." After a preliminary coy coquetting with his subject, to impress upon the world the momentous nature of his undertaking, he carries on his labours with a reconciled air, and proceeds, in rather an inflated and egotistical style, to discuss scientific questions and theories, all of which I have read in other works; but dealt with in a style so vigorous and masterly, and supported by such masses of observation, that one is led shrewdly to suspect that Commodore Wilkes is as much indebted to his library as to his travels for the result of the reflections he has committed to paper.

The impression which a perusal of Commodore Wilkes's work has made upon me is, that he is a "universal knowledge" man, possessing acquaintance with a little of every thing in general, and nothing in particular; and that he has allowed his vanity to betray him into interfering with the labours of every department, to the prejudice of the expedition.

I have heard practical nautical men quiz his antarctic cruise; others wonder at his digression to

any compunctious visitings of conscience at dressing himself, like the daw in the fable, with borrowed plumes. As the bastard in "King John" would not believe that "Old Sir Robert" could beget him, neither will I believe that "Typee" and "Omoo" and "Mardi" are emanations from the same pen.

"Compare their faces and be judge yourself."

inform us of Sydney and its convicts, as being matter foreign to the nature of the expedition ; and others, again, express their astonishment at the “awful” time he himself required to settle a position at the Feejee Islands. But he would have been spared strictures or remarks of mine, if he had not availed himself of the dear-bought experience of an enterprising man, and repaid the obligation by holding up to public obloquy the person who had rendered him such essential service. One word upon this subject, and we will quit it for ever.

Not the least important part of the duty to be performed, and expected at his hands by his country, was an accurate survey of the Feejee Islands. Commodore Wilkes had his misgivings as he approached these islands, and brought to at the island of Tonga ; the Porpoise having already preceded him there, and where he also found the English schooner *Currency Lass*, commanded by a Mr. Wilson, who, whatever foible he may possess, has ever enjoyed a character for high integrity and unimpeached veracity. He is the son of one of the oldest and most guileless of the missionary residents in Polynesia, a man of education, and at that time possessed a more practical knowledge of the Feejee Islands than any one Commodore Wilkes could have fallen in with. No charts at Commodore Wilkes’s disposal in any way approximated to the true position of many of the islands of the group ; and Mr. Wilson, with the readiest kindness, not only lent him his chart, which he had constructed from actual survey, but also gave him one of his own crew, who had been residing

some years at the Feejee islands, and who could speak the native language. Relieved from a load of anxiety by the obliging urbanity of Mr. Wilson, how does Commodore Wilkes return thanks? By letting the world know that a small trading schooner of eighty tons burthen had boldly pioneered his way, and freed him from much vain conjecture? Not at all! He listens to complaints of some convicts escaped from New South Wales, whom Mr. Wilson had unfortunately intrusted with property to trade for him, and he publishes to the world his belief that Mr. Wilson is a rogue and a swindler. Were you fearful, Commodore Wilkes, that Mr. Wilson should give publicity to his claim for notice in the service he had rendered you, and did you trust, by first traducing his character, to cause doubts to be entertained of any assertions he might make? Conduct exactly in keeping with that of the unjust steward in Scripture, but utterly unworthy that of a public officer placed in so prominent a position. For shame, Commodore Wilkes! Is this the dignified sense you entertain of a first national expedition, fitted out for scientific and useful purposes? Had you no prototype to keep you clear from handing to posterity such village scandal? Muffle your ears with a stiff starched cap, Commodore Wilkes, and act like the immaculate maiden lady that was confined with twins—carry about with you a reticule, in which to bestow your delicious morning's gossip; but desist from exploring expeditions. Mr. Wilson has been for the last seven years continually upon the waters, and only recently had your

ungenerous aspersions brought under his notice. Whether he will condescend to reply to them I know not; but, as I have been personally acquainted with him for many years, I take this opportunity of publicly proclaiming them to be groundless, and at the same time expressing the opinion that your work has been as much indebted, without acknowledgment, to other writers, as you were to Mr. Wilson for his assistance and personal experience, when you were about to engage in the survey of the Feejee Islands.

November 29th.—The rainy season has set in early; we have scarcely had a dry day since our return. To-day we cleared the western passage from Papeeti, bound for Raiatea.

December 1st.—Only just off the north end of the island of Huaheine. As the wind was against us, and it was growing dusk, we ran into its harbour, which is situated on the north-west side.

Huaheine consists of two islands, connected by a coral reef, through which there is a passage for boats. It resembles Tahiti in all its features, but is not so extensive. An encircling ring of coral gives birth to the placid basins between it and the main. The missionary station is in the bay we entered; and the cheerful faces, and the content and happiness apparent in the pretty settlement, do credit to the labours of the mild and good old missionary resident. It is a busy little community, and all around betokened the general industry of the natives. Several were engaged in ship-building, unaided by Europeans; and I saw them forging their own bolts and iron-work for their vessels with as much facility as

regular artisans. There are several schooners, from eighteen to twenty-five tons burthen, built entirely by natives, and as many as seven or eight were on the stocks, in various stages towards completion. The entrance through the reef to the harbour is narrow. There is a sunken rock at the larboard side of the passage as you enter; a vessel of light draught might pass over, but a ship of ordinary burthen would strike upon it. The natives appear more free and joyous than those of Tahiti; and, when the sun went down, it was delightful to hear them singing their native chants beneath the shade of the trees upon the beach. Many of them have beautiful voices, particularly the females; and the language is soft and adapted to melody. In their moral character they do not differ from the Tahitians; they are thoughtless, and apparently happy beings, living only for the hour. Religious feelings they have none; but their natural goodness of disposition makes them desirous to conceal from the eyes of their old pastor any thing that may give him offence. He is no gloomy ascetic, endeavouring to sour the lives of those whose morals he is unable to improve; but if one may judge from the mild and steady way in which he perseveres in the effort to do good, he is more likely to succeed by his example than those who would crush the body to save the soul, or those who denounce sin from the pulpit, but enjoy its pleasures in the closet. He is one of the very few amongst the missionaries whose private character is unimpeached by native or European; but, poor man, he has many obstacles in his way to prevent the inculcation of sound moral principles.

December 2nd we purchased our anchor, and in the evening again let it go in twenty-two fathoms water, in the north-east harbour of Raiatea. This island, with another called Tahaa, is encircled by one coral reef, extending a considerable way from the land. There are several safe entrances through it. That which we took was about a quarter of a mile wide, and the shoalest soundings seven fathoms. The anchorage is good, but deep; the least depth of water in eligible places being eighteen fathoms. We were nearly getting ashore as we approached the breakers: the wind suddenly died away, and left us at the mercy of the current, which it was feared would sweep us into them before we could get assistance. We fired signal guns, and a native pilot, with a well manned boat, came to our aid in the very nick of time, and towed us to our station.

Raiatea is ruggedly mountainous, and the lowland at the base of the mountains is wet and swampy. The labours of the missionaries have not been so successful here as at Huaheine, the comforts and cleanliness of life being far less attended to; though the natives do not lack industry and enterprise, as is evinced by their ship-building, and by the quantities of cocoa-nut oil and arrow-root which they manufacture.

December 3rd.—Weighed anchor and ran along inside the reef, coasting the shore, till we again dropped it on the north-west side of the island, opposite a passage called Huaru, known more generally as Captain Hunter's Passage, from a person of that name having resided there for many years. He was

a shipwright by trade, and has built two or three small vessels since his residence there; and from him, principally, have the natives acquired their knowledge of ship-building. He is a singularly bold and enterprising man, and well maintains the energy of the British character. Having discharged into a vessel bound for Sydney, we returned to our previous anchorage, where I commenced a brisk trade with the natives for cocoa-nut oil, lime juice, &c. &c. The market exhausted, we bore away for the island of Borabora, running within the reef and coasting Tahaa, which is indented with many beautiful little bays, spotted with islets. We left Tahaa by a passage through the reef on the west-south-west side, a passage by no means to be admired, although I have seen worse.

December 14th.—Rounding the southern extremity of Borabora, we beat our way through a passage nearly half a mile wide, and cast anchor within a cable's length of the shore, on the west by south side of the island. To the northward of Borabora is a small island called Tubai, and to the westward, a little northerly, another small island, by the natives called Maupiti. Tapoa, the king of Borabora, is the most civilised native I have seen. His house is furnished in the European style, superior to any native house amongst the Georgian or Society Isles, and his table is served and attended just like that of an English family. He is intelligent and hospitable, and transacts a good deal of commission business between Europeans and his people. Articles of European manufacture are left with him (prints and

calicoes chiefly), which he exchanges for cocoa-nut oil, arrow-root, &c. He receives a certain per-centage on the amount of goods he disposes of, and also a commission on the quantity of oil, &c. he collects and stores. Other chiefs also act as agents; but none bear the same high reputation for strict integrity and exactness as Tapoa. During my stay on the island I resided at his house, and received excellent accommodation. "Like master, like man," the Boraborean natives are looked upon as the manliest of the group; and their island is, certainly, the most singularly formed. It is bold and mountainous, and a conical stone bluff shoots up perpendicularly from its centre, attaining the altitude of fourteen or fifteen hundred feet. For several hundred feet this bluff is like a scarped wall overgrown with a species of lichen; and after heavy rains it has a most romantic effect, from the number of rills gushing out of crevices, and glancing like streams of silver till lost in mist. There are several small islets enclosed within the boundary reef investing Borabora, fertile in cocoa-nut trees; and whether from the better spirit of the people, or more judicious government, this small island has yielded more commercial produce than any of the Leeward group.

December 16th.—I had the honour of entertaining the king and royal family on board to dinner; and when his majesty and suite had retired, we got under weigh and cleared the passage. We passed to the northward of Borabora, and coasted the north and north-east side of Tahaa. The Tahaa reef runs out to a considerable extent; and it would be

advisable for a person unacquainted with the islands not to approach too close in hazy weather, or his first intimation of danger might be received on his finding himself hard and fast. Groves of cocoa-nut and other trees in detached patches on the reef, lend variety to the scenery of Tahaa; and it had, for me, quite a romantic charm. From what cause I know not, but the island is very sparsely inhabited.

December 16th.—Again dropped anchor in the harbour of Huaheine; bartered for cocoa-nut oil, lime juice, and other island produce, till the supplies were exhausted; and, on December 21st, cleared out and stood for Tahiti.

December 23rd.—Entered the western passage, and dropped anchor within a cable's length from the shore. Finding a vessel bound for Sydney, we freighted on board her the cargo I had collected; then, taking in ballast and provisions, on January 5th, 1843, we stood out to sea, bound for the island of Rapa. I had determined on proceeding on another pearling voyage, and the natives of this island had been strongly recommended to me as the best divers I could procure. They spoke the same language as the Tahitians; and, as shame for my folly in suffering myself to be so grossly duped by my valiant interpreter induced me to give him the 1000 dollars stipulated for, rather than quibble and prove the impracticability of his fulfilling his contract (which he failed in doing), I was now bent on making what amends I could; for, of a verity, the interpreter was of very little service to me: but, happily or unhappily, I do not possess the tempera-

ment to bind a man down to the letter of the law, if I fancy he has tried to do his best.

January 9th. — At half-past ten P.M. we sighted land. As this was an unexpected vision, we stood off and on till morning. It proved to be the island called on the chart Ohiteroa. It is laid down thirty miles too far to the eastward. We made its position latitude $22^{\circ} 29' S.$, and longitude $151^{\circ} 22' W.$ It is rather high bluff land, and has bold water close to. The chief settlement is on the east by north side. The inhabitants are quiet gentle people, and use the Tahitian dialect; they call the island Rurutu. It has no harbour, and no encircling reef. I went on shore and staid a few hours trading for refreshments, and then continued our course.

February 5th. — Sighted Rapa, having been exactly a calendar month beating a passage, which, with a fair wind, is not more than an ordinary six day's run. We were led to expect that the winds would prevail from the south-east, but, unfortunately, after we had beaten our way to the southward, and were several degrees higher than Rapa, the wind came from the northward, and we could not gain in our approach to the island. On reference to the log, it appears that, as we altered the bearings of the island, so did the wind shift, and blow exactly from the point we wanted to make. All judgment was baffled by the extraordinary perversity of the winds, as, try what tack we would, so would they be sure to meet us; the weather, moreover, was squally and wet in the extreme, which, I am told, is regular Rapa weather. I despaired of our making the island at all;

once or twice I felt disposed to relinquish the attempt. At length, by close beating and short tacks, we managed to get to the eastward; and a slant coming from the southward, we clapped on all sail, and at five A. M. of this date the island was discernible. At ten A. M. we lowered the boat, and pulled in to examine the harbour. The entrance to it is through a coral reef, exactly on the south-east side of the island. The passage is narrow, winding, and intricate. But having threaded its intricacies, you suddenly find yourself floating in a land-locked basin, enclosed with shelving hills. There is not a hundred square yards of level land on the island; and such level patches as do exist are swampy bottoms, probably from the unceasing drainings of the acclivitous hills. This swampy soil is favourable to the growth of tarro, which consequently is the chief vegetable production of the place. A cocoa-nut tree will not grow here, nor do I believe it flourishes without the tropics. The day was Sunday, and the natives would not enter into any conversation about business; but, strange to say, though they were rigidly strict in abstaining from labour and barter on this day, they made not the slightest scruple to enter into certain negotiations about their wives and daughters. As I foresaw some delay in engaging men and obtaining food, I had the vessel brought in—a course which I would not recommend any one in a hurry to follow. You must have a fair wind to take you out again; and as the winds for the greater part of the year prevail from the east, you run the risk of being detained a prisoner for weeks at a stretch. No sooner were we at anchor, than just as my mind

foreboded, the winds came strong from the south-east; and it was ten days before we had a chance of getting out again. The natives speak the Tahitian dialect, but have also one of their own. After much cross purpose, lying, and debate, on the part of the chiefs, they at length gave their consent for my taking away a number of men as divers. Most on the island were desirous to go, being miserably off for clothing and articles of European manufacture, but the chiefs instigated them to enter into no engagement unless I would give very exorbitant pay. The winds not allowing me to leave the harbour, I was in no hurry to drive the bargain; but the dread of their chiefs prevailed, and I was ultimately compelled to give the monthly payment they demanded or go without them. I laid in a large stock of *tioo* for them, made from the tarro. The tarro is first washed and scraped free from all fibres of the outer coating; and it is laid up in pits lined with leaves and grass, and well covered over with stones. In this manner it becomes consolidated into a paste-like mass, and will keep for a year or two. It has to me a sour and very unpleasant flavour, being something like that of turned cream cheese; and its smell is like that of a strong cheese. The natives are passionately fond of it, and will eat three or four pounds weight of it at a meal if they can get it. They say it makes them dive well, particularly if they eat plenty of it, which is certainly not to be wondered at; but they say the bread-fruit *tioo* gives them the shivers, and sets them shaking all over.

A queen presides over the destinies of Rapa. She

is a widow; and the talk was, that as soon as our vessel had taken its departure a meeting of the chiefs would be convened to debate the propriety of deposing her from her high rank, for her gallantries with her subjects. By native law, the subject participating in her unlawful pleasures is considered guilty of high treason, and death is the punishment; but, in order to procure condemnation, a chief must be a witness to the fact; and though the crime may have been committed fifty times, and have been witnessed by fifty different persons, still, if no one of the eye-witnesses ranks as chief, the culpable party cannot be condemned. Her majesty is an elderly and not good-looking personage, and her last criminal act was shared with a stout stripling almost young enough to be her grandson. They have missionary teachers, natives of Tahiti, amongst them. The observance of the Sabbath is enforced by the chiefs, although, like all other natives I have seen, their religion is merely the service of the lip. The common people are restrained from doing their will by fear of their chiefs; the latter never allow their religion to stand in the way of their personal interests.

February 13th.—It being a dead calm, we tried to tow out of the harbour; but though we had four boats engaged, with full complements of men, just as we were in the most intricate part of the passage a light breeze sprang up in our teeth, baffling our endeavours, and compelling us to return to our anchorage.

February 15th.—Another dead calm; and at daylight we had our anchor up, and the boats again

towing us. From the length and intricacy of the passage, our natives got worn out with fatigue before we had secured a proper offing; and as the vessel's crew was not sufficient in number to man a boat, we had the satisfaction of witnessing the vessel helplessly drift towards a pile of perpendicular rocks. Nearer and nearer she approached. Every soul in the vessel but the man at the wheel left her to double bank the oars; but vain were our exertions, we were within twice her length of the dark frowning mass above us. No human aid could save us. In the moment of despair the captain uttered a joyous shout: a light breeze aloft filled the royal, and gave us headway of about half a knot. Towards evening a gentle breeze placed us out of danger. It is impossible to tow out of the harbour when there is any wind against you; and when there is no wind at all, the danger of drifting ashore is so great that I would never think of risking the experiment again.

February 16th.—Early this morning we were close to Bass's Rocks, or the Four Crowns. On being close to them you see but three distinct rocks, but when they bore south-south-west of us, and distant about nine miles, they assumed the appearance of four isolated rocky points, which may have obtained for them the latter name. They lie forty miles east by north from Rapa, and are discernible from the mountains in a clear day. They are called by the natives *Maretiri*.

March 2nd.—From the time of our leaving Rapa till this day we have had nothing but a succession

of calms and light winds from northward easterly. The assurances from those who had long sailed in these seas were positive that we should find the winds strong from the south-east; but saving the ten days we were tantalised by them during our stay in the harbour of Rapa, we have had no winds with southing in them since quitting Tahiti. This makes the fifteenth day that we have been *humbugging* to Gambier's Islands. We sighted them on February 28th; but, with our usual luck, the wind was directly from them, and we had a tedious beating match to gain an offing to the eastward, that on the other tack we might lay into the passage. At nine A.M. we crossed the reef, and at one P.M. dropped anchor a cable or two's length from Elson's Island, known to the natives as Akema. This is a well sheltered position for a vessel intending making a long stay, being protected from the north-west winds which blow at times with fearful violence, and you may anchor in eight or nine fathoms water. My original intention on leaving Tahiti was to have gone with my divers to an island called by us Lord Hood's Island, by the natives Maretea: here, I intended to have landed with my men and food, and to have sent the ship for shelter to Gambier's Islands, as there is no harbour or anchorage at Maretea, but the time lost from the adverse winds we encountered, with the assurances of the divers, that it would be expense thrown away in stopping at Maretea, the shell at that island being thin and brittle, and the difficulty of getting it off to the ship after it had been collected very great, induced me to alter my intention. I was furnished

with credentials to the French priests living on Gambier's Islands; and though I had my doubts, still I conceived it possible to procure a cargo there. I was met with friendliness by the "Holy Father" to whom I presented myself; and far from opposing any obstacle to my employing my divers, he advised me where to locate the men, and wished me a prosperous voyage. Unfortunately, as I was about to land them in the evening, agreeably to the instructions of the superior, another priest came running down at the head of a disorderly mob, waving a stick in his hand, ordering my people not to land, but to go back to the ship. A war of words ensued; and noticing from the vessel that a disturbance was up, I hastened to prevent mischief. I was only just in time, as I had to leap into the sea to arrest a conflict; and I immediately sent my people on board again. I did not admire the indecorous heat of this French priest, particularly as he was one of the two priests expelled from Tahiti by queen Pomare, and for which expulsion she had been made to pay so dear. The Rapa people were burning with indignation at thus being scurvily driven from a resting-place, and were loud in their entreaties for me to lead them on to a general fight. Early the next morning I again hastened to the superior, having previously sent my men away to dive. The superior expressed his regret at any misunderstanding having arisen, and sent another priest with me to arrange matters. The spot he assigned my divers was not such as I desired; but he submitted that it was away from the Mareva natives, which would prevent any quarrelling or contention between

the two parties. I had many of the Mareva natives to visit me in the course of the day, and all brought with them some article or other for sale. Whether it was a concerted plan or not I do not know, but one and all asked such an absurd price for what they had to dispose of as entirely put it out of my power to make a single purchase. For a pearl that in England or France would be estimated at the value of six shillings or ten francs at the outside, they asked me eighty fathoms of print. Vegetables or refreshments of any kind the priests declared they had none to dispose of, and expressed their anxiety to obtain any spare food I might have laid in for my own people. And when our boats went diving, from twenty to thirty canoes, with Mareva natives, commenced opposition, diving all round the vessel and in the track of our people: in short, the whole of the proceedings were such as so thoroughly to disgust the Rapa men, that they requested me to leave and go to Hao or Bow Island; and as my stock of food was not abundant enough for a long stay, and knowing that where the heart was absent from the duty little good could be expected, I deemed it advisable to comply with their reiterated request. On giving notice of this to the priests, they expressed surprise and regret at my determination; but at the same time seemed anxious to confirm me in it, by renewing the assurances of the utter impossibility of my procuring fresh supplies in case I became straitened for food, as they said that "about two years ago a great wind came, and blew down most of the bread fruit and cocoa-nut trees."

The *three priests* have acquired such complete ascendancy over the minds of the simple natives, that they dare not act contrary to their wishes ; and any attempt of mine to elicit a free answer from any of them, on any subject, was always met with a most confused expression of countenance, and with "I don't understand." The men appeared sensible of their enthrallment, and ashamed of it ; but having no idea how to free themselves from it, they submit helplessly to the yoke. That the priests do not avail themselves of the labours of the natives to enrich their society I would not believe, for the poor fellows are continually diving throughout the year, and yet rarely possess any thing of value to offer for sale. It is reported, that when any pearl of value is found it is taken to the king. I cannot contradict the rumour, but from the abject appearance of his majesty, I should rather conclude that it went to the king's ghostly adviser ; the monarch apparently possessing as much authority as a "footless stocking without a leg," to use the Irishman's definition of nothing. The natives are taught regularly to attend the confessional, where every action of their lives transpires, and I can form an idea as to the manner in which pearls of value are appropriated : but surely the soul's welfare is of far greater consideration than many pearls. I was so annoyed at not being able to obtain a direct answer from any of the natives, that I taxed them with being dumb, and asked them if they had only got three men upon the islands that could speak. They shrugged their shoulders and replied, "I don't know." The women,

as usual, on the approach of any of us were hidden from sight. On my first landing, not being expected, some laughing young damsels stole out, evidently bent upon a romp; but when they espied the portly paunch of the superior coming bustling up, they retreated like rabbits to their burrows. I was desirous of visiting the convent; but, as I before noticed, it is situated a considerable way up Mount Duff; and, from the system of espionage that is maintained all over the islands, no one could approach it without the priests having immediate intimation of the same. I was informed that the girls are *not* detained in the convent longer than they are *pleased* voluntarily to remain, but why the priests wish to keep them there at all is a mystery requiring explanation.

March 5th. — We purchased our anchor with difficulty this morning, from the chains having got foul of the rocks. At four P.M. we were free of the reefs that surrounded the islands; and at seven P.M., when about twenty miles from the land, Mount Duff bearing east by south, we observed a beautiful phenomenon in the west-south-west point of the heavens. I noticed it the night previously, as we lay at anchor opposite Elson's Island; but it being at the time partially obscured by dark rolling clouds, and becoming wholly so as I gazed, I paid no more attention to it; but this evening, the heavens being clear, it had the appearance of a brilliant comet, with a blazing tail of great length shooting high up into the vault of heaven. Its nucleus was about thirteen degrees in altitude when I was called on deck to observe it, and at a quarter to eight P.M. it had

dipped below the horizon ; but for a long time after its tail continued to illumine the firmament. No mention is made of any comet in the nautical ephemeris, and its aspect was quite startling. The natives were surprised at its appearance, some imagining it to be a rainbow ; but on being made sensible of their error, confessed they had never seen any thing like it before. The weather is close and sultry, and it has been particularly so at night for the last four or five nights.

March 6th. — Sighted Lord Hood's Island, or Maratea. It is very low, and of a most treacherous *anguis-in-herba*-like appearance. At half-past six P.M., the comet, or whatever it is, became again visible ; I watched it till it began to decline in altitude, which it did after reaching $12^{\circ} 20'$ by the sextant. As the night grew darker, its tail emitted a luminous flood of light ; it was as if myriads of the moon's pale rays had been concentrated in one bright stream. At eight P.M. it had set below the horizon.

March 9th. — At three P.M. Les four Facardines was discernible from the mast-head. The atmosphere being particularly clear, we judged we were about eighteen miles from it. The natives were desirous that I should land, asserting that there was abundance of shell in the lagoon of the island, and that it was uninhabited, which is rather a singular thing, there being cocoa-nut trees upon it. Some of the Rapa men say they were in a vessel that for a long time tried in vain to make this island, and at length gave up the attempt ; they say the native name for

it is Hereheretue.* There is a boat passage, but no entrance to the lagoon for shipping. The comet (assuming it to be such) is increasing in altitude: at this present writing, eight P.M., it seems like a rod of light suspended above the earth, warning weak man of his nothingness.

March 10th.—Far away astern of us, Thrum Cap Island was just discernible as day dawned this morning. It bears nearly east-north-east, and about twenty miles from Les four Facardines. Both these islands are laid down six miles too far to the southward. The natives knew nothing of Thrum Cap. It appeared a small round clump when we saw it, something resembling a cap. None of the heavenly bodies visible to night, from the cloudiness of the atmosphere.

March 11th.—We were all this day beating about Hao Island and Amann, the wind heading us on every tack, just as it did on our making Rapa; and positively, as night drew in upon us, we did not appear to have worked a mile to windward.

March 12th.—After close beating all night, and many short boards, this morning, at half-past eleven A. M., we again entered with safety the lagoon of Hao Island; and at three P. M. dropped anchor at our old station. The comet was very brilliant this night, and has considerably increased its altitude.

March 21st.—The Rapa divers up to this date had scarcely done any thing but consume food; and on my reproaching them with incapacity, they per-

* See Vol. II. p. 52.

sisted that there was no shell in the lagoon. Upon this I engaged some of the Hao natives, who quickly disproved the statement by bringing in their one boat as many shell as the Rapa men in three boats, and in much less time. I therefore took another boat from the Rapa men and gave it to the men of Hao; and the result was, that the latter used daily to return with more than double the quantity of shell procured by the former, who were compelled to confess they were ashamed of themselves. I had some difficulty in settling with the Hao men, as, on witnessing the incompetency of the others, they wanted to be off their bargain, and insinuated that they ought to have higher payment; but as I had paid them beforehand, I insisted upon their fulfilling their agreement. They continued diving for the time stipulated; but their heap of shell being so much bigger than that of the Rapa divers, they coolly told me that, unless I would give them extra pay, they would only deliver to me one half the shell. That evening I convened a meeting, and, in the presence of their king, complained of the bad faith of the Hao divers; "and now listen," I continued: "as soon as we are ready to receive the shell on board, I shall take it without consulting you; and the consequences be upon the heads of any of you that will dare to oppose me. I gave the payment you asked for; and now, because the Rapa men are a useless idle set, you think to impose upon me; but I am not a child, and it will be at the peril of your lives if you seek to detain from me the property obtained through my own boats, by you, whom I have both fed and paid." Seeing that I was

in no humour to be played with, the king called out to "let the talk cease, for they had nothing more to say."

April 6th. — This evening the comet was no longer visible. It had been gradually growing fainter and fainter as it increased its ascent in the vast vacuity above us, till at length, although the heavens were particularly clear and favourable for observation, not the dimmest ray could be discerned by the naked eye.

The Rapa divers still continue bad as ever. A deputation of Hao natives waited upon me, volunteering to fill the vessel if I would send the Rapa men away. I reproached them with their former want of good faith, and would have nothing to say to them.

April 12th. — We have been just a month diving, and the shell collected does not exceed eight tons, nor that of the best description. The Rapa natives had been represented to me, by every one who had had any thing to do with diving, as the best divers in these seas; and it was the high encomiums passed upon them, together with earnest advice from old pearling voyagers, that induced me to throw away so much time and persevere in going to Rapa. Too late I found out my error. They are not to compare with the Paumutu men; and, although coming from a far colder climate, they used to complain of the cold much more than the natives of the island did; and altogether they are a feebler race. From the difficulties they started when I wished to engage them, the high price they stood out for, and the depreciatory and slighting tone with which they spoke

of the Chain Islanders as divers, I was led to expect great things from them; but I have been miserably disappointed. The Hao natives again came to me, and entreated me to let them fill the vessel, and they would leave it with me to reward them after the work was finished. To prevent mistake or misunderstanding, I assembled them before their king, and caused them to renew their offers. The king sanctioned their proceedings, and I agreed to send the Rapa men away. This evening I informed the latter of my determination, and reproached them rather bitterly for their impudent pretensions, as, after all their boasting, they had not been able to collect as many shell as would pay for their food. They admitted they had deceived themselves, and were willing to abide by any decision I might come to.

April 13th. — Sent away the Hao men with the boats, and paid off the Rapa people, each man according to his merits. They appeared content with what I gave, as I imagine they did not expect any thing.

April 14th. — At eleven A.M. the vessel got under weigh, with a fine fresh breeze, to convey my Rapa blackguards home; leaving me the only white man on the island, a sort of Robinson Crusoe, surrounded by tractable savages. I instructed the captain to procure a fresh supply of *tioo*, as it was my determination to stay at Hao, and, if possible, fill the vessel.

A few nights ago I was called up to see one of the Hao divers, who had been suddenly seized with

sickness. I found him in great pain, with his stomach swollen and very hard. Thinking that he might have eaten something that had poisoned him, I administered a grain and a half of tartar-emetic in half a tumbler of water. Producing no effect, in a quarter of an hour I repeated the dose; and it still not operating, and his pain continuing, I gave him a dose of calomel and opium. The poor fellow shook his head as he took it, and told me it was of no use, for he would soon be dead. I tried to laugh the notion away, and ridiculed the fears of his friends; but the swelling continued to increase, till his belly and chest were expanded as tight as a drum: it was one of the most distressing sights I ever witnessed. Finding I could do him no good, I suffered the natives to adopt their own remedies; but by this time his jaws had become collapsed and firmly set; and exactly at turn of tide, as the natives predicted would be the case, the poor fellow expired: death having ensued within ten hours from the time of his attack. It appeared that his friends never entertained the hope of saving him, unless from any superhuman skill that might be in my hands. They told me that the Tupapan of his uncle, recently dead, had come for him; that it had got inside him, which caused him to swell so; and although they were desirous of trying every remedy I could suggest, they felt there was no chance of his living. They related many queer things of the Tupapan, and have many singular superstitions with respect to the dead, and many strange observances. They tried to make me understand them; but my un-

acquaintance with the language prevents my recording much that might have proved curious and interesting.

Throughout the night following the death of this native, his parents and relatives kept up an unintermitted lamentation. The grief of the mother was frantic. Sometimes the mourners would be locked in each other's embraces over the corpse; and sometimes they would stretch themselves upon the enshrouded body, shedding tears, and chanting a most mournful dirge. The mother's feelings occasionally became so acute, that, clasping her hands above her head, she would dash herself to the earth. I went to witness the closing scene, which took place next morning. The ceremony was a compound of the old heathen practices and an attempt at our mode of burial. The pagan rites were gone through first. The same prostration of grief took place by the side of the grave, and the same mournful chanting; whilst the mother and another female went through the most extraordinary gestures, making at the same time such diabolical grimaces as baffle description. This was defying the evil spirit. But the grief of the mother was too agonising to allow of her carrying on this pantomime, as she would break off in the middle of her acting to give vent to bursts of anguish. The other female, with the most imperturbable gravity, kept time with her hands, feet, and body, to the awful distortions of her countenance. This part done, one of the natives, who had been to Tahiti, and was in possession of a primer, held it

inverted, showing his great knowledge of the use of it, and made, as if he read from it, a short prayer. The body was then consigned to its original dust.

April 19th.— This night, at about eight o'clock, I was attacked with a violent pain in the bowels, which increased to such an unbearable degree as to cause me to vomit greatly. The natives were much alarmed, and the king particularly so, as it was supposed that the Tupapan had got hold of me, for the incredulity I had always evinced with respect to its asserted powers. The king feared that I should die, and that he would be held accountable for my death. Not having any medicine by me, and having been an eye-witness of the rapid mortality of the diseases of the place, I felt an unpleasant sensation creep over me, as I was quite incapable of writing, so that I could leave no inventory of my effects as a check against peculations; and I much feared the abduction of some valuable pearls, for which we had paid, in cash and promissory notes, 1000*l.* sterling. All night I suffered severely, tossing about in restless pain; but at six A. M. it began to subside, and I gradually grew better. Then was my turn to laugh at the Tupapan; but the native faith in it was not to be shaken by any thing I could say or do.

April 21st.— Apropos of the Tupapan, just as I had turned in for the night, I was roused by an unusual cry of consternation, and found all the natives assembled round the king's house. They were in much alarm, for an assault had been made upon it by the Tupapan, which they stated had pelted it with stones; and one man affirmed that he saw it in

the likeness of three men without legs. To satisfy them of the absurdity of their notions, I went as I was to their burial-place, and, followed by a few of the more resolute, led the way to the most secluded spots. Every thing was in the quiet repose of a still night, and not the slightest object presented itself to feed the excited fancy; but the natives attributed it to the fearlessness and want of belief of the white man. No other disturbance ensued during the night; but in the morning, I found that one fellow had availed himself of the general confusion to steal the *tioo*; and there is not a doubt that the whole uproar was a shrewd contrivance of the thief's to cover his designs. The rogue had made off in his canoe before I had discovered the theft; and when I explained my belief to the rest, they laughed heartily at the suggestion, but pertinaciously claved to their ridiculous credulity in the powers of the Tupapan.

April 25th.—A canoe arrived from Amann, the low island a few miles to the northward of Hao. The natives of Amann, unlike those of Rapa and Hao, had been particularly observant of the comet, which they called *poruma* (night fire). Their visit to Hao was principally occasioned by their dread of the comet, as they have a notion that it will destroy their island. Much speechifying took place, by way of greeting and condolence; and by what I could understand, they seemed to intimate that the sea had made terrible encroachments upon their scanty allotment of earth, and they feared that it would shortly be submerged. The Hao Islanders sympathised with them, and, pointing to their own miserable

patches, told them that, such as they were, they were willing to share them if they were reduced to the extremity of flying from Amann.

April 28th.—Had to cause my chancellor to resign his keys of office, on discovering this day that he had been carrying on a systematic series of plunder. He is a native of the Sandwich Isles, that I brought with me from Rapa. From his childhood he has been sailing about in whale ships, though understanding but a few words of English. At the close of voyages he has been set ashore at different islands, and in this way I came to pick him up at Rapa. The Rapa people had treated him with great hospitality and kindness; and, in return, the dog practised towards them great ingratitude, bringing me all sorts of evil reports against them, and continually warning me to be on my guard as to their honesty. This he did, I expect, to divert suspicion from himself. On my sending the Rapa people back again, fearful of the consequences of his behaviour, he would not return with them, but requested permission to remain with me so long as I staid upon the island, or perhaps I could carry him on to the Main; if not, he would take his chance with the Hao natives. At first I took him to be an eccentric original, but thought him decidedly honest; I treated him kindly, and promised him fair usage if he behaved well. Unfortunately, my kindness tempted him to take liberties, and I detected him in several petty delinquencies. At last I threatened to discharge him without further remuneration if I caught him at any more tricks; and in the event that such

might prove the case, like many another minister, he set about providing for the time of need. My provisions went off in a galloping consumption, and I missed many things that I could afterwards gain no tidings of. I considered myself well supplied in every thing I required for a month; but after the first eight days, the flour, sugar, tea, bread, and beer, were all expended, although I was careful in seeing that only sufficient for the day was taken out at a time. I was greatly amazed; but still my suspicions were not drawn towards him, as, on mentioning my doubts of foul practices, he artfully contrived to make me understand that the Hao natives were not to be trusted, only it did not do for him to say so too openly; and he hinted that it would be as well if I did not allow so many of them to come into and about the house. Still, every day I was sensible of the loss of something or another; and out of a tierce of beef I opened at noon for the divers, only one half was left the next morning. Probably even then I should not have discovered the thief, but, fortunately for me this morning he was taken unwell, and was compelled to lie down, and then the "murder came out;" he had been in the habit of supplying the women about the place with any thing they chose to ask for. I used to wonder at the airs of superiority he assumed over the Hao natives, and the quietness with which the latter submitted to be bullied by him. The audacious varlet had had the impudence to tell them that he was my partner, and that it was principally through his influence that the Rapa men were sent away, and his gifts were looked

upon as confirmatory proof of his assertions. Out of four dozen ale, I only saw nineteen bottles, including six broken ones. Other things had been abstracted in similar proportion. On reproaching him with his conduct, he was so overwhelmed that he offered not a word in his defence; although on ordinary occasions he assumed such a look of blank ignorance, and replied to accusations with babble so foreign to the subject, that I used to imagine it impossible that such a half-witted ass could rob me. The fellow's head is shaped like that of a wild boar; and nature has bestowed upon him an idiotic cast of countenance, which he cunningly contrives at pleasure to render still more vacant, as a mask to conceal his knavery.

May 1st.—No diving for the last three days. It has been blowing hard from the southward, creating too heavy a sea. The divers started this morning, and I accompanied a party of natives on a fishing excursion. We went to the outside reef, some with sticks, and others with hand-nets, ten or twelve feet long by six feet deep, the centre of the net running out into a bag. As the heavy sea of the ocean broke upon the reef, large fish would at times be carried out in the swell of the spent breakers; and as the fish endeavoured with the receding of the waters to regain the sea, it was the duty of those with sticks to beat the water, shout, and do all they could to frighten the fish into the nets of their companions. In this way several fine fish were taken; but the sport not being so abundant as the natives wished, we crossed over to the lagoon and now com-

menced another system. From long practice, the natives can distinguish the slightest change in the appearance of the water; and a shade which I could not perceive, though repeatedly pointed out to me, they at once knew to be a shoal of fish. With sticks in their hands, they jumped into the water on either side the shoal, and struck out to encompass it. Having formed a semicircle, they began to lessen their distance one from the other, hallooing, splashing, and driving the fish towards the land. In vain did the frightened natives of the deep dash here and there, they were met at all points. In vain do they attempt their escape by darting deeper into their element, their expert foes dive at their approach and frighten them back again; till, almost driven on the land, closely surrounded by their scaring invaders, one only chance seems open for them, they dash at it, and are instantly secured in the wily net. I staid to witness their success in four consecutive attempts, and at each haul they caught from 300 to 400.

May 5th.—No sign of the vessel; and in consequence of all my food being expended, and there being but a day or two's supply of *tioo*, the divers came to me last night to express their regret at seeing me without the food I was accustomed to; and as the island would produce nothing that would serve as a substitute for bread or vegetables, they urged me to appropriate the remainder of the *tioo* for my own use, as it was uncertain when the vessel might make her appearance. It was considerate of them; nor did I deem it prudent to neglect their advice. Hence I

secured the *tioo* in a barrel and hauled the boats up under shelter of the trees, as it is impossible for the men to go diving and procure their own food. They rarely have food in store; and when, as it sometimes happens, the weather is too stormy for days together to admit of their venturing out in their frail canoes, they endeavour by sleep to dissipate their sensations of hunger. Fish is their staple diet, and a most gigantic load can they stow away.

May 6th. — The divers have dispersed to various parts of the island, that they may be able to procure food for themselves and families. A canoe came from the mouth of the harbour to-day, and in it was a young man, of whom the natives furnished a somewhat strange account. They say he came to their island about two years ago in a small canoe, only sufficiently large to contain one man; that he spoke a dialect different from theirs, and remained some months with them before he could make himself understood; and then he told them he had fled from his own island in a state of terror from a murderous descent made upon it by several canoes full of armed people, who, at the time of his escape, were butchering his countrymen wholesale. He was two days upon the sea, without food or water, when he made the south-eastern extremity of Hao, which leads me to infer that he comes from an island south-east from Hao, as his cockle-shell of a canoe could never have gone head to wind. I questioned him, but he had not the slightest idea as to the direction of his island; his panic, probably, deprived him of all power of observation. He stated he

belonged to Faeatae, one of a group of eight islands; the names of the others being as follow: Pinaki, Uoapuni, Uairatea, Moru, Nukutivaki, Uoakiaki, and Reau. At some of the islands he said there were cocoa-nut trees and tarro; they were all lagoon islands, and at Uairatea there was plenty of mother-of-pearl shell. I suspect that some of the islands to the southward and eastward of Hao, and looked upon by us as uninhabited, form the group he alludes to. Even now the young man has difficulty in making himself understood; and the Hao natives, in conversing with him, always speak more slowly and deliberately than when talking to each other.

May 11th.—Quite worn out with disappointed expectation, this morning, at daybreak, I was preparing to accompany some of the natives to the island of Amann. I had got my traps into the boat, and we were on the point of shoving off, when the welcome shout of “Ti pahi, ti pahi!” (The ship, the ship!) greeted my ears. I hurried across the reef, and had the satisfaction of seeing her almost abreast of us. We were twenty miles up the lagoon; so, without staying to shift anything, we loosed the boat’s sail and started for the entrance of the harbour. We reached the passage first; and finding the current setting out with great force, and a heavy, short, broken sea on, I stood out to warn them to keep the vessel off till the next day. All was well on board. Bad weather off Rapa had been the detaining cause; they had encountered a gale, which for ten days kept them on and off the island, without permitting them to lower a boat. In re-

turning, the captain fell in with two islands not noticed on the chart; and as our chronometer is an excellent instrument, and the captain an efficient navigator, I have no doubt the positions he has assigned them are sufficiently accurate for the purposes of navigation. The one was in latitude $18^{\circ} 46' S.$, longitude $141^{\circ} 48' W.$; and the other in latitude $19^{\circ} 34' S.$, longitude $140^{\circ} 30' W.$: both were low lagoon islands, and uninhabited. According to the captain's statement, a reef extended for several miles off the south end of the island first alluded to. Stunted herbage was all that could be seen growing upon either of them. Santelmo, on the chart a considerable lagoon island, purporting to have been discovered in 1606, has no existence where it is laid down, viz. in $21^{\circ} 22' S.$, and $142^{\circ} W.$; and Bligh's lagoon island, delineated small and circular, in latitude $21^{\circ} 42' S.$, and longitude $140^{\circ} 30' W.$, is both further to the northward and westward, and, from the captain's observations, corresponds nearly in form and size with that called Santelmo. It is probable that they are one and the same island. The captain also ran close past the position assigned to Gloucester Island. No such island was visible, although it is stated on the chart to be inhabited.

May 12th.—About half an hour after the sun had attained its meridian altitude, we ran into the lagoon with as much facility as if we were sailing into any ordinary harbour, and dropped anchor for the night about eight or nine miles up the lagoon.

May 13th.—All this day engaged in beating to where the natives wanted us to take up our station.

It was considerably higher up than ever any vessel had ventured before, and I had reason to repent my temerity in proceeding thither. Countless coral knolls were in our way, and every moment it was "hard up" or "hard down;" and further progress was terminated by our striking on a sunken reef and carrying away part of our forefoot and false keel. We could not see the reef till we were upon it. Fortunately we sustained no material damage; and taking the encounter as a hint to bring to for the night, we let go the anchor in eight fathoms water about a cable's length from the shore.

May 14th.—Being Sunday, we merely dropped the vessel into a clear berth, and moored her opposite a grove of cocoa-nut trees, about eight miles from the south extreme of the lagoon.

May 16th.—Yesterday the natives were employed in erecting their huts; and this morning, it being fine weather, and there being nothing to interfere with their diving, I was surprised at seeing the boats lying on the beach, and went on shore to inquire the cause. After some hesitation, it came out that they had resolved not to continue diving unless I would advance payment. This being in direct violation of their agreement, and having experienced the mischief of paying beforehand, I told them in plain terms that I would not consent to their demands. I upbraided them with their treacherous conduct, and assured them that if they fancied they had got me in their power, they should find themselves mistaken; for, if they refused to dive, I would not touch a shell they had collected, but would at once leave their

island, and would return again with sufficient force to exact redress. I gave them the time I should be engaged at breakfast to think upon my words, resolved to carry my threat into effect, if, at its expiration, they obstinately persisted in their conduct. I had scarcely got on board when, happening to look seaward, I discovered a large vessel not far off, running along the land to the southward. We immediately hoisted the British flag, and shortly after some natives came alongside to tell us that a boat was approaching the shore. We went to meet her, and I induced the natives to swim with her through the surf and land her safely on the reef. The vessel proved the Jules de Blossville, a French brig of 300 tons. I invited the second mate, who had charge of the boat, and his crew on board to breakfast. One of his crew was an Englishman, the only one belonging to the brig. Through him we understood that the captain had a general cargo for sale; and after we had finished our repast, I had a boat launched over the reef, and went to see if I could make a few purchases. Our boat gained somewhat upon the Frenchman's, and, as we neared the vessel, I was surprised that no symptoms appeared of heaving her to; and we narrowly escaped being run down. Not a soul could we see; but as she glided past us, striking our gunwale, a port was raised, and a gun run out and depressed towards us. I laughingly pointed it out to the captain of our vessel (the only white man with me) as a friendly way of receiving visitors. Not having seen the manœuvre, he wanted to persuade me that the port was raised for the purpose of hand-

ing us a rope; but not a rope did they hand us, and we were half a mile astern before they condescended to back their headyards, and allow us to pull alongside. On gaining the quarterdeck, no one came to receive us; and not a man was visible but the helmsman. Whilst joking at this extraordinary behaviour, the captain showed himself. He offered no apology; but addressing us in English, with much coarse freedom he invited us into his cabin. He produced some brandy, and called for a bottle of champagne, which he said he would broach to friendship. On trying to do business with him, he urged me to buy such things as I had no earthly use for; but the goods I stood in need of he would not sell me, saving one or two trifling articles, which he requested the mate to put on one side for me. But he did not do this, even, until I had produced a handful of gold, to satisfy a question put to me through the mate, as to what means I had of payment. The captain understood English pretty well, and the mate spoke it fluently. They were bound to the Main; and having expressed a wish to write to Valparaiso, the captain hastened to oblige me with pen, ink, and paper. Whilst engaged writing, the captain of our schooner looked in to say that we were nearly out of sight of the island. I begged he would request them to "go about," and continued writing, when, all of a sudden, the cry of "Armez vous! armez vous! tout de suite, tout de suite!" caused me to run out to see what was the matter. The deck was covered with men, some armed with muskets and fowling-pieces, whilst others were run-

ning to procure arms. The French captain was raving and gesticulating like a lunatic; our captain was remonstrating in broken French; and the poor naked natives whom we had with us had taken to the boats, with the exception of two, whose concern in my behalf had kept them clinging to the rail to watch the result. Unable to comprehend the meaning of all this gasconade, I put my hand on the Frenchman's shoulder, and inquired, "What the devil's up?" My captain, who was as strong as Hercules, with much agitation begged me to do nothing that might make matters worse. The other comprehended him, and it emboldened him to seize me pretty roughly by the waist. I shook him free, and he rushed aft. I followed; and he, seizing a cutlass lying by the wheel, drew it and made a pass at me. By an agile movement of the body, I escaped being run through, the sword going between my arm and side. Sneering at the ruffian, I entered his cabin, tore up the letter on which I had been engaged, and threw the fragments in his face. The treacherous rascal did not repeat his thrust, as I could have combed his head with one of the cabin stools; but he hastened forward and filled upon his ship, putting her head before the wind, and in a few minutes our boat would have been dragged under, as it was only secured by a short painter to one of the chain-plates. In vain I inquired the meaning of such treatment; the mate did nothing but implore me to leave the vessel; and at last, there being no other remedy, I went over the side to enjoy the luxury of nearly a twenty miles pull beneath a burning tropical sun. The

cause of the fellow's playing us such a trick I am utterly at a loss to conceive; but this I know, I shall consider twice ere I trust myself on board a Frenchman again. As soon as the natives on shore learnt how I had been served, they came flocking on board to sympathise with me, and the next morning all went diving with hearty good will.

May 18th.—I have witnessed the blighting effects of grief in many; but never in the course of my experience did I behold so mournful a proof of its devastating nature as was exhibited in the person of the mother of the diver who was carried off so suddenly, as above related. When she was attending on her dying son she was a fleshy robust woman. I mentioned how ill her grief qualified her to take part in the pagan ceremonies of interment; and for some days after the melancholy event the bereaved parents absented themselves from their tribe, and lived in a hut temporarily erected only a few paces distant from the grave of their child. They freed the spot from weeds and rubbish, and raised monumental slabs of coral at the head and feet of the prematurely dead, and on these slabs they suspended offerings of food and water to the departed spirit. The mother gathered the vine of a creeper growing near her son's last resting-place, and twisting it into a wreath, wore it round her neck; and today, when I met her, the wreath had not shrunk and withered more than she had done. Her eyes had sunken, her raven hair had changed to grey, and her flesh hung in folds upon her body; tears were continually streaming down her cheeks, she would not

be comforted, and refused to partake of more food than was barely necessary to support life; and I have little doubt that a few weeks will suffice to unite her spirit with her son's. Never did I behold such hopeless misery depicted in the face of a human being. Her image haunts me to this hour; and talk of the sombre garb with which Europeans are in the habit of clothing their woe, nothing can be compared with the intensity of feeling outwardly displayed by that withered and still withering wreath, resting on that shrivelled and still shrivelling bosom.

May 27th.—Ceased diving; the weather had become cold and windy, and the divers making daily complaint of the scarcity of shell, and the great depth of water in which they had to dive for it, I took compassion on them, and told them they might leave off, although the vessel would not be above two thirds full. I promised to pay them well for what they had done; and the joyous shout with which the announcement was received convinces me that the poor fellows speak truly, when they say the shell is scarce and difficult to procure. I have got a few fine pearls amongst the lot collected, but the great bulk are seed pearl.

It is the generally received opinion, that pearls are the result of disease in the oyster; and I have read that the Chinese, conscious of this fact, are in the habit of stringing on impalpable hairs minute seed pearl, which they introduce into the opening shells when the fish are feeding, and in the course of time they provoke the disorder, and become entirely coated with the pearly encrustation. Others again

say that this opinion is erroneous; but when an enemy attacks the fish, it sheds drops in its defence, which become pearls. I am no ichthyologist to decide the question, and will merely record the result of my observations. Out of more than a hundred tons of the mother-of-pearl oyster opened in my presence, every shell containing pearl was more or less diseased, the backs having a wormeaten appearance; and I do not remember a pearl being found in a sound and healthy-looking shell. The more aged and wormeaten they appear, the greater is the probability of finding pearl. I noticed that almost every healthy-looking bivalve enclosed within its shells one or two parasitical fish, of a transparent light red colour, resembling a small shrimp in form, with long feelers; and the natives assured me that these parasites ejected from the shells the pearls as soon as formed. They are slimy and inert in body, being more of the substance of jelly than shells, but are continually working their feelers with a pushing and retractile motion.

June 3rd.—All the shell on board. Paid the divers, much to their satisfaction, and made a start. Towards evening it fell calm, and we dropped anchor about a cable's length from the shore, in eleven fathoms water, opposite a grove of cocoa-nut trees, about eight miles from the entrance to the harbour. A sheet of copper nailed on one of the trees informed us, that it was here that Captain Belcher, of H. M. S. Sulphur, "bored this island forty-five feet, when the auger broke. Tube S. 65° W. 40 feet. March 26th 1840." The cocoa-nut trees planted by him

had not flourished, and the little pier he had constructed had gone to ruin.

June 4th.—Calm continued. The water was clear as crystal, and from its unruffled state we could see distinctly to the bottom. Our cook dropped his saucepan over-board; and, as it was the only serviceable one we had, it greatly concerned us to recover it. I proposed lowering the "doctor" after it, with the deep-sea lead made fast to his heels, to accelerate his sinking. You should have seen the startled look of horror that flashed from his one eye when I made the suggestion; "For you know doctor," said I, "it was through your carelessness, that it has gone to the bottom; and as we must recover it, you can't expect any one to go down for you." The "doctor," who fancied I was in earnest, vehemently protested against making any such experiment, as he swore he would be drowned before he got half way to the bottom. I amused myself with his deprecatory eloquence for some time, then, appearing to be moved by his entreaties, I sent for a native and asked him to dive for it. We sounded with the lead-line, and found ten and a half fathoms. He appeared to think the depth was too great; but on pressing him, he threw off his belt and went down with great ease, and brought it up without a symptom of distress. We could plainly discern all his movements, and he gave but three strokes to carry him the depth of sixty-three feet.

June 5th.—At half-past eight A.M. cleared the passage, with the intention of proceeding to Gambier's

Islands, in the hope of being able to fill up either by freight or purchase.

June 6th.—Becalmed, —and such a calm. Ocean, air, and sky, seemed blended in one ethereal element; the heat was intense; and the silence so profound that the dropping of a rope-yarn upon the deck jarred upon the tympanum. There was something solemn and mysterious in the way we thus floated in empty space, —the only apparent material body. The men seemed impressed with awe, and talked together in whispers. Although the water was without the faintest ripple, an under current acted upon the vessel, and imperceptibly we gradually raised and approached Prince William Henry's Island, known to the natives as Paraoa or Arivi. It is a small lagoon island, uninhabited, thickly covered with low bushy herbage. As we neared the breakers, a counter current swept us round the lee-point, and we were safe.

June 7th.—The ominous stillness of yesterday is being accounted for. We are lying to, under a balanced reef mainsail. It is blowing hard from the east-south-east, and we are driving bodily to leeward.

June 8th.—The sun obscure, and the gale increasing in fury. We are kept in-dread lest we should drift on to the Duke of Gloucester's group, which are situated right in our tempest-driven way.

June 9th.—Worse and worse; and a terrific sea on. By our calculations we shall be ashore at midnight. To provide for the best, against such a casualty, I have sewn the pearls and other valuables in a belt round my waist, with written instructions to guide the survivors or survivor in case of my

death : I have also prepared an account of particulars thus far, to enclose in a bottle at the last moment. We have come to the resolution, on seeing that we cannot escape the land, to drop the foresail, to aid the vessel over the breakers, as the only hope of saving our lives. The captain attempted to set the staysail, to head the vessel to the southward, but it was blown from the bolt-ropes like a puff of smoke.

Three P. M. — The atmosphere was thick and hazy, but in our great anxiety, the captain and I scrambled aloft, and to our extreme satisfaction, through the drizzling mist, we had the pleasure of seeing one of the islands bearing north by east from us. Our escape was most providential ; and when we announced it to the crew, they broke out in a spontaneous shout of joy. The island we saw was evidently higher than the general run of the Low Islands ; but we had no chance of making other observation, and were only too happy in having avoided the fate of a closer acquaintance. We must have drifted at the rate of two and a half knots from the commencement of the gale.

June 12th. — The gale, at length, begins to moderate ; and by an observation obtained to day, we find we are as far to the westward of Bow Island as the latter is to the westward of Gambier's Islands.

June 15th. — Sighted Rapa. At four P. M. we were abreast of the harbour, and the weather having lulled, I had a boat lowered to trade for pigs and vegetables. Before reaching the settlement it closed in dark and squally, with heavy rain ; and on sending the boat to rejoin the vessel, it had to put back, from the dense

obscurity with which every thing was enveloped, and the danger it was in from the violence of the blasts that came rushing from the gorges. As there was only the captain and a boy on board who knew any thing about the working of the vessel, I passed the dark hours of the night in great anxiety, for fear of their being blown away. I had men stationed upon the hills, with lights, and at first symptoms of day-dawn I despatched the boat in search of them; but it was not till afternoon that my anxiety was relieved respecting them.

A great many of the Rapa natives had died during the absence of those that had accompanied me to Hao; and the intelligent amongst them attributed the deaths to sickness, occasioned by exposure to wet and cold. It is nearly always raining at Rapa; and many of the poor creatures, drenched to the skin all day, sleep on the damp ground in their miserable huts at night, with scarcely any covering. There has been great mortality amongst them of late, and they seem to entertain the most melancholy forebodings, hinting that in five years they believed there would not be one of them left alive upon the island. Those amongst them who cling to the superstitious belief of their fathers, asserted, that the more recent deaths were the consequence of my visit; that the Tupapan had come on the appearance of the vessel and committed the slaughter that ensued. They have an opinion that the Tupapan fears and protects the white man, but its presence is fatal to them. Their superstitions resemble those of the Paumutuans generally.

June 17th.—Having succeeded in getting off a good supply of pigs and vegetables, we bade farewell to Rapa; but we did not escape without a parting benediction, for a sudden gust carried the boat's mast, sail, and mast-thwart completely out of the boat, nearly swamping us, and giving us the benefit of a tremendous pull. Scarcely on board, the wind came strong from the eastward, and we were obliged to forego all idea of visiting Gambier's Islands.

June 29th.—From the last entry until now we have been laying to, under a balance reefed storm-trysail; and now the gale is so furious, we have been compelled to strike our main and fore-top-masts, and send down the yards on deck; and scant as the sail that is set, it has been obliged to be patched till it is as thick as a board. Heavy seas are continually breaking over us, and one that broke over our foreyard dashed its foam to the maintop. All three of our boats got stove, and we lost nearly half our pigs.

June 30th.—The violence of the gale has passed, apparently; but from the lowering aspect of all around, we dare not send up our masts again, nor dare we display more canvass than the foresail, and the storm-trysail with the reefs out. We obtained our latitude, and were favoured with good sights for our chronometer, which placed us in $150^{\circ} 38' W.$, a degree to the west of Tahiti; and our latitude being $31^{\circ} 48' S.$, we are now about 600 miles further to leeward of Gambier's Islands than we were when we quitted Hao. The wind has scarcely varied a point, and it is still blowing nearly east by south. Our

sails and rigging have sustained material damage, which we have not the means on board of remedying; but I have obligations to meet in Valparaiso, and I must struggle against my fate.

July 4th.—The gale continues, and we are still drifting to the westward. Our latitude to-day was $35^{\circ} 55'$ S. The clouds are flying from the eastward, and there are no signs of any change in the wind. A large vessel passed within two miles to windward of us, apparently bound for the Society Isles. We made signals of distress; but she appeared to know her own interests better than to take notice of a wreck, for such assuredly we must have seemed. By the build of the stranger we took her to be French.

July 5th.—Finding no change, though as high as 37° S., tacked and stood to the northward.

July 6th.—A large vessel was observed six or seven miles to windward of us, standing to the southward. In hopes of obtaining assistance, we again tacked and stood after him. We set our colours at our fore-top-gallant-mast head and kept them there. After some little delay, the tricolor of France proudly unfurled itself from the mizen-peak, and shortly after the Frenchman bore down to us. Remembering how I had been served by the master of the Jules de Blossville, I did not feel quite at my ease as his countryman came foaming towards us, and I feared lest I had provoked the notice of an enemy. He rounded to under our counter, and hailed in tolerable English. I explained our situation, and begged him, if he had a little spare rope and bread, to let us have it, and requested him to send a boat

on board. He replied, he had not a boat that would swim, so at all hazards I resolved to get out one of our own boats that had sustained the least damage. The vessel proved the Jules César, last from Tahiti, and bound for Valparaiso. My reception was very different from that experienced on board the Jules de Blossville. The captain treated me with great kindness, gave me bread and other articles, and would not hear of remuneration; inviting me to stay breakfast, and pass the day with him. As we could do no better than keep company, I agreed to do so. His was the same vessel we saw on the 4th, standing to the northward. He had been as far as 37° S., and seeing no appearance of change had gone about. They did not notice us till we were a long way astern, for having had nearly a new suit of sails blown away, all hands were in the poop cabin, sail-repairing. The captain expressed his determination of standing as far south as 50° if he met with no previous alteration in the weather; and as he had sailed from Tahiti subsequent to our leaving Hao, we thought we could not do better than follow his example. On telling the captain how I had been served by the master of the Jules de Blossville, his indignation was greatly excited; he declared he would insult the fellow wherever he met him, and assured me that if I reported his conduct to the French consul, or the commander of any French man-of-war, he would be suspended from his office. In France they have regulations and restrictions for the guidance of merchant-ships, which it would, perhaps, be as well if adopted in England. No

master of a vessel is allowed to be so unless he has served two years in the capacity of an officer on board a man-of-war, and unless he has been able to pass his examination in mathematics and practical seamanship; and he holds his qualification by a letter patent from the crown or minister of marine, which, upon any glaring misconduct, can be cancelled; but the usual punishment is suspension for two years.

I passed an agreeable day on board the *Jules César*, and we separated with mutual good wishes. The sea had become very boisterous, and in getting into our boat we were nearly swamped; the gunwale and upper streak being smashed in by collision with the vessels.

August 12th.—More than a month has passed since my last entry, and we are still far from our destination. I imagine few have encountered such awful weather as we have experienced for so lengthened a period, and have survived to mention it. On more than one occasion, for nights together, I have been in expectation that the next moment would prove our last. We have not a sail, and scarcely a rope trustworthy; and our pumps are kept going every hour. We have had a fair wind twice during the last thirty-six days: on the first occasion, it lasted three days, and on the last, four. It is now blowing hard from the eastward again.

A large vessel was seen on our weather bow at daylight this morning. At nine o'clock A.M. it bore down to us. Her appearance gave rise to many conjectures: some thought it a man-of-war, from the squareness of her yards; others thought it a whaler,

from her having boats on her quarters; again she was, from her sheer, taken for a London trader: and whilst bets (the Englishman's resource) were in agitation as to what she could be, the tricolor of France again displayed itself to the breeze; and in a short time we saw a boat making towards us from our old friend, the Jules César. They had not recognised us; and when their boat came alongside she was half full of water. The second officer, who had charge of the boat, mentioned the captain's astonishment and distraction at the terrible weather we had encountered, and stated that the men had been for a long time on a stinted allowance of bread, and for the last ten days had been without meat or sugar. I felt happy in having it in my power to reciprocate former kindness, as I had plenty of beef and pork and two casks of molasses; but of bread and flour we were on short allowance ourselves. As it took some time to break out the stores, I went aboard the Jules César, to relieve the monotony of our most miserable voyage. I met with the same friendly welcome, and we mutually condoled over each other's hard fortune, but at last came to the conclusion that all we had for it was to "grin and bear it." As I could not foresee the termination of our voyage, and trembled for our water, captain Blay spared us two casks. We remained together the greater part of the day; but in consequence of our being so very light, we drifted considerably to leeward of the Jules César, and she had to heave to for us. On observing this, my anxiety to reach Valparaiso as early as possible

induced me to prefer the request that captain Blay would allow me to take a passage with him for the remainder of the voyage. He kindly pressed me with much eagerness to do so (we were then in about 34° S., and between 87° and 88° W. longitude); and as the advantage of arriving only one day ahead of the schooner might prove of consequence, I had some clothing brought me, and remained where I was. Towards sun-down, the captain of our little craft quitted us, and both vessels made all sail; but the Jules César had greatly the advantage. The next day, August 13th, the schooner was just visible, far away to leeward, but towards evening she was no longer discernible. The wind continued easterly with northing. Captain Blay, who appeared acquainted with the coast, determined on keeping well to the southward, as he was certain of a southerly wind on nearing the land. His experience was justified by the results.

August 18th. — At daylight we ran past isle Masafuera, at about a league to the northward of it. This is one of the islands discovered by Juan Fernandez; small, but particularly high and bold; discernible many leagues at sea.

August 19th. — On gaining the deck this morning, Isle de Tierra, better known as Juan Fernandez, the scene of Alexander Selkirk's isolated solitude, was distant about five leagues to the eastward of us. De Foe's admirable tale of Robinson Crusoe caused me to view it with a great deal of interest: particularly as in an extract from one of the London papers I saw an account of the submersion of Juan Fernandez by an

earthquake. From subsequent accounts, it appeared that the island had actually sustained a severe subterraneous convulsion, and some curious phenomena ensued, which gave rise to the hastily credited report. We kept away from three to four leagues to the northward of it, to prevent being becalmed, and at that distance it assumed much the appearance of Gambier's Islands; its high broken points and ridges looking very like the amalgamated cluster of the last-named group.

August 21st.—The Main was discernible; and, as we neared, the coast presented a most beautiful prospect. The dark mountains in the foreground, relieved by every variety of shade, were backed by the magnificent range of the Cordilleras, covered with their eternal snow, hiding their heads in the bosom of rolling vapours, and reflecting from their sides the most dazzling lustre. We came to an anchor at three P.M., and at five, captain Blay and I went ashore. The schooner had not arrived, nor did I expect her to have done so, as we had experienced very heavy weather the whole of the time after we had parted with her, and up to the time of making Isle Masafuera we were close hauled.

The port had been visited by a destructive fire since my last visit, and a melancholy space of blackened ruins was the only vestige of many a fair, tall, goodly house. The loss of property was estimated at the value of ten millions of dollars. The principal sufferers were English and French merchants; there not being a single Chileno who sustained

loss to any extent. We roved about for the space of two hours in search of a place to obtain refreshment, and made but a sorry shift after all: the whole of the boarding houses and refreshment rooms that I was formerly acquainted with had either been burnt down, or the proprietors had failed and given up business; so that we, half-starved tempest-tossed voyagers, found but sorry welcome after all our troubles.

August 26th.—My anxiety respecting the schooner was relieved by her arrival this day. Her lengthened detention had arisen from her last suit of sails having been blown literally to rags; and her appearance indicated that fortune had not ceased to persecute her after I had quitted her. On comparing the tracks of the two vessels, it appeared that they had both traversed nearly the same route.

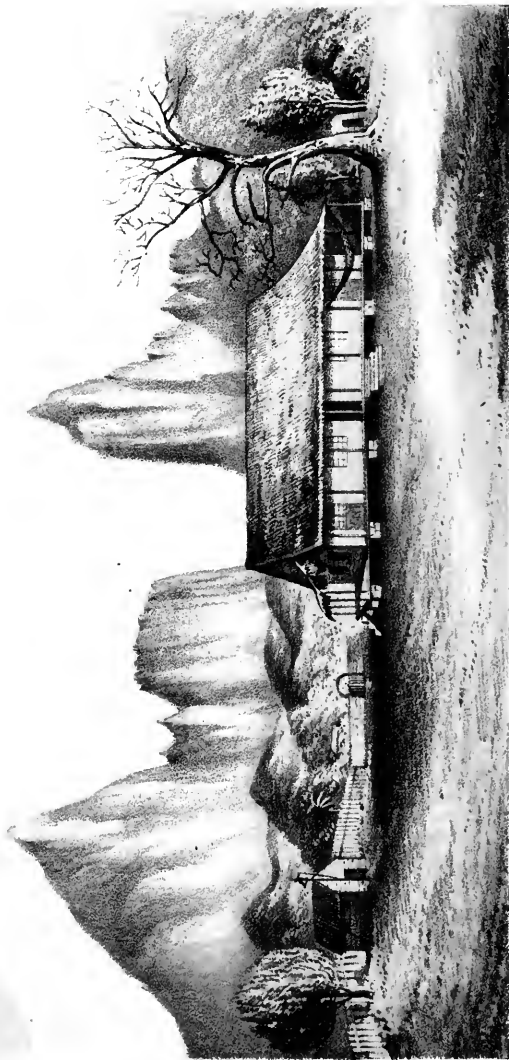
Every vessel that came from the westward this year experienced similar weather. Our passage was extended to eight-two days; that of the Jules César was upwards of seventy; and other traders and vessels of war, English and French, made equally bad passages. One of the first pieces of information I received on finding our agent (he had been burnt out) was, that the vessel we had transhipped our cargo in for Sydney had gone to the bottom; part of the cargo (casks of oil) having been recognised by the brands, at an island on which they had been thrown up, some 600 or 700 miles to the westward of the Society Isles. As nothing has been seen or heard of the vessel, it is supposed that all hands must have perished. H. M. S. Favorite

sailed from Tahiti for Sydney shortly after the unfortunate vessel above alluded to left Raiatea; she encountered dreadful weather, losing her boats, and it was reported that three of her men were washed overboard. Altogether this has been a most tempestuous season; and I cannot help imagining that the comet must have had some influence on the weather.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

LONDON:
SPOTTISWOODES and SHAW,
New-street-Square.





DRAWN BY E. J.

M. & N. HANBART LITH.

ROVINGS

IN

T H E P A C I F I C,

FROM 1837 TO 1849 :

WITH

A GLANCE AT CALIFORNIA.

BY A MERCHANT

LONG RESIDENT AT TAHITI.

WITH FOUR ILLUSTRATIONS PRINTED IN COLOURS.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL II.

LONDON :

LONGMAN, BROWN, GREEN, AND LONGMANS.

1851.



CONTENTS

OF

THE SECOND VOLUME.

CHAPTER I.

Leave Valparaiso. — Narrowly Escape Shipwreck. — Pitcairn's Island. — Mistakes relative to Oneo Island. — Reach Tahiti, French Proceeding. — Dethronement of Pomare. — Revisit Borabora. — Go to Maupiti for King Tapoa. — Shyness of Natives. — Explanation. — A Hurricane. — Sentiments of the Natives as regards the French. — A Letter from Queen Pomare's Husband to Tapoa and his Family. — Preservation of a Boat's Crew. — Huaru. — Effects of the Hurricane at Raiatea. — Return to Tahiti — Departure of the Dublin Frigate. — Mr. Pritchard not recognised as British Consul. — A threatened rising of the Natives induces the Queen to write a Letter to her People. — Conduct of Two aged Chiefs. — Pomare seeks Refuge on board the Ketch of War Basilisk. — The Queen prohibited from returning to the Shore. — Again get under weigh for Valparaiso. — Island of Tituroa. — Off Anā. — New Laws introduced there. — A Native Trial. — Discover a Lagoon Island, which proves to be the veritable Hereheretue. — An Episode respecting it. — That blessed Rapa once more. — Extravagant Notions on the Value of Pearls. — Three Natives join the Vessel to go to the Main. — Ludicrous Transition of feeling - - - 1

CHAP. II.

Arrive at Valparaiso. — Letters from Tahiti. — Some Account of the Troubles going on there. — Get under weigh for that Island. —

Ambrose and Felix Islands. — Cruize for Pilgrim's Island. — No Signs of its Existence. — Les four Facardines prove to be Facatae, and uninhabited. — An Interview with the Savages. — Thrum Cap Island. — At Bow Island hear of the friendly Captain of the Jules de Blossville. — Sight the Two Groups. — Just in time to be saved from the Wreck. — Remarks on the incertitude of the Position of the Paumutu Islands. — Touch at Chain Island, and hear that Hostilities have commenced between the French and Tahitians. — Off Tahiti fall in with a Whale-boat bottom up, and notice Signs of Disturbances on the Shore. — Enter the Harbour. — Narrative of Events that transpired during the Writer's absence. — A Missionary Shot. — His Funeral. — A Scene on Board the Ketch Bisilisk. — "Britons never shall be Slaves." — Constant Excitement and Alarm. — Daring of a Native. — Arrival of Lord George Paulet in the Carysfort. — Departure of Queen Pomare for the Leeward Islands. — A Trip to collect the Effects abandoned by the Missionaries. — Sail for Borabora with forty or fifty of the Queen's Adherents. — Interview with the Queen at Raiatea. - - 44

CHAP. III.

Pass the Rubicon. — Dissuade the Natives from building useless Forts. — Go to Huaheine. — A Chant of the Huaheine Girls. — News from Tahiti. — Account of the French Steamer's Movements, and the Risk she ran of being captured. — Attempt of the French to obtain an Interview with Pomare. — Effects of the Steamer's Mission to Borabora. — A Visit from Tapoa. — Return to Tahiti. — Accounts from Sydney and New Zealand. — Letters from Queen Pomare. — Arrival of the French Admiral. — Another Comet. — Reflections. — The French Steamer goes on a last Mission to the Queen. — The Queen deposed for ever. — A Regent appointed, but no Alteration in the Posture of Affairs. — Trade with the Leeward Islands restricted to Vessels wearing the Flag of France. — Rumours. — D'Aubigny sails for France. — The United States Brig Perry salutes the Protectorate Flag, &c. — Intercourse with Raiatea prohibited. — Sir Thomas Thomson arrives in the Talbot, and is frivolously exposed to much Indignity. — The Treatment of the English under French Domination compared with the Treatment of the French under Tahitian Rule. — A Letter from Queen Pomare, and the Motive for introducing it - - - 79

CHAP. IV.

Wreck of the *Averick*, cast away at Raiatea, purchased. — Permission to go to Raiatea. — Report of the French Steamer's Proceedings. — Conduct of the Queen of Huaheine. — Anecdote of her Sister Maiera. — The way in which the Protectorate Flag was conferred upon Raiatea, and its Reception. — The Nature of the Protection accorded to Raiatea exemplified. — Quit Raiatea, and return to it from Tahiti in the *Hamburgh Brig Ferdinand*. — Difficulties with the Natives. — Go in Search of the King. — *Faroa*. — Queen *Pomare*. — *Opoa*. — Relaxed Allegiance owing to the Excitement of the Times. — Crew desert. — An Official Notice, and its great Utility. — Anomalies. — Clear out for Raiatea, with an Admonition. — O, rare blockade! — War, and Rumour of War. — More difficulty. — Go to see *Tamatoa*, who now signs himself *Ariipeapea* (the troubled King). — Disaffection of the Chiefs at *Borabora*. — How *Tapoa* became King of *Borabora*. — Obstinate Conduct of the Chiefs at the Encampment. — Sail for the *Hervey Group*. — *Mitariu*. — *Atiu*. — *Mauke*. — *Nārurotu*. — Non-existence of certain Islands marked on the Chart. — Set of the Current off *Mauke*. — Come to an Anchor at Tahiti, and learn that the Siege is raised, but that all the old vexatious Regulations continue in force. — More Bother about returning to Raiatea. — Expensive Autographs. — Scenes in *Borabora*. — Alas! how changed the Place! — French Influence. — A pleasing Surprise. — Death of *Pomare's* Infant. — A Visit from the blockading Squadron. — Word from *Borabora*. — French Steamer called at *Huaru*. — The Courtesy of her Commander. — Sail for Tahiti. — Mr. Pritchard sent to the Navigators' Islands as Consul. — Report that the English Admiral is in sight

103

CHAP. V.

Disappointment. — The Protectorate Flag saluted by the British Admiral. — Frantic Behaviour of a Native. — Object of the Admiral's Arrival. — The *Collingwood* (eighty) enters the Harbour. — A Deputation to destroy *Hope*. — A Pic-nic in the Valley of *Faatuana*. — Departure of the Admiral. — A Trip to *Moorca*. — Proceedings of the *Uranie*. — Trust betrayed. — A Deputation to effect Cessation of Hostilities. — The Consequences of holding out false Assurances, &c. — *Papeeti* attacked by the Natives. — The *Uranie* recalled. —

The Blockade of the Leeward Islands publicly announced to be removed.—Re-appearance of the French Admiral.—A Voyage to Sydney.—The Schooner calls at Raiatea, and is nearly lost.—A passing Interview with the Chiefs.—Under weigh for the Navigators' Islands.—Rose Island, &c.—The Island of Upolu; its Harbours.—The Natives; their Habits, &c.; their Houses.—Earthquakes occasionally felt.—Mischievous Work of the White Ant.—The Way in which Mr. Pritchard was installed British Consul.—Propagandists.—War at Savaii.—Timely Concessions avert War at Upolu.—Council Meeting, &c.—Apolima.—Walpole Island.—Isle of Pines.—Port Hunter, at New South Wales, made a Port of Entry for Merchandise.—Arrive in Sydney.—Observations.

132

CHAP. VI.

On the way to Tahiti.—Sight the Three Kings and Rurutu.—Land on Rurutu, and obtain further Particulars of the Island.—Ingenuity of a Native.—A neuralgic Headache prevents further Exertion.—Arrival in Papeeti.—Sail for Raiatea.—Ill-treatment of Pomare by her Husband.—Arrival of the Frigate Grampus.—Make an Excursion to the Encampment at Papeenoo, to try and induce the Natives to submit to Circumstances, and save further Effusion of Blood.—Result of the Attempt.—Sail for New Zealand in the Barque Janet.—Call at Huaheine, now a Scene of Desolation.—Renewed Acquaintance with the Navigators' Islands, and more Particulars.—Sight Islands little known.—Arrive at Bay of Islands.—Overland Excursion to Hokianga.—Some Particulars of the War with Ioni Heke.—The Country on the Route described.—Directions for entering Hokianga from the Sea.—A Kaori Forest killed by Fire.—Cross the Country to the Bay of Islands.—The Country on Fire.—Perilous Travelling.—Return to Tahiti.—Pomare and her People had at length submitted to the Protectorate.—Arrival of Monsieur Levand to succeed Monsieur Bruat as Governor.—Departure of the Uranie for France.—Bound for Valparaiso.—The Island of Toobuai.—High Island or Raivavia.—Another fortunate Escape from Wreck.—The Coast on the Main to the northward and southward of Valparaiso.—An Earthquake.—Again sight Ambrose and Felix Islands on the return Voyage to Tahiti.—The Marquesas Isles.—Resolution Bay.—Island of Oaitahu.—Nukuhiva, its Harbour, &c.—Sight Manihi.—Oahe and Aratua, Low Islands of the Paumotu Group.—A ludicrous Incident.—Arrival in Tahiti - - - 163

CHAP. VII.

A Voyage amongst the Paumutu Islands to check-mate unfair Dealings. — The Island of Matea. — Tikahau. — Rairoa. — Anura. — Apatai. — Toau. — Aritika. — Faarava. — Faite. — From Faarava go to Ana. — The “Two Groups” properly two Lagoon Islands, the one to the north called by the Natives Marokau, that to the southward Ravahere. — Hikueru. — Claim of the Paumutu Islands to the Designation of Coral Islands. — Marutea. — Wretchedness of its People. — A slight Dissertation on Murder. — Mutitunga. — Singular Rising of the Sea during a Calm. — Tipoto. — Tuanake. — Hiti. — Katin. — Raraka. — Dwarf Cocoa-nut Trees. — Instances of the Virulence of poisonous Fish. — Kauchi. — Toau coasted. — Auura revisited. — Rairoa. — Make the Island of Matea. — A Trip across it. — Reach Tahiti, and learn the News of the Dethronement of Louis Philippe, and his Flight to England - 201

CHAP. VIII.

Not being allowed to land the Fairy’s Cargo in Tahiti, proceed to Raiatea. — Touch at Huaheine. — Discovery of more Intrigue and Double-dealing causes a precipitate Voyage to Fanning’s Island. — Caroline Island. — Christmas Island; with an Account of some recent Wrecks upon it. — Fanning’s Island. — Washington Island. — Washington Island believed to be one with Prospect Island, and Fanning’s Island identical with America Island. — Palmyra Island; its singular Conformation. — Return to Fanning’s Island. — The Death of a Native. — Penrhyn’s Island; its supposed Identity with Bennett’s Island. — Attempt of the Natives to capture a Schooner. — Join the French Frigate *Sirene*, which proceed to Ana to adjust Differences and restore Order. — A shrewd Device, which produces Conviction. — Anchor in Tahiti on Christmas Day - - 231

CHAP. IX.

Purchase a Vessel, and bound for China. — Call at Faarava to take in Cargo. — An Elopement. — Pursuit. — Capture. — Punishment. The Gift of a Piece of Land, and with it the Patronymic of the Donor. — Clear the North-north-west Passage from the Lagoon. — Pass over the Position assigned by Commodore Wilkes to Walker Island, and see no Sign of it. — Hawaii. — Observations on the so-called South-east Trades. — Maui Island — Ranai Island and Morokai. — Oahu Honolulu. — Its Harbour. — Effects of the Dis-

covery of a Gold Region in California. — Ministers of King Kamehamaha. — The People's regard for Lord George Paulet. — Appearance of the Natives. — Saturday the Gala-day. — Native Houses, &c. — The Gold Fever excites the Fever of Desertion in the Crew. — Send the Vessel outside the Harbour. — The Vessel struck by a Whale. — The Weather-wise out again in their Predictions. — Speak a Whaler bound to the Sea of Japan, Reflections on the Policy of the Japanese, &c. — Sail between Grigan and Pagon Islands. — Norie's Chart not correct. — Sail through the Bashee Islands. — A Hint to Mariners. — Reminiscences of Home done into Verse - - - - - 258

CHAP. X.

Opens with a Lyrical Expression of Sentiments. — Contrary Weather continues. — Speak an English Barque. — Sight Pedro Branca. — Fishing Junks. — Boarded by a Pilot. — Reaches Hong Kong. — The Town and Port. — Observations on Conloon. — Burial-places of the Natives. — A Trip to Macao and Canton. — Tiger Island. — River Population. — Canton. — The Boat-house. — The Women. — A Glance at one of the Superior Class. — Two Surmises as to why the Chinese shave their Heads. — Costume of the People. — Inferences why the Natives of Polynesian Islands may derive their Origin from the Asiatic Continent. — Religious Disposition of the Chinese. — Conversation with a Chinese Artist. — The English Jargon of the Country. — Cumsing-moon, our highest Opium receiving Station near Canton. — Remarks on the illicit Trade. — A Fracas at Macao. — The Governor in Fault - - - 279

CHAP. XII.

Visit Manilla. — The Bay. — Beasts of Burthen. — Costume. — Inferiority of the Indian Race to the Natives of Islands South of the Equator. — Country around Manilla. — A Trip to the Village Mariquina. — Fire-flies. — Fear of Banditti. — Exports from Manilla. — The great Cigar Manufactory. — Pina. — A Bolster Wife. — Return to China. — The Chinese want only Leaders and Training to be excellent Soldiers. — British Occupation of Tiger Island in case of further disturbances with China. — Pirates; their Method of Attack. — Not altogether judicious to stray far from the Factories at Canton. — Frogs used as Food. — Long Finger Nails. — Artists. — Taste for Monstrosities. — Force of Training over Instinct. — Specimen of Chinese English. — The Compredore - 305

CHAP. XI.

Bound for San Francisco. — Pass through the Strait of Formosa, and crosses Tunghai or the Eastern Sea. — About entering the Sea of Japan. — Headed off by the Wind. — The Asses' Ears and an unnoticed Rock. — Heavy Gale. — A cluster of Islands badly laid down. — A Tree coated with Barnacles. — The Sun crosses the Equinox and brings change of Weather. — Shooting Stars. — A Song. — Another Forest Giant adrift. — Fogs. — The Land. — Shoal Water. — Port San Francisco. — No mistake about the Auriferous Region. — Attendants of the Gold Digger. — Supposed extent of the Auriferous Region. — Population. — Extravagant Prices. — Gamblers. — The "Hounds." — The Fever of Immigration. — Disparity in the Value of Services. — The principal recipients of the Gold. — Sansalito. — An Indian Sweating House. — The Field thrown open to Adventurers. — House Rent. — Price of Land. — Cities. — Sacramento City. — Suttor's Fort. — Enterprise of Captain Suttor. — First Discovery of the Gold. — The Gambling Mania. — An Alfresco Mart. — Suttor's Town. — The Labour imposed upon the Brute Creation and consequent great Mortality. — A Suggestion given and how received. — Whirling excitement of the Times. — Copies of Two Dinner Bills. — The Weather of San Francisco. — Shipowners will have to take Warning. — Eagerness with which people endeavour to leave the Country. — Desertion, and the impossibility of preventing it. — Comparison instituted between British North America and the United States. — "Huzza for Otaheite!" - - - 330



ROVINGS

IN

THE PACIFIC.

CHAPTER I.

Leave Valparaiso.—Narrowly Escape Shipwreck.—Pitcairn's Island.—Mistakes relative to Oneo Island.—Reach Tahiti. French Proceedings.—Dethronement of Pomare.—Revisit Borabora.—Go to Maupiti for King Tapoa.—Shyness of Natives.—Explanation.—A Hurricane.—Sentiments of the Natives as regards the French.—A Letter from Queen Pomare's Husband to Tapoa and his Family.—Preservation of a Boat's Crew.—Huaru.—Effects of the Hurricane at Raiatea.—Return to Tahiti.—Departure of the Dublin Frigate.—Mr. Pritchard not recognised as British Consul.—A threatened rising of the Natives, induces the Queen to write a Letter to her People.—Conduct of Two aged Chiefs.—Pomare seeks Refuge on board the Ketch of War Basilisk.—The Queen prohibited from returning to the Shore.—Again get under weigh for Valparaiso.—Island of Tituroa.—Off Anā.—New Laws introduced there.—A Native Trial.—Discover a Lagoon Island, which proves to be the veritable

Hereheretue. — An Episode respecting it. — That blessed Rapa once more. — Extravagant Notions on the Value of Pearls. — Three Natives join the Vessel to go to the Main. — Ludicrous Transition of Feeling.

“ See how the tranquil seas
 Reflect the heavens blue,
 Whilst, passing on, the breeze,
 Scarce stirs their tranquil hue ;
 But never trust the deep,
 For changeful is the sea,
 One moment hull'd to sleep,
 Next, lash'd to storms 't will be.”

French Song (freely translated).

I WAS too much occupied with business matters to find time for pleasure excursions this trip to Valparaiso, and on *October 18th*, being again ready for sea, we made a start ; but just as we had got clear of the shipping, and I had “ gone below,” to change my dress, a flaw of wind from the abrupt headlands caught the mainsail aback, when they were in the act of jibbing, which carried away the mainboom : this compelled us to bring to, and we were obliged to order a new boom, which I did on the instant ; and by the afternoon of *October 20th*, order being restored, we got underweigh with a strong southerly breeze, and stood on our course for Tahiti.

On getting into the latitude of $24^{\circ} 30$ S., which we did *October 25th*, we met with our old enemy, the inflexible east wind, now converted into our best friend, which carried us nearly due west to within six or seven degrees of longitude from Pitcairn's island. Baffling winds and heavy rains then thwarted us for three days, so that we had no opportunity of procuring observations during that period ; but by

the course steered, we conjectured we were well to the southward, and considerably to the eastward, of two small islands, laid down on the chart as being east-north-east from Pitcairn's Island.

November 15th. — In the middle night watch, between three and four A. M., on the captain's sending a man up to furl the royal, he shouted out "Land ahead!" The ship was instantly put about, and only in time to save us from running on to a dangerously low coral island. The weather was dark and hazy, we could see no distance from the deck, and the first land we contemplated seeing was Pitcairn's Island, which is high and bold. A curious circumstance is connected with our escape from this low island. About an hour previous to the royal's being *furled*, the captain ordered it to be *clued* up, and sent a man aloft to *furl* it; but changing his mind, called him down again, as he was ascending the topmast rigging: if this had not been the case, from the security in which we were reposing, in all probability we should have been lost, as the island was barely perceptible at the time it was observed, and an hour earlier it would have been utterly undistinguishable. At daylight we had a proper view of it, and congratulated ourselves on our fortunate escape. It presented the appearance of a low level ridge of dead coral, covered with a dense dwarf scrub, differing little in colour from that of the ocean. We conjectured it to be Elizabeth Island; and as the wind would not allow us to lay much better than west for the next few hours, we ought to have seen Henderson's Island, laid down in the same parallel of lati-

tude ; but not having done so, we assumed them to be one and the same island, seen by different navigators, and the position given according to the respective times shown by their chronometers ; and our surmise subsequently proved correct.

Just before sundown, Pitcairn's Island was seen in the distance, and at dawn on *November 16th*, we were abreast of the settlement formed by the descendants of the mutineers of the *Bounty*. Three canoes put off to us, bearing six of the islanders ; the canoes were each dubbed out of a single piece of wood, and were so small and fragile, that I could not but admire the temerity of those who would venture to sea in them. To show how light and small they were, on a rope being made fast to them, "one hand" easily hoisted them inboard ; they were more like children's toys than things for men to venture life in. The island shoots perpendicularly from the water, and rises to the height of 1000 feet, or rather more on the loftiest ridges. The weather being favourable, I had a boat lowered and went ashore, at the landing place opposite the village on the north side of the island. We had no difficulty in landing, but in boisterous weather it would be impracticable. On the north-west side there is anchorage on a sandy bottom ; and as the wind throughout the year prevails nearly always from the eastward, a vessel might let go her anchor in safety, as the residents tell us the wind is never known to shift so suddenly as not to give timely warning for recovering the anchor, and placing the ship out of danger.

One of the highest points on the island is called "Look-out Ridge," and its altitude was ascertained by Captain Beechy, of H. M. S. Blossom, to be 1000 feet above the level of the sea. It derived the name from its being used as a "look-out" station by the mutineers, and where they erected a hut for the party on watch, who was to give instant notice of the appearance of any sail. Such was their dread of being detected. In the early stage of their residence two vessels touched at the island, and after having landed a boat's crew upon it, passed on their way without entertaining a suspicion that it was inhabited. A sailor's jack-knife was subsequently picked up at the foot of a cocoa-nut tree — a speaking memento of the just grounds the fugitives had for alarm. From this ridge, which I ascended, we had an entire bird's-eye view of the island; and the circumference of its area, on the summit, was considered to be about four miles. Every available patch is under cultivation; the soil is rich and fertile, and seen from our elevated position, it bore the appearance of one large garden. Five only of the mutineers have transmitted their names to their posterity, viz. Christian, Young, Quintall, M'Coy, and Adams. There are at present 116 of their descendants, and nearly an equal number of each sex, including the offspring of three Englishmen, who have been residing on the island from sixteen to twenty years, and who formed matrimonial connections there. The Tahitian dialect is nearly, if not entirely forgotten, there being but one or two who pretend to know any thing about it. The present generation speak

much better English than the common run of ordinarily educated people in England. Their phraseology is peculiarly scriptural, probably from the Bible being the principal work from which they were instructed in the written language; their pronunciation is more deliberate than ours, and there is something peculiar in the intonation of their voices. They are several shades lighter in colour than the Tahitians, and bear generally a closer resemblance to their male progenitors. Some of the young women are of exceedingly interesting appearance, finely and firmly formed; and with their short upper tunics and bare arms, and from the mode in which they dress their hair, they strongly reminded me of the classic figures of the ancients. Both sexes go with bare legs and feet, and they equally participate in the labour of cultivating the earth.

I entertained the idea that all on the island looked upon one another as the children of one family, and shared property in common. This used to be the case formerly, I was told; but since the visits of ships have become more frequent, and the population has increased so largely, every one labours for himself to secure the necessaries which his own immediate family may require. To prevent disputes, the arable part of the island was divided into sections, and equitably allotted upon agrarian principles. Now each family is guided, in its cultivation, by its wants; and according to their industry, so are they enabled to supply themselves with articles of European manufacture, by bartering surplus produce to whale ships and others touching at the island

for refreshments. Yams and sweet potatoes are the principle articles they have for barter, which they dispose of at the rate of two dollars per barrel, receiving payment either in cash or goods. They can all read and write; and a Mr. Nobbs, one of the beforementioned Englishmen, who settled amongst them many years ago, officiates as missionary teacher and schoolmaster; and as such, is exempt from the labour of the field. He married a descendant of Christian's, and represents himself as having formerly served as a lieutenant under Lord Cochrane, who did the Chilian state some service. He has seven or eight children; and I found him intelligent and communicative, and from him I derived most of the particulars I learnt respecting the island. He took me to visit Adams's grave, who died fifteen or sixteen years ago; the last survivor of the mutineers, and the only one of them besides Young who died a natural death. The latter died from an asthmatical complaint some years previously; the rest either fell by their own hands, or in mutual conflict, or were treacherously murdered. The present generation know but little of bygone events, as in all probability their fathers did not wish a knowledge of them to be preserved, and the women abducted from Tahiti could not explain them. From what few particulars have reached the present day, it would appear that remorse, despair, and recrimination, led to scenes of bloodshed; and not one of the mutineers, in his own person, had to rejoice in the success of his violation of his country's laws. One

of the Tahitian women is still in existence ; but she was in a distant part of the island and I did not see her. Their houses, of which, from the scarcity of material, there are only five or six on the island, are built principally from the wreck of the *Bounty*, and stand with their gable ends due east and west ; their interiors being fitted up something like a ship's 'tween-decks, with bunks, or fixed sleeping-berths, running round the sides of the room.

They have a church, Mr. Nobbs being minister ; and Sunday is particularly venerated by them. To settle disputes, or any differences that may arise, they annually elect a magistrate, who, upon any disturbance, convenes the heads of families to hear the arguments of the disputants, and is guided by the majority of voices in forming his decision, which is final. They have now got ducks, fowls, pigs, and goats upon the island ; but as they have only been introduced of late, by ships touching there, they are not in abundance at present. Independent of the yam and sweet potato, they have the Irish potato, cabbage, onion, and other vegetables ; and bananas, plantains, pine-apples, melons, cocoa-nuts, and other tropical fruits ; but the islanders begin to complain that population increases too rapidly for the size of the island. They were all carried to Tahiti some few years ago, where they received a friendly welcome, and land was assigned them for their support ; but after a short residence, they chartered a vessel to reconvey them to Pitcairn's Island ; for, although they liked Tahiti well enough, they were

disgusted at the sensual abandonment of the people, and the lax tone of morality that generally prevailed.

I was informed by Buffitt, another of the Englishmen married on Pitcairn's Island, and who has been living there for the last twenty years, that north-west by north by compass, and distant seventy-two miles from Pitcairn's Island, there is a dangerous sandy reef, about a mile in circumference, known as Oneo Island. No less than three different positions are assigned to it on our chart, under three different names. The error arose from Captain Bond of the *Martha* having seen it, and, unconscious that it had been previously discovered, having called it *Martha Island*; and, I suppose to make assurance double sure, the recipient of the information, on his own responsibility, interpolated another island, and christened it *Bond's Island*. Some of the Pitcairn Islanders visited it in company with Buffitt; and the latter, who has been a sailor, and second mate on board a merchantman, assures me that there is but the one reef, and that it is nearly a wash, and unworthy of the name of an island.* In like manner, some of the Pitcairn Islanders, aware of the near vicinity of Elizabeth Island, and fearing lest at some future period they should be compelled to seek other land for the support of their increasing numbers, induced a whaling vessel to convey them to it, that they might examine its capabilities. To use their own expression, "It is useless, being entirely covered with broken coral." Two of them were

* *Oneo*, in the Tahitian dialect, signifies sand.

engaged in the survey from sunrise till sunset, and came away quite satisfied of its barren untenable nature; they also confirmed the notion I had already formed, that there was but the one island. Captain Henderson made it shortly after it had been seen by the captain of the *Elizabeth*, and inserting it in his chart, agreeably to the time shown by his watch, bestowed upon it his own patronym; hence the mistake. And doubtless, from a similar cause, many islands have found existence on the charts that have no existence in reality, particularly in the whaling tracks of the Pacific; the captains of American whalers generally trusting more to "look-outs" than to their accurate knowledge of navigation, a handful of miles, more or less, being of no particular moment to them. Evidences of the existence of an earlier and more primitive race of beings on Pitcairn's Island are frequently turning up, independent of the rude monuments which yet remain in the morais or burial-places. Skeletons are sometimes dug up by the present occupiers of the soil, and rude implements of labour, such as stone axes, spear-heads, &c. Judging from the bones, the former race of inhabitants must have been a large-sized people; but as no human being was found alive on the arrival of the mutineers, nothing but conjecture is left to determine their history.

November 18th.—Passed Gambier's Islands; and having corrected our chronometer by Pitcairn's Island, we found it to correspond exactly with the position assigned to them by Captain Beechy, who also surveyed Pitcairn's Island.

November 23rd.—Thick hazy weather, so much so, that although the island of Maitea is particularly bold and high, we shot by without seeing it, till it was well aft on our quarter, and then it might have been taken for a cloud. At four P.M. we dropped anchor in Taonoa passage, the wind not allowing us to reach the anchorage off Papeeti. The next day we had to stand to sea again, and bring the vessel in at the western entrance.

What a change had come over the spirit of the place! what an alteration had been effected during my absence! The French had at length thrown off the mask. All the operations that it was rumoured were intended to be directed against the Marquesa Islands were transferred to Tahiti; the whole of the Georgian and Society Isles, with Heaven knows how many others, were declared to be possessions of Louis Philippe of France, and the tricolor was flying on Motuiti, the little islet at the entrance of the harbour. Poor Queen Pomare had been ejected from houses and land, deprived of all rank or estate, and left dependant on the affections of her people for support. Her situation is very affecting; but she bears it firmly, relying on Britain to see her finally restored to her rights. Crowds of her people come daily to see her, bringing her presents of money and provisions. I observe that she has frequently great difficulty in repressing her tears at these proofs of their loyalty, probably also from a sense of her altered condition. She received me as an old friend, but I was obliged to check my expressions of sympathy and regard, as it shook her

firmness, and made her “play the woman with her eyes.”

The present posture of affairs was brought about by the intrigues of a needy manœuvring Belgian adventurer. Nearly four years ago, some French priests of the Romish persuasion having landed upon the island, and attempted to disseminate their doctrines; were ordered by the queen to make their exit, for she had no wish that any creed should be introduced amongst her people differing from that which they had already been taught. The priests refused to leave, alleging as a reason that their vessel was not seaworthy. The queen persisted, that as the vessel sufficed to bring them there, so it must serve to take them away again; and ultimately force was employed in expelling them. The Belgian, who had an eye of establishing himself in favour with the French government, and who was, or who had been, acting consul for the United States, *but receiving no salary*, worked himself into a state of zeal bordering on frenzy, in behalf of the banished Frenchmen, and vowed that Tahiti should be taught what it was to trifle with “La grande Nation.” Captain Du Petit Thouars arrived shortly after, and extorted from the queen the sum of 2000 dollars, and certain concessions in favour of the priests and Frenchmen generally; the Belgian receiving the firstfruits of his diplomacy, by being nominated Consul de France. Two years or more subsequently to this piece of successful finesse, a disturbance ensued upon the beach, from some drunken French seamen inciting a dog to fight with a favourite dog be-

longing to the queen. The men were placed in confinement for their turbulent conduct, which was strictly in accordance with the laws of the island. Intelligence of the apprehension of his men having reached their captain, he armed the rest of his crew, and without a word of remonstrance or application to the authorities, attacked the house they were confined in, with the idea of liberating them, for which he was justly overpowered and treated to the same suspension of liberty. As he was frantically violent, and Tahitian houses are but of fragile construction, his feet were secured in stocks to prevent his escape, this being the only means they have of ensuring the security of outrageous prisoners. Shortly after this event Du Petit Thouars, now admiral, and commanding the *Reine Blanche*, again appeared off the island, and sent in a boat to make inquiries. He was on his way to the Sandwich Islands, and had not the intention of entering with his vessel; but the Belgian, encouraged by the success that crowned his first efforts, went off and submitted such statements, and held out such inducements to Du Petit Thouars, that the admiral, fairly cajoled, or blinded by his vanity, brought his vessel into the harbour; and for this last indignity offered to France, he ordered the queen to place herself under the protection of France, and to subscribe a letter addressed to Louis Philippe demanding such protection; and declaring that unless she did so within a given time, he would bring his batteries to bear upon the island, and scatter the settlement to the winds. Pomare who was at the neigh-

bouring island of Moorea, and within a few hours of her accouchement, no sooner received the tidings of this fresh attempt at extortion, than she stoutly refused to sign any document ; “ she knew its drift,” she said, “ they wanted to dispossess her of her islands, but they should never have her sanction for doing so, and they might fire upon the place as soon as they pleased.” Unhappy woman ! with the pangs of labour almost upon her, and surrounded and besieged by timid, ignorant, and interested persons, all entreating her to sign the letter, she at length complied ; but in her agony of grief she declared that she only did so to save the lives and property of those foreigners who were living on her land.

On receipt of this bitter document, two officers from the *Reine Blanche* were sent to reside ashore, and with the Belgian made the Triumvirate forming the provisional government of Tahiti. One was called “ Lieutenant Governor,” the other “ Captain of the Port,” and *the Belgian was styled “ Royal Commissioner of France.”* Not displeased at the happy results his bullying had effected, Du Petit Thouars steered away to extend his fame, and acquire fresh glory. The letter signed by the queen would of course reach Louis Philippe, and as from its contents he could not tell by what means it had been obtained, he would probably be contemplating the honours with which to invest the gallant admiral, for making the simple inoffensive inhabitants of a quiet little island in the Pacific sensible of the grandeur, the might, and the far reaching power of France ; for it would be natural to suppose, that a

letter with *Pomare's signature attached* could be no other than a voluntary act. Poor misguided Pomare, inexperienced in diplomatic treaties, and looking upon the French as her worst enemies, as how could she do otherwise, since their advent to her island had been the signal of trouble and distress, in her ill judging policy, instead of addressing Louis Philippe, with a protest against the force that had been so cruelly exercised, applied to Britain for assistance, and of course France would be prepared to show Britain her just indignation at the absurdity of such an insulting application. But now appears another and an unexpected actor on the Tahitian stage. Commodore Nicolas arrives in the frigate *Vindictive*, and the number of appeals which the poor queen makes to him induces the commodore to take a lively interest in her welfare. He refuses to acknowledge the protectorate until he hears from his own government, and promises to shield Pomare from insult and injury. It must be here premised that the provisional government had been for many months left without any executive power, and without seeing the need for any, nor were the Triumvirs molested or interfered with. It must also be observed that no objection had been made to Pomare's retaining her private flag, but in the flag to be used by commercial vessels the French union had been inserted. The queen had been in the habit of visiting the neighbouring islands in a schooner built by her own people, and there were several schooners of similar size and appearance plying between the islands, and flying the flag as it was

when originally presented to them by captain Laws, of H. M. S. Satellite, the same flag being used at all the islands both of the Georgian and Society group, now limited in Tahiti to the queen's private use. About this time, as a vessel was either going out or coming into the harbour, Commodore Nicolas was led to suppose from the flag that the queen was on board, and gave orders for saluting her, and had only time to countermand his instructions on discovering that the vessel belonged to a chief of a neighbouring isle, and did not carry the queen. To avoid mistake for the future, the commodore advised the queen to have some distinguishing mark in her flag that it might be immediately recognised. Delighted at the idea, she requested the commodore to design something for her, as her people were not competent to the task: accordingly the Commodore caused a crown surrounded by a chaplet of cocoa-nut leaves to be wrought in the centre of her flag. The Triumvirs made some demur to this, and requested permission to insert also something in the flag; but Pomare negatived the proposition by saying, "that she was well satisfied with it as it then was, and as she meant to wear a crown, so would she carry the type of it in her flag." Nothing particular occurred during the next six months; but the commodore then left the island by an order from his admiral, to the great dismay of the Queen and her people, who fully believed that the commodore would stand by them until the affairs of the island were finally arranged; and doubted not but that Pomare would be reinstated in her full independent sovereignty.

I was told that after the Vindictive had taken her departure, the queen sat watching and weeping till the frigate was no longer discernible, filled with a melancholy presage of what her fate was likely to be, now that her protector was gone. Her forebodings of ill were only too soon to be realised, for not long after the absence of the "commodore," five French vessels made their appearance in the harbour, bringing with them labourers, artificers, troops, guns, ammunition, a governor and his staff, and the officers necessary for a civil establishment, all of which were originally destined for the Marquesa Islands, which the French had taken possession of some time previously. Pomare was peremptorily ordered to take down her private flag and to substitute some other, as it was insinuated that her selection of the present one had proceeded from a hostile feeling towards France, which consequently could not suffer it to remain in her possession. She might make choice of any other she pleased, or she might retain the old Tahitian flag; but the one with the additions suggested by commodore Nicolas, as they were made for the purpose of insulting France, she should not be allowed to fly. Pomare resolutely refused to take down her flag, or to substitute any other. I heard that the governor went so far as to implore her to yield to circumstances, and pointed out the consequences of her obstinately persisting in a refusal. She repeated what she had before said, "that she was well satisfied with the flag, and would have no other;" and requested the governor, "if he had any

further communications to make, to make them in writing, and she would respond in like manner." But he did not enter into much negotiation about the matter: an hour was appointed for her to take down the obnoxious flag; and when this time arrived, as it was not removed, an armed force was landed, who hauled it down, and hoisting the tricolor, the island was declared to be taken possession of in the name of Louis Philippe of France. Pomare's house and domain were seized upon for the use of the governor and his lady; and the out-offices and other buildings were taken possession of as barracks, &c., for the soldiers, artificers, and others engaged in this invasion.

Such I find to be the state of things; and the foregoing details, if not accurate in every respect, are, at all events, generally true. The French are busy erecting various fortifications, the little islet in front of the harbour and commanding the western entrance receiving their most assiduous attention. The men work hard and fare badly, which may account for their appearance; for the body of Frenchmen now here, are a small ill-favoured set. They cannot for a moment bear comparison with the fine race of beings they came to supersede, and perhaps eventually to destroy.

I try to keep cool, and view things with indifference; but it is of no use, my blood will rise in its temperature, as I see the people who have looked up to us as their protecting allies for so many years, subjected to the insults of a parcel of pigmies, who might vie in appearance with Falstaff's ragged

regiment. There is a dogged sullen look in the eye of the natives, which would bode no good to the Frenchmen if mere physical attributes were to be put in requisition to decide the possession of the soil; but the natives are receding from the vicinity of the harbour, and I look in vain for many a manly form and hearty salutation that used to greet me on my former visits. Murmurs of a threatening import will occasionally pass overhead; but what would avail the unaided resistance of a handful of naked men, however fine their physical qualities, against such a power as France? The poor confiding people still cling to the belief that Britain will relieve them from their troubles, but I fear they are depending on a *broken reed*.

The admiral of the station's ship, the *Dublin*, a fine frigate of fifty guns, is here, but the admiral himself is rusticating at the Sandwich Islands. Her presence, however, inspires the natives with confidence, although her captain can do nothing but protest against any proceedings not sanctioned by the home governments. Pomare's entreaties to her subjects are, "Be quiet, do nothing till we receive the letter from Britain." She submits to her fate with much philosophical firmness; but I can see that it is all based on her hopes and belief in assistance from us.

December 13th.—Fearing that my quick temper would lead me into encounters better avoided, to-day we got under weigh for Borabora, reaching it on the morning of *December 15th.*—Tapoa, the king of the island, was absent at a small dependent

island called Maupiti, lying between thirty and forty miles westward from Borabora; he had been away nearly three months, and his people were looking for his return with much anxiety. They earnestly entreated me to go for him, "for," said they, "he will come with you, otherwise we don't know when we shall see him." As another inducement for me to go, they assured me that I could obtain abundance of live stock, vegetables, and cocoa-nut oil at Maupiti; and as fresh provisions were not to be obtained in Tahiti, I allowed myself to be persuaded, and, in defiance of a strong westerly wind, we lifted our anchor on December 16th, and beat our way over by the next morning. We fired off guns to announce our presence, as the passage through the reef surrounding the island has any thing but an inviting appearance. A stranger would doubt if there was any entrance at all. The island bears a close resemblance to Borabora, with its abruptly rising bluffs, and might well pass for its son. We had to wait some time before any one showed themselves; at length a boat made her appearance, manned by eight natives: they proved some of the king's personal attendants, who immediately recognised me. They would not recommend me risking the attempt to take the vessel in; and as no trafficking would be allowed for that day, it being Sunday, I went ashore in their boat.

Tapoa received me with great warmth, but resisted all entreaties to return with me to Borabora. The natives were shy at approaching me on my first landing, and on giving the usual friendly salutation,

they made me no answer, but turned away,—unprecedented conduct on the part of these friendly and simple-minded people. To avoid the broiling heat of the sun in the tedious pull against the current, I landed at once, and the boat was to pick me up again at a point opposite the settlement. I expected to be surrounded by the curious, but not a soul came near me. On reaching the point, the boat had not arrived; and whilst waiting for it, the peculiarity of their behaviour was accounted for. Three strangers made their way towards me, laden with green coconuts, which they cast at my feet, proffering their hands, and greeting me with much cordiality. The poor fellows had taken me for a Frenchman, and they thought the vessel outside was a French ship that had come to make preparatory arrangements for taking their island. On discovering their error, they made after me in the manner above described. The feeling towards the French was bitter in the extreme, and the secret of Tapoa's long stay at Maupiti unwittingly escaped from his wife's lips. "The French," said she, "will break their ships if they attempt to come in here, but at Borabora they can enter at any time."

I staid trading with them till *December 19th*; nor had I been deceived as to the articles they had for barter. In pulling off to the vessel it came on to rain and blow with great violence, and the atmosphere was so thick and hazy that we lost sight of the schooner; and after three or four hours' hard pulling we had to make the best of our way back again. Scarcely had we reached the set-

tlement, when the boat ahead cried out that the vessel was close into the reef. I induced the good-natured fellows to give way once more, and this time we reached her; but, before we had discharged the boats it was blowing a complete gale, and we had drifted considerably from the island. I did not like the appearance of the night, and wished the natives to remain with me till next morning; but they had no fear, and having refreshed themselves, all stepped into the king's boat, and, double banking the oars, off they started. We lost sight of them immediately, and were ourselves compelled to heave to under a balanced reef storm-mainsail. I had sore misgivings for their safety, but the captain endeavoured to persuade me that they would not feel the wind so violently close in with the reef; and as they were all powerful men, my doubts were suspended, but not satisfied. All night it blew "great guns," and at daybreak we discovered we had drifted nearly on to the reef at the starboard side of the entrance to Borabora harbour. It was fortunate that the captain knew the course by compass, for the island was so densely enveloped in fog that we could not see a cable's length beyond us. Even the bold mountainous swell, not a mile from us, and more than 1,400 feet high, was hidden in the impervious haze; and, but for the accuracy of his judgment, we must have gone ashore. As it was, he caused the foresail to be dropped, and we ran in; but hardly had we cleared the passage when the wind suddenly and absolutely ceased, and we were obliged to let go our anchor more than a mile below the usual an-

chorage : and when the mist cleared away and showed us to the natives, they shouted out that the French had stolen in upon them to take their island.

The portentous gloom of the morning, as night advanced, began to betray the nature of its threatening import, the wind again whistled, and the sea rose unusually high. The missionary resident had invited me to his house; but knowing the captain to be out of the vessel, I felt restless and uneasy, and on directing my gaze towards the sea; *behold! it was breaking in curling crests right across the mouth of the harbour.* I was so startled, that I despatched a note at once to the captain, requesting him to look seaward, and to let go his second anchor. This sent him on board; but not a moment too soon, for at eight P.M. a very tempest was raging. Apologising to the family for my hasty departure, I hurried to the beach to watch the vessel. The sea was lashed into foam, and the water in the harbour was frothing in fury; the wind howled fearfully, there was no possibility of getting off to the vessel, and I was compelled to remain a passive spectator.

As the night wore on, the fury of the gale increased. The darkness was intense, save when the lightning, at intervals, flashed upon the scene, rendering the heavens, to the northward and westward, a vault of livid fire. So long as the lightning continued its fitful glare, I could catch occasional glimpses of the vessel, as she strained and laboured at her anchors; but when it ceased I became a prey to the most painful anxiety. The wind continued increasing in might, till it appeared to me impossible

that it could blow harder. I had taken shelter in the king's house; but the natives, dreading every moment to see it torn about their ears, had fled for shelter further inland. I persisted in remaining till I felt the waves washing against the walls and beneath the raised foundation of the house, and until the flooring and partitions were burst up and broken by the masses of coral rock hurled in by the sea. On my first attempting to escape, I was blown flat on my back; and as I struggled off the verandah, I found myself up to my neck in the water, and the waves beating over me. I struck out for dear life, and succeeded in gaining a footing somewhere beyond the public road. The scene at this time was fearful; the raging waves, by their own unearthly light, showed the ravages they were committing. The natives, washed out of their houses, were hurrying to and fro, like demons of the storm, with flaring torches. As you contended against the furious blast, and the dangers that surrounded you, you were continually stumbling over the wrecks of houses and fences, and fallen trees; and as often as I ventured to turn my eyes in that direction where the vessel had been left, the only thing discernible was the sparkling of the waves, tossing in the wildest frenzy. I gave her up for lost, and was led to the harrowing conclusion that "all hands" had perished. To keep my mind from dwelling on this supposition, and also to see if I could render any assistance to the missionary and his infant family, we fought our way to his residence, though frequently com-

pelled to lie down to the blast, and cling to the earth to recover breath. The family had been removed to a more secluded, and better sheltered spot; but the house being much further inland than the generality of the buildings, and somewhat protected by the shoulder of a hill, it had not yet yielded, although much damaged, and they were in hourly anticipation of its going.

Again I hastened to the beach, and we narrowly escaped death. A large tree torn up by the roots, dashed down within a few paces of us; and such was the roaring of the blast, that we never heard the crashing of the tree, and only knew the danger we had escaped by the blow received on our legs and faces, and from finding ourselves entangled in the maze of branches that had been precipitated to the earth. Finding I could do nothing, for a greater power than man's was abroad, I had to wait in the best way I could till dawn. The kindness and anxiety evinced for me by the natives will, so long as I am in being, be remembered with deep gratitude. Amidst all their difficulties, and the trouble they were in to save their families and property from destruction, they would be continually calling to know if I was safe; and one or other of them would seek my hand and grasp it to make sure. Three times during that fearful night were we washed from different places of refuge; and even as they started up to fly, the first cry was for me.

With the first symptoms of returning light I was down upon the beach as far as I dared to

wade, on the look out for the vessel. The hurricane had abated, but the wind was still high. In vain I strained my eyes and scanned the troubled waters: the vessel was not to be seen. The painful conviction that all had perished was borne upon my mind, and I was turning slowly and sorrowfully away, when happening to cast my eyes to the opposite extremity of the harbour, there, to my unspeakable satisfaction, I discovered the schooner, all *ataunto*, with her royal yard across, and dashing the spray from her bows, as she rocked and tossed on the fretted billows. Never before did I experience such a sensation as her appearance in safety gave me; I could neither laugh nor cry. The sudden transition was too great, my joy amounted to pain; "for sudden joy, like sudden grief, will kill." These feelings subsided, I had time to pay attention to my neighbours, and what a scene of desolation did I witness! Not a house upon the island stood entire; the beach was strewed with wreck, and scarcely a bread-fruit tree was standing. The devastation was terrible, not a vestige of either of the churches remained. Some beautiful large trees that used to grace the beach had been torn up by the roots, and *all the small craft* that the natives had been engaged in building were buried in the sand and debris thrown up by the sea, or were broken and carried inland; and the houses appropriated for the manufacture of cocoa-nut oil, with boats, troughs, casks, &c., were utterly destroyed and washed away.

The safety of our schooner excited much admiration and congratulation amongst the natives; but

their own losses never seemed to give them a moment's uneasiness. They talked about their food and houses being all destroyed with as much unconcern as if it was an occurrence of no consequence; and whilst searching amongst the ruins for the chance of recovering any of their missing property, you could hear them laughing and jesting one with the other as if the whole was only a fit subject for a joke. I was much struck with the coolness of one old man. By the labour of years, he had erected a snug, neat little cottage, built in the European style; he had besides amassed some little property, and owned a vessel of about twenty tons burden, which was hauled alongside his house; he had also out-houses for storing oil, troughs, &c. His vessel was crushed by a large iron-wood tree falling across it, and the point on which his houses, &c., were standing was washed as bare as the palm of my hand.

“The dwelling-house,” said he, with a smile, “was carried bodily out to sea, and remained for a little tossing about like a ship; but at last the waves crumbled it up.”

“But have you lost everything?” asked the missionary.

“All's done!” he replied, extending his fingers and depressing the palms of his hands; “the sea has swallowed it all.” And with this he walked away, apparently as unconcerned as if nothing had happened.

The natives of Borabora are, I believe, considered the most valiant of the natives of the Society Isles. They certainly display more energy and enterprise

than the others, and in former days they were the boldest warriors. They expressed a firm determination never to submit to French government.

I laughed, and enquired, "What will you do?"

"Wait till you see," was the rejoinder.

"But," said I, "by offering resistance, you will only involve yourselves in certain destruction."

"We don't know that; and even if we do, we would rather die than live under their rule."

They handed me a letter, sent by Pomare to Tapoa, at Maupiti, and who forwarded it by me for the perusal of his chiefs. The following is a literal translation: —

"December 12th, 1843, Paofai, Tahiti.

"To Ariipapa and his family,

"Peace be to you, and to your little child also. We sympathise with you and your little girl in your dwelling down below, hearing of all the trouble that has fallen upon these lands. The land is not well. The letter has not yet arrived from England for which we are waiting; we are living in fear and trouble. If anything should be heard that is displeasing to France, the person is fastened in irons and sent away. Penehata made known to us a little speech; which circumstance was told to Praita and —— (naming the Belgian incendiary), and he was fastened in irons and sent to Raiatea. We are indeed dwelling in the midst of fear and trouble. Were it not for the English ship of war, we should have long since been scattered to the mountains.

The English ship of war is our only place of refuge. The French are erecting fortifications, for which purpose they are cutting down the cocoa-nut and bread-fruit trees. One French ship of war has gone to the Marquesas for the purpose of bringing soldiers to Tahiti. It is not known that they will all dwell at Papeeti; it is conjectured that they will spread over all parts of the land, and by that means be the cause of many Frenchmen coming here; such is the opinion of the inhabitants of Moorea and Tahiti. The desire of the people is, to fall upon the French and utterly destroy them; but this is not agreed to, although it is the general wish of the people entirely to annihilate these Frenchmen; and if but a word had escaped from us, importing, "Come!" a disturbance would long since have ensued. But we are waiting with patience for the letter from England; for should we begin now ourselves, we understand that no assistance will be granted us from England hereafter. Peace be to you and to the child.

(Signed) "ARIIFAITI, T.

"To Tapoa and his family,
Maupiti, Borabora."

Amongst the chieftains of the islands, Tapoa is addressed either as Tapoa or Ariipapa. Arii means king. The above letter, in the original, is written and subscribed by the queen's husband; the T. after his signature indicating tani, or husband. In another letter, on domestic matters, written by Pomare herself, she signs herself, Ariifaaiti, V.; the V. standing for vahini, or wife.

It will be seen by the foregoing that all their hopes are centred in Britain, but I fear they are uselessly reposed. Many years ago, when the guava tree was first introduced into the country, on the natives observing how rapidly it spread, over-running the soil, and killing all other trees in its way, they pronounced it to be typical of their forthcoming doom. They foresaw by this, that their land would be taken away from them by foreigners, and that they would ultimately be all destroyed. They now alluded to this saying. The signs of the times are favouring the prediction.

I accompanied the missionary in an excursion over the island, and we found that it had suffered everywhere from the effects of the hurricane. On our return to the harbour, the boat that had quitted the schooner off Maupiti was there. The poor fellows had been blown to Raiatea. They informed me, that just as they had made the passage three of their oars broke, and in spite of all their exertions they were carried out to sea, both wind and current setting them there. They had a small spritsail, which they set, and tried to overtake us; but darkness, and the fear of swamping the boat, induced them to keep her dead before the wind. They missed Borabora, and were brought up by Taaha, whence they crossed over to Raiatea. "The sea," they said, "was very terrible, and they never expected to live through the night." I elicited these particulars by a series of cross questions, as they met me with the air of having separated from me only an hour or two ago, and unless I had

questioned them, they would have scarcely made allusion to the imminent peril they had encountered. They made no attempt at extortion, but took their compulsory trip as a thing of course, a chance they were at all times liable to. Time is of no great value to them; and so long as the wants of nature are supplied, it seems of little consequence, where or how they pass it. They gained Raiatea before the hurricane commenced, otherwise nothing could have saved them. I offered to take them and their boat back to Maupiti in the vessel, but they preferred adopting their own time and pleasure with the boat.

January 2nd, 1844.—Bade farewell to the missionary and his family, and to the kind-hearted natives of Borabora, for whom I feel a more than ordinary attachment, from the affectionate solicitude displayed towards me on the occasion of the common danger. The same afternoon, at three o'clock, we dropped anchor in the harbour of Huaru, opposite captain Hunter's location. The hurricane had visited Raiatea pretty roughly, but not quite so harshly as it had treated Borabora; marks of its devastating progress were visible in every part of the island. Four unhappy beings, who were living on an islet within the reef were washed away, and nothing was ever seen of them again. Captain Hunter's place had suffered severely: the parterres in front of his dwelling, and all the little elegant arrangements of his daughters, were annihilated, and a bed of sand and coral deposited in lieu. His warehouses, sugar plantation, &c., had

also sustained much injury ; and the cheerful prospect that was wont to smile around his abode is, for a season, entirely destroyed.

January 8th.—We had finished taking in and stowing thirty tuns of oil, purchased from captain Hunter, when, bidding him and his hospitable family circle adieu, we again got under weigh and steered for Huaheine, reaching it *January 10th.*—From this date till the 16th we were busily engaged receiving cargo. Huaheine had suffered nothing from the gale in comparison with the islands we had just left, and no damage of any consequence had ensued.

January 16th.—Lifted our anchor, to let it go again, on the *17th*, in the harbour of Papeeti. To my regret I found the Dublin making every preparation for sailing by nine o'clock the next morning. Intelligence had arrived by the government ketch Basilisk that some disturbance had broken out at Mexico, and the Dublin was ordered to the Sandwich Islands to take up the admiral. This announcement produced quite a damp on the spirits of the natives, and tearful melancholy was visible in all the faces of the queen's household.

January 18th.—True enough, the Dublin was off at the hour signified ; and we were left with the little Basilisk sole guardian and supporter of British interests on the island. The British consul *accredited to queen Pomare* was not recognised by the French since their usurpation of the island ; and they refused to receive him, even provisionally, in such capacity, alleging that Mr. Pritchard's influence with the natives was too inimical to French interests. The

Dublin had not been gone many days before the self-constituted authorities despatched armed boats to various parts of the island to arrest certain chiefs, zealous adherents to the queen's interests; and even Mr. Pritchard, the British consul, was threatened with deportation from the island. When the Dublin took her departure, the natives became so discontented, that casting aside all hopes of assistance from Britain, they determined on a general rising, to try and effect their own deliverance. News of their intention reaching the ears of the missionaries at the different stations, they wrote to Mr. Pritchard, apprising him of the rumour, and requesting his assistance in trying to prevent the effusion of blood. Mr. Pritchard lost no time in consulting with the queen, who despatched a letter to her chiefs and people, praying them to be orderly and to obey the laws: and she concluded, "Do not believe that Britain has cast us off; we have still one little ship left to watch over us, and two large vessels of war are expected here shortly. Wait patiently for the letter from England. Do these French people no wrong, neither enter into any quarrel with them. Be kind to them, and bear all with great patience; take me for your guide; wait patiently, and pray fervently, that we may be delivered from the great afflictions that have fallen upon us, the same as fell upon Hezekiah whom the Lord delivered." For promulgating this letter, some of the most influential of Pomare's chiefs were seized in the dead of night, and conducted, for greater security, to one of the men-of-war. It is impossible to describe the consternation those stealthy

proceedings excited; amazement and dismay sat on every countenance.

One aged chief, nearly seventy years old, when the guard roused him from his slumbers by the side of his wife, demanded "why they broke in upon his sleep like a thief in the night? What crime had he committed that he was to be made a prisoner of." He refused to step into the boat, requiring to be confronted with the governor. The only answer to the old man's remonstrances was a rude thrust, which knocked his hat off, and he was hustled into the boat without ceremony. Another old chief was arrested by an armed force for treating with contempt the French authority. This old man was one of the most devoted of Pomare's partisans, and as an illustration of native character, I will describe the particulars of his offence. On a French proclamation being issued, in the native language, the old man, looking at it, said to some of his followers, "What is that? I can't see it! 'tis too high!" It was lowered; "'Tis too high! I can't see it!" Again it was lowered, and again he repeated the same words, till it was at length laid upon the ground. "Good! that is good!" and covering it with dirt, "thus," he continued, "should the enemies of Tahiti be hidden from our sight."

February 2nd.—Last night, influenced by her fears, on seeing some armed soldiers pass the temporary and insecure building occupied by her, Pomare fled on board the Basilisk, and claimed the protection of the British flag. Rumours had frequently reached the queen that it was the intention of the

French to make themselves masters of her person; and though I have been credibly informed that nothing was further from their contemplation, still, the capture of so many chiefs devoted to her service left Pomare but little reason to believe that her person would be any more respected, if it should suit the convenience of the French to seize it; consequently, whilst she had it in her power, she sought for refuge beneath our flag. The announcement of her arrival on board, was immediately conveyed to the commander, who happened to be ashore at the time, and the protection which she sought was not withheld.

For the last two or three days the vessel has been ready for sea, and I have made up my mind once more to proceed to Valparaiso, touching at Anā, or Chain Island, to take in fifteen or twenty tons of cocoa-nut oil collected there. Hitherto the detention of the vessel arose from negotiations which we had entered into with the French government; and now, fearing hostilities from the steps taken by the queen, I felt loth to quit the island until assured of its tranquillity. I waited upon commander Hunt, of the Basilisk, and condoled with poor Pomare. The commander desired me to dismiss all apprehensions, as there were not the slightest grounds for supposing that any disturbance would ensue. He had seen the governor, who explained with regard to the captured chiefs, that it was merely his intention to keep them out of the way for a time, until the feverish excitement of the people had somewhat abated, and which the presence of the chiefs only tended to promote.

And for the same reason, the governor assumed a high tone, and prohibited the queen's return to the shore unless she appeared as a private individual, and amenable as such to the laws of France.

The commander favours this style of argument : he contends that for the time being, we are in a French colony and he sees nothing in the acts as yet enforced at variance with the constitution of the French code. He says he has in vain pointed out, that being under French government, it is necessary to observe the same conduct as if living in France ; and that in the latter country, when persons betray disaffection, or become the objects of suspicion to the state, they are apprehended and dealt with accordingly ; and he therefore thought it would be better for all parties, having any interest at stake upon the island, to consider themselves English subjects resident in France. He repeated his assurances that there was not the remotest chance of any collision between himself and the French authorities. Satisfied on this head, I made my bow and gave directions for getting under weigh, and at six P.M. we were outside the reef on our way to Anā.

February 3rd.—In the middle night-watch, between two and three o'clock A.M., we were close to the little island called Tituroa, situated about twenty-five miles due north from Point Venus. It is a low flat coral island, well covered with cocoa-nut trees. Fatness is considered a beauty with the Tahitians, and it was to this island that Pomare went previous to her marriage in order to be fattened. Bananas, I believe, are in great abundance there ; and a food

called "popoi," made from this fruit pounded up with the kernels of young cocoa-nuts, is exceedingly fattening. Great variety of fish is also abundantly obtained from the reefs round the island. I have been told by those many years resident at Tahiti, that when Pomare returned from Tituroa she could not be recognised as the gracefully formed girl that went away.

February 14th. — We were abreast of Chain Island this morning, but much time was lost from my not knowing the exact spot to proceed to. The only place for rafting off oil is on the north-north-west side of the island; and even there the casks have to be rolled a long distance over a rugged reef, and with northerly or westerly winds nothing can be done. Four white men were staying at the settlement, and they had collected between them nearly sixty tons of oil.

February 15th. — Hard at it all day, up to my waist in the water, superintending rafting off oil. New laws and regulations have been introduced amongst the Chain Islanders by two of the petty chieftains from Tahiti. They have adopted the curfew bell system, which rings at eight o'clock; and after that hour, any of the natives found strolling about are apprehended and placed in confinement. They have also instituted fines to punish incontinency, the amount being doubled if married persons are the delinquents. Whilst engaged rafting a lot of casks, one of the white men came down and told me that they were at that moment trying a girl in the church; and as soon as the last cask was shoved off, I went out of curiosity to witness the trial. But my curiosity

was exceeded by my astonishment when I found the charge exhibited against the girl was, that she had committed herself with me, and that four fellows had sworn that they were eyewitnesses to her guilt. Just as I came up, the judge, with the Tahitian printed code of laws in his hand, had summed up the evidence, and was directing the girl to be fined in twenty fathoms (forty yards) of cloth, being ten for herself, and ten for me, the upright judge not deeming it necessary to try me, nor even to apprise me of what was going on. Much incensed, I challenged the verdict, and desired that the girl's accusers might be confronted with me. The judge objected, saying the trial was finished; but I insisted, and warned the court against carrying the amercement into execution.

"Easy! easy!" said the judge.

"I'll not be easy," I replied, "when I witness such an abuse of the laws; let me see the liars, and I'll soon prove their falsehood. It is true I'm only single-handed amongst you, and can't give you your deserts for such a base exercise of authority; but you shall make me a prisoner before you inflict the fine, whilst the vessel proceeds to where I direct her, and on her return we'll see if you also can stand a trial."

"That will do! that will do!" cried the equitable holder of the balance of justice, "let the witnesses show themselves."

The worthies came, looking much more like culprits than honest men; and after I had put a few questions, they so prevaricated and committed themselves, that

they were glad to sneak away, and the poor abashed girl was acquitted. One half the penalty goes to the informer. It was well known that the girl had no cloth, but the vagabonds thought by implicating her with me, that I would pay the fine rather than see her imprisoned; and there was considerable mirth excited amongst the other natives at the sheepish appearance of the witnesses when I so unexpectedly came and "turned the tables;" but I could not induce the judge to punish them for their perjury.

By noon on *February 16th* we had finished taking in, and as the wind admitted of our making easting, we lost no time in prosecuting our voyage.

February 18th.—Early this morning land was descried from the mast-head, and at noon we were well up with it. It was a large lagoon island, and had several clusters of cocoa-nut trees upon it. We made its latitude to be $19^{\circ} 54'$ S., and the longitude of its centre to be about $144^{\circ} 54'$ W. I could see no signs of any inhabitants. We attempted to land in the boat; but the send of the sea was so heavy on the coral reef that we feared staving her, and I was not sufficiently expert as a swimmer to trust myself through the breakers. From the disposition of the various groves of cocoa-nut trees, I imagine there must be natives on the island, although probably they were too frightened to show themselves; but if there were, they could not have formed a very high opinion of our prowess on witnessing our abortive attempts to land. On the chart San Pablo is expressed as being "hereabouts;" and in 1835 the master of a French vessel fell in with an island

corresponding in description with the one we saw. He gave its latitude $10^{\circ} 41' S.$, longitude $145^{\circ} W.$; but as he worked by dead reckoning, and made the island in hazy weather, a few miles error in his calculation might be accounted for. The lagoon seemed very extensive, but I saw no appearance of any entrance to it for a vessel.

Our agent has a chart in which this island is called Surry Island. Some months subsequently to our falling in with it, he also made it, and having thirty or forty divers on board, they dragged boats over the reef into the lagoon and explored it.

A family was living on the island, whose history is remarkable. Many years ago, a middle-aged native belonging to one of the islands in close proximity to Chain Island was crossing from one island to another in a small canoe, accompanied only by his four young children, a son and three daughters. They were caught in a northerly gale, and, compelled to scud before it, were brought up by this island, which is the veritable Hereheretue (see entries March 9th, 1843, and June 2nd, 1844). The island proved uninhabited, and incapable of again leaving it, here this family remained. As the children reached puberty, the son took his sisters to wife, and had a family by all of them. Our agent offered to convey the whole community to any other inhabited island, and his proposal was gladly accepted. The father was now an exceedingly aged man, and the son a powerful man in the prime of life. Unfortunately, when these poor people, were thrown amongst the divers, the three sisters were unable to resist the force

or the blandishments of the strangers. A fierce morosity came over both father and son, and they refused their food; but in the night *the two* attempted to capture the vessel. The years of the old man incapacitated him from much exertion, but the son defied the whole strength of the vessel, and darted his spear without quitting its hold at every one that came near him. He sheltered himself beneath one of the whale-boats turned bottom up on the deck, and when the divers succeeded in grasping the spear, their united force could not wrest it from him without the risk of tearing out the side of the boat, and they were obliged to cut it. A strict watch was thereafter kept, and every means tried to conciliate the old man and his son; but alas! they availed not, both obstinately persisted in refusing all sustenance, and the old man died on the day they sighted the island they were bound for, and the son expired as they were conveying him ashore. The women and children were finally taken to Chain Island.

February 24th. — At dawn Rapa was visible, and on making the harbour I had a boat lowered and pulled in. Since my last visit, three vessels had been there and engaged divers, now all returned. They spoke in very unfavourable terms of their employers, particularly of the captain of a French vessel, who, they said, not only used to abuse them and knock them about, but absolutely half starved them; and consequently they concealed from him all the pearls they could. I saw a beautiful one in their possession, but the native who offered it for sale had such notions of its value as to preclude my buying it.

I made a tender of property that to him must have appeared of great value; but he shook his head, "he had been to Mangarava (Gambier's Islands), and there he learnt that for a very small pearl very large payment was made; and if I would go to Tahiti and load the vessel with goods and bring them to him, and then go again and return with another shipload, he would let me have the pearl." I declined robbing him, as I told him "I didn't think he asked enough;" but if he could make up his mind to receive three shiploads, we might come to terms. Content to be in possession of his pearl, he tied it up in a corner of the dirty piece of rag that girded his loins and walked away.

The next day being sabbath, and no trading allowed, I passed it on the island. All my divers came to see me, and one made me a present of a fine hog. They had given up all hopes of seeing me again, as immediately after my last departure they were visited with such dreadful weather, and of so long continuance, that all the low lands were under water, and every tree of any size was blown down, together with a great many of their houses. Their confidence in the vessel was greatly increased, and several volunteered to go to the Main with me. I took advantage of this favourable disposition, and carried three on board, one being a native of Anā. He was at home at once, and as unconcerned as any in the vessel. One of the Rapa natives also evinced no depression of spirits at quitting country and friends for the first time; but the other, on the evening of *February 26th*, as the island fast receded from our view, and the shades of night were closing round us,

appeared to be for the first time struck with the novelty of his situation, and to be sensible of the step he had taken: suddenly his mirth forsook him, and sitting down on the main hatchway, with his head buried in his arms, he commenced bellowing like an ox. The ludicrous transition of his feelings so capsized my gravity, that I could scarcely speak to him for laughing; but after I had bantered him a little, and cheered him up with a few encouraging words, he became tolerably composed, and went below.

CHAP. II.

Arrive at Valparaiso.—Letters from Tahiti.—Some Account of the Troubles going on there.—Get under weigh for that Island.—Ambrose and Felix Islands.—Cruise for Pilgrim's Island.—No Signs of its Existence.—Les four Facardines prove to be Faeatae, and uninhabited.—An Interview with the Savages.—Thrum Cap Island.—At Bow Island hear of the friendly Captain of the Jules de Blossville.—Sight the Two Groups.—Just in time to be saved from the Wreck.—Remarks on the incertitude of the Position of the Paumotu Islands.—Touch at Chain Island, and hear that Hostilities have commenced between the French and Tahitians.—Off Tahiti fall in with a Whale-boat bottom up, and notice Signs of Disturbances on the Shore.—Enter the Harbour.—Narrative of Events that transpired during the Writer's absence.—A Missionary shot.—His Funeral.—A Scene on board the Ketch Basilisk.—“Britons never shall be Slaves.”—Constant Excitement and Alarm.—Daring of a Native.—Arrival of Lord George Paulet in the Carysfort.—Departure of Queen Pomare for the Leeward Islands.—A Trip to collect the Effects abandoned by the Missionaries.—Sail for Borabora with forty or fifty of the Queen's Adherents.—Interview with the Queen at Raiatea.

“Some hidden disappointment clings
To all of man—to all his schemes;
And life has little fair it brings
Save idle dreams.”

April 4th.—WITHOUT any thing worthy of note transpiring since my last entry, to-day we were once more at anchor in Valparaiso harbour.

Considerable improvements are manifest in the port; the scene of the fire is entirely effaced, and the most that could be made of the ground has been done in covering it with substantial factories. My savages did not appear much struck with the wonders that greeted them; their looks indicated no astonishment, nor did they utter any exclamations of surprise. After a few days I procured them lodgings ashore; but although the quarters were comfortable, and they were treated kindly, they were eager to return to the vessel again: perhaps the reason was, that I was too much occupied to show them much attention, and they were surrounded by strangers to whom they could not make themselves understood. The climate moreover did not agree with them, and they were continually asking me when I intended sailing.

May —. — Letters from Tahiti give us strange accounts of the proceedings of the French. The natives have at length been roused to action, and have quitted Papeeti for the mountains. Mr. Pritchard has been made prisoner, and the quarters of Europeans are under martial law.

Whilst we were wondering at these statements, Mr. Pritchard himself made his appearance, and confirmed every thing that had been reported. Fortunately for the representative of the Queen of England, H. M. S. V. Cormorant had been sent to Tahiti to mark the proceeding; and the French authorities, choosing to assume the belief that she was destined for the Feejee Islands, *hinted to the captain that it would be advisable for him to continue his*

mission, as his presence disturbed the tranquillity of the island. Anxious for the relief of Mr. Pritchard, who was kept a close prisoner in solitary confinement, and denied the privilege of landing at any of the Georgian or Society Isles, the captain of the *Cormorant* stipulated for Mr. Pritchard's liberty, and put to sea; but not until the *Cormorant* was outside the harbour was Mr. Pritchard taken on board. The following are the particulars that transpired.

In consequence of a report that the natives were about to rise and murder all the foreigners but Mr. Pritchard, British consul, Mr. Collie, merchant, and Dr. Johnstone, British subjects, the authorities issued a public notice, the English translation of which was as follows:—

“French Establishments in the Ocean.

“The Commandant for the time being of the Society Isles, declares what follows:—

“ART. 1.—Until the return of His Excellency the Governor; the establishments of the bay comprised between Cocoa-nut Point and the barracks of the *Uranie*, are declared in a state of siege.

“ART. 2.—All European and native residents must be within their houses at evening gun-fire, and not receive any person after that hour.

“ART. 3.—After evening gun-fire, until that of the morning, patrols commanded by the commissary of police can demand entrance or openly force and search any house that may appear suspicious, or in which they may suspect a meeting of persons other than those who inhabit the house.

“ART. 4.—At evening gun-fire all the fires in the native houses must be put out.

“ART. 5.—The boats of foreign ships, of whatever nation, must have left the beach at evening gun-fire, taking with them their whole crew, and all passengers who have come on shore during the day. It is forbidden that any officer, sailor, or passenger, should sleep ashore.

“ART. 6.—From one gun-fire to the other, foreign ships are warned that, beside the shots they would expose their men to, in sending their boat ashore, the crew of the boat will be arrested, and the boat immediately sunk or destroyed.

“ART. 7.—If the patrols or rounds of gendarme find in the houses which they visit people who do not reside there, beside the arrest of these persons, and of the persons of the proprietors, and of the confiscation or immediate destruction of all wine, alcohol, or other spirits, the houses may be destroyed, and their materials transported at the convenience of the commandant for the time being, to construct guard houses, magazines, or useful shelter for the garrison.

“ART. 8.—Whether the establishment preserves its tranquillity, or that it should become disturbed during the night by any cause, it is expressly forbidden to Europeans and natives to leave their houses: those who do not conform to this order will expose themselves not only to arrest, but to the fire of the patrol.

“ART. 9.—The agents of the native police, whose duty it is to watch at night, shall come each night to the barracks of the gendarme, which they will not

leave for their duty without a light, and accompanied by a French gendarme.

“ART. 10. — The officers of the establishments whose duty or any other motive shall require their being out of their houses after gun-fire, must have a light.

“ART. 11. — At evening gun-fire, all boats or canoes belonging to residents or natives, must be hauled up at least ten times the length of the boat or canoe from high-water mark. Any boat or canoe found afloat after eight o'clock will be sunk or destroyed.

“ART. 12. — All whale-boats or canoes manned by natives, or containing any, which may come into the bay, or which may wish to leave during the day, must come to the station-house that they may be searched, to make sure that they do not contain wines, alcohol, munitions of war, arms, or any suspicious articles.

“ART. 13. — Boats of French men of war who wish to come ashore or remain there after gun-fire must be provided with a light, as well as the officers of the fleet.

“ART. 14. — It is forbidden to foreigners and natives to fire or explode boxes, whether by day or night, in the whole space in the state of siege. Transgressors will be arrested, their arms seized, and their houses searched.

“The Commandant-particular of the Society Islands,

(Signed) “D'AUBIGNY.

“Papeeti, 22nd March, 1844.”

This act of M. D'Aubigny exhibits the cunning of a fox; for not many hours after the place had been declared under martial law, the British consul was seized opposite his own door, torn from his family, and dragged to a block-house on the brow of the mountain, at the back of the settlement, and thrust through a trap-door into a dark dungeon; where, after he had been kept fifteen or sixteen hours without food or water, a document to the following effect was handed to him:—

“French Establishments in the Ocean.

“A French sentinel was attacked in the night of the 2nd to the 3rd March. In reprisal, I have caused to be seized one Pritchard, the only daily mover and instigator of the disturbances of the natives.

“His property shall be answerable for all damages occasioned to our establishments by the insurgents; and, if French blood is spilt, every drop shall fall back upon his head.

“The Commandant-particular of the Society Islands,
(Signed) “D'AUBIGNY.

“Papeeti, 3rd March, 1844.”

The charge is trumpery and transparent enough; and Mr. Pritchard solemnly declares that it is utterly without foundation, as he was no more conscious of a native's attacking or being about to attack a French sentinel, than was the British consul in Valparaiso: besides there is only M. D'Aubigny's word for it, that an attack was made. No attempt was made to substantiate the charge against Mr. Pritchard, and

after he had been kept for about a fortnight in solitary confinement, he was carried out to sea, and there placed on board the *Cormorant*, without having been allowed to approach his dwelling to make any arrangement of his papers, or to provide in any way for the disposition of his property, or the welfare of his family. Sharp work this! The captain of the *Cormorant*, not having the authority nor the power to carry things with a high hand, could only protest against such violence; and, as the speediest way of obtaining redress, he deemed it the wisest plan to hasten with Mr. Pritchard direct to Valparaiso. The frigate *Vindictive* being on the very point of sailing for England, Mr. Pritchard was immediately accommodated by Commodore Nicholas with a passage, that he might personally prefer his own complaint. I hear that Englishmen have been treated like dogs in Tahiti, but I presume this last outrageous insult offered to England through one of her consuls will not be overlooked.

May 14th.—With sundry misgivings, this afternoon we got under weigh for Tahiti. My doubts are, as to the prudence of taking down a cargo whilst such tyrannical measures are in force. The venture is precarious, but I solace myself with the thought that no business is carried on without risk.

May 19th.—At eight o'clock this morning an island was plainly visible in the distant horizon: we were going sometimes five and sometimes seven knots, but we were not abreast of it till six o'clock in the evening, so that it was discernible at least between fifty and sixty miles off. It is named on the chart

Ambrose Island, and is in latitude $26^{\circ} 32'$ S. longitude $80^{\circ} 11'$ W.: it is a small but very high clump, and at a distance resembles Isle Masafuera. We ran close alongside: it is steep and I should suppose about the size of Pitcairn's Island, but loftier, and of a more rugged and barren appearance. We could not distinguish a shrub on its scarped sides, and it is apparently tenantless and inaccessible. One or two rocks or islets off it on the eastern side are covered with birds' dung, which, at a distance, looks like snow; and I imagine the island to be the resort of innumerable sea birds, whose solitude has never been intruded on by the foot of man. Fifteen or twenty miles to the westward of Ambrose Island there is another small island, which is happy in the name of "Felix;" it is also high land, but it dips in the centre like a saddle, and it has level land running from either point. An isolated rock, resembling a brig under full sail, shewed itself a considerable distance from the most northern point, and as it was getting too dark to distinguish objects, to avoid hidden danger we altered our course, and steered due north till well clear of the islands.

June 2nd. — We have had light and baffling winds since the last entry. To-day, being in the latitude and longitude of the position assigned to the "Pilgrim's Island" of Captain Delana, and not seeing it, we devoted our time till the sun went down in cruising for it, but without success, and as there were no birds in our vicinity, and nothing in the appearance of the water to indicate the presence of land, we presume that Captain Delana was "taken in" by one

of those nebular illusions so frequently observed upon the ocean, and designated by sailors "Cape Fly-away."

June 22nd.— The weather we have experienced this year has been very different from what we experienced in the last at this season: then, from the latitude of 17° to 40° S., we encountered nothing but a succession of easterly and south-easterly gales, that drove us fearfully out of our course; now we have had great difficulty in getting to the northward of the 25th degree, the prevalent winds having been light, and from the northward, westerly. After much tedious work, we gained the latitude of 20° S., and shortly after the easterly trades reached us. This day, at dawn, we descried an acquaintance in the dangerous archipelago, to wit, *Les four Facardines*, or Lagoon Island, and which my divers, on a former occasion of passing it, assured me was called *Hereheretue*. In the obscurity of the light we had passed to the southward of it, and when I observed it, it bore about six miles to the north-east of us. Being anxious to examine the island, and ascertain if it possessed, as the divers asserted, a good entrance for boats, and plenty of shell in its lagoon, but no inhabitants, we put about and stood for it. On standing in pretty close, we were undeceived as to its being uninhabited, as we saw two naked figures on the beach, apparently watching and accompanying our progress along the land. When about a mile from the south-western extremity, there appeared so little surf breaking on the reef, that I had a boat lowered; and taking with me two of the kanakas from *Rapa*, a native of

Toobuai (a poor fellow I found in Valparaiso, destitute and abandoned), and two of the crew, we pulled for the spot where the two natives were now standing. Our approach was the signal for numerous other natives showing themselves, many being armed with spears. My kanakas became much agitated, and betrayed evident symptoms of fear, and to deter me from going further, assured me the men ashore were cannibals. They were all naked with the exception of the mara round their loins; and from their peculiar crouching stealthy gait, I was convinced they had seen little, if anything, of those who had held intercourse with civilised man. We had four muskets in the boat; but as there were but six of us, I thought it advisable to hold a parley before trusting myself amongst their spears. We halted within hailing distance, and interchanged halloes and signs of good will, and soon discovered that they spoke a dialect different from that known by our kanakas. After much entreaty by gesture on both sides for the one party to approach the other, I at length tore off a few yards of cloth, and rolling it up, threw it towards them, and then pulled away from the spot. Immediately six or seven plunged into the sea and swam for it; but as it had sunk, I was fearful they had lost it, and that the disappointment would probably irritate them. On reaching the shore, however, such numbers flocked around the adventurers, and such shouts of admiration were elicited, that I saw all was right. I repeated this experiment once or twice, each time diminishing the space between us, till the confidence thus created induced two of them to swim away from the others

and make signs for us to throw them cloth in exchange for their maras; but they would come no nearer to the boat.

Our own kanakas now became a little more assured, and rubbed up their memories. The island proved to be Faetae, the identical island from which the fugitive native made his escape to Hao, as mentioned in my entry of May 6th, 1843. Wishing to establish friendly and confidential relations between us (to speak in diplomatic style), I resolved in my own person to give the first proof of confidence; and, much against the will and entreaty of my own fellows, I had the boat backed in and jumped ashore, carrying under my arm the remainder of the cloth, having previously ordered the boat to be pulled out of danger, and the men to be ready with their arms in case of treachery. I was immediately surrounded, many seizing hold of the cloth, whilst one grasped my jacket, another my shirt, a third was endeavouring to pick my pocket, and a fourth, in the attempt to deprive me of my cap, pulled it over my eyes. I shook myself free with an angry frown, and made signs of proceeding further inland, where I would share the cloth amongst them. Never did I see such savage eagerness: they all kept dragging at the cloth as I pushed my way to the spot I designed to reach, and trembled in the nervous anxiety to secure a portion; and as soon as I began to unroll it, five or six would dig at it with their shells and grasp it in several places: so to prevent its being haggled to useless shreds, I got out my pocket-knife, and opening the blade with my teeth,

continued severing it at a single cut, as they tore it from the roll. The knife seemed greatly to excite their wonder and desire; and when the cloth was exhausted, their wonder continuing unabated, and reading in their eyes a too curious desire to examine my personal vestments, fearing also, lest their cupidity should tempt them to strip me, and that my objection to this skinning process might cause me to lose my life, I threw up my arms with extended fingers, to intimate I had given all I had to give, and commenced retreating to the water's edge. Some of them made signs for me to accompany them to the north end of the island, and made me understand that there was a good entrance there for the boat; but such unsatiated curiosity glared in their eyes, that I thought enough had been done for the opening of a friendly communication, and I only sought how to regain the boat in safety without betraying symptoms of alarm. They did not attempt to oppose my departure, but greatly to my relief and satisfaction, no sooner had I hailed the boat, and they saw I was bent on going, than they all left me but two, who, taking either hand, steadied me as I made my way through the water over the crumbling and uneven coral reef, and carefully assisted me into the boat; and one of them, in bidding me farewell, forced his mara upon me.

The island lies nearly north and south, and is about ten miles long, by seven or eight broad. To judge by the chart, there are two other small islands off it; but this is not correct. I saw some fine mother-of-pearl shell, and the natives described the lagoon as being

full of it. Several clusters of cocoa-nut trees were grouped about, which struck me as being extraordinary in an uninhabited island when I first made it, on the 9th March, 1843. Its longitude on the west side we made to be $138^{\circ} 50'$ W., and its latitude $18^{\circ} 46'$ S., a position differing materially from that assigned it on the chart. The natives resemble the Bow Islanders, but have a wilder and more savage air. Sufficient evidence of the truth of the tale related by the one that escaped to Bow Island existed in the maimed and dismembered figures we saw: one poor fellow had lost an arm, another an eye, and others bore cicatrised marks of frightful gashes; and, supposing that most of the inhabitants were congregated to receive me, there cannot be a hundred left on the island. On getting into the boat, and finding myself once more safe, I felt desirous of astonishing the savages and convincing them of our power; but I believe I astonished myself rather more than I astonished them, for in firing off the muskets, causing the balls to ricochet along the water, one of them which happened to be double-charged, by the violence of its concussion knocked me backwards over the boat's thwart. My extraordinary disappearance, or the report, alarmed the natives; the women and children all withdrew, and the men, seizing their spears, which they had previously resigned to the women, watched our proceedings with the utmost jealousy. Nothing daunted by my clever exhibition, I again pulled towards them to renew our interlocution; but their suspicions had been raised, and they receded inland to a cautious distance; and,

as all our gesticulations and entreaties failed in removing their doubts, we returned to the vessel.

Between three and four o'clock P.M. we were close to Thrum Cap Island, called also Isle des Lanciers: it is but a small spot, and although we coasted within half a mile from the south to the north-west extreme, no lagoon was visible from the mast-head. Two cocoa-nut trees were all that could be seen above the low intricate scrub which appeared completely to cover the island. We saw no signs of man or his habitations; and its position, within a mile or two, is latitude $18^{\circ} 33' S.$, longitude $139^{\circ} 11' W.$, being on the chart relatively in error with Faetae. I do not know its native name, but presume it to be one of the group mentioned by the Faetae native.

June 23rd.—At noon we were abreast the entrance at Hao, and the captain and myself went ashore to greet our old friends and make them a few presents. The poor fellows seemed glad to see us, and were quite affected at our coming ashore merely to inquire after them. They told me the French “capitung” had been there, meaning the master of the “Jules de Blosville,” and had only left the harbour two days previously. The Bow Islanders, on recognising him, refused to dive or to have any thing to do with him; but determined to try the lagoon, he went to an island about sixty miles north-west from Hao, called by the natives Tanueri, on the chart “Resolution Island” and “San Simon,” and there engaged men. They say he had not much cause to rejoice in his scheme, for after a stay of several weeks he succeeded in procuring but few

shell, and those of bad quality. As the Bow Islanders are miserably poor, I think their refusal to dive for "capitung" indicated a keen sense of their appreciation of his treachery. They were extremely desirous to dive for me; and when I told them I had visited Uaiatai, they were loud in declaring their readiness to accompany me thither on a diving expedition. The Uaiatai native was about twenty miles up the lagoon, and my visit being short, I could not see him. We took a series of sights at the morai for our chronometer; and as it agreed to a mile in the longitude of the place, we think the longitude we have given for Uaiatai and Thrum Cap is not far from being accurate.

June 24th. — We did not quit Hao till five o'clock last evening, and proceeding by the chart, we expected to make the north end of the "Two Groups," called by the natives Marukan, well after daylight this morning. Our delay at Hao proved providential; for although the wind shifted, and we were close hauled, the mate in charge of the watch, just as day began to break, sang out, "Land on the lee bow." The vessel was put round, and on gaining the deck I found that we were less than two miles from the breakers. The group is not only out in latitude and longitude, but it is very inaccurately delineated, in Arrowsmith's chart of the Low Islands. It is there represented as two islands, surrounded by a reef, with numerous rocks dispersed upon the latter, and between the islands and the outer ledge of coral; when, in fact, there are two distinct and separate lagoon islands, bounded by narrow strips of sandy coral, in the same

way as Hao Island, the passage between the two being sufficiently wide to beat a frigate through. It was the south island we were nearly scraping closer acquaintance with. For several miles on the east side of its southern boundary, the patches of vegetation are more connected than at Hao; but the herbage is of an uniform, dense, and stunted growth, crowning ridges of snow-white sand, and but for which I expect we should have been lost, as the gleaming of the sand was what attracted the mate's notice. From the mast-head we could discern that the lagoon was studded with coral knolls, and on the west end of the south extreme we noted a solitary cluster of cocoa-nut trees; but we could distinguish no opening to the lagoon, nor did we see any inhabitants. In the course of the day we passed over the position assigned on the chart to "Lostanges," known to the natives as Neingo Neingo. When I first saw this island (see entry March 5th, 1842) we made it after hard beating; and as we had no sights for a day or two previous, I assumed that the chart was correct, although we remarked at the time, that the position differed from our reckoning; but as we have found so many of the islands out in their longitude, and have always compared our watch with sights taken at the morai at Bow Island, the longitude of which was scientifically fixed by Captain Beechy, of H. M. S. Blossom, I have not the least doubt that the island seen by the master of the schooner (see entry May 11th, 1843), and given by him as being in $18^{\circ} 46'$ S. latitude, and longitude $141^{\circ} 48'$, is one and the same with Lostanges;

particularly as the latitude agrees with that on the chart, and the error in longitude would be relatively with that of other islands placed too far to the westward: and it would not surprise me if it was hereafter ascertained that the island seen by him in $19^{\circ} 34' S.$, and longitude $140^{\circ} 30' W.$, is none other than the "Litho Island" of the chart.

June 29th.—Went ashore at the weather-end of Chain Island, and was kindly greeted by many of my old divers; but Tiemu my interpreter at Angatan was no more: he had been ailing nearly ever since I had parted from him, and his dying instructions to his wife were, that if ever I came again to the island she was to make me a present of certain pigs, which the poor woman did. Tiemu had only been dead about three weeks; and his widow spoke of his kindness and affection to her, and of his good qualities as a friend, in such subdued and melancholy tones, as greatly to excite my sympathy. The natives generally wore a distrustful and mysterious air; they expressed great admiration at the articles I produced to purchase pigs, &c., but no pigs were forthcoming. After awhile the secret leaked out—they had heard of hostilities having commenced between the Tahitians and French (report goes that numbers have been killed on both sides), and they were hoarding all their resources for the purpose of buying muskets, ball, and powder. Not a pig could I obtain in barter, as I had no munitions of war to dispose of.

June 30th.—Visited the Lee settlement, but the same excitement prevailed; and from some English

residents I gathered more details. That collision has actually taken place between the French and natives there can be little doubt; but the statements are so conflicting, that my arrival in Tahiti will alone elucidate the truth.

July 1st. — Off Tahiti, but it is too late to attempt getting in to night.

July 2nd. — Dawn saw us nearly abreast of Point Venus, becalmed. We noticed the French steamer lying at anchor, and shortly after observed her get her steam up, and a great deal of smoke ashore. Block houses are scattered over the heights in various directions, and the occasional booming of a gun intimates any thing but quietude and security. To ascertain how matters were, the calm continuing, I lowered a boat and pulled for the Taonoa passage. On the way we fell in with—bad omen—a whale-boat bottom up. Whilst examining it, we fancied the steamer was making towards us, and pulled into the passage without further delay. Two or three small vessels were lying at anchor, and from one of them an acquaintance hailed me, advising me not to land or to approach too near any of the vessels: and I then learnt that most of the foreign residents had removed their valuables and taken refuge afloat; that the natives had collected in force, and that an attack was hourly expected to be made upon Tahiti. A skirmish had taken place the day previously, several killed on both sides, and one of the missionaries had been shot dead. No vessel, on coming into the harbour, was allowed to land any of her people or passengers without first reporting to

the Uranie frigate, under risk of being placed in quarantine for an indefinite period, and the chances of exposure to other pains and penalties. Returned to the schooner, picking up the capsized boat on the way; and as the calm continued, I accompanied the captain to the Uranie, where, having reported ourselves, we were allowed to go ashore. The place was in the highest state of excitement, almost every foreigner who had any thing to lose had deposited his valuables, for security, on board the shipping in the harbour; and at sun-down they used to abandon their dwellings and resort to the same refuge. The little ketch Basilisk was still protecting the queen, and affording what assistance she could to British subjects. But I shall now narrate the proceedings, as I gathered them from the missionaries and others, eye-witnesses of the various transactions during my absence.

After the seizure and confinement on board the French frigate of three chiefs, who were supposed from their attachment to the queen, to be prejudicial to the interests of the French, attempts were made to capture four other leading Tahitians, by name Fariahu, Taviri, Fanauve, Horoi, and a female of some influence. Horoi was staying at Taravau (the isthmus is so called), and a message was dispatched to him requiring him to come and acknowledge allegiance to the French governor. The old chief refused to comply with the mandate: he said, "that those who had sent to him were foreigners, and he knew them not; it was well for them to remain in peace where

they were, and not to trouble him, he was living upon the land of his fathers, which had descended to them from generation to generation, and he wished to reside in peace; he would not go to the French, and if the French came to disturb him, as he could not resist them, he would fly." Upon this a small vessel, with some soldiers, was sent to apprehend him: they did not succeed of course; but the natives began to murmur, and to whisper at this intrusion of armed men, on all parts of the island, — men armed for the avowed purpose of seizing their chiefs; and one evening a party of them observing some soldiers who were ashore on leave, taking *wanton liberties* with their women, one of the natives, who, it was stated, was excited with liquor at the time, snatched up a musket and fired upon them. This was like applying a match to the train: all the natives within hearing rushed at the sound to support each other; and in the impetuosity of the onslaught some of the soldiers were killed, and the rest were driven from the shore. This was the first commencement of actual hostilities on the part of the natives. They had borne with much in patience, and had suffered in silence at command of their chiefs, still hoping for the interference of Britain, or that the magnanimity and sense of justice in Louis Philippe would point out the wrong they were sustaining, and cause him to send them relief; but now, in an unguarded moment, they had turned upon their oppressors. They felt they had compromised themselves, and throughout the island at once prepared to act upon the offensive and defensive. Nor were the French back-

ward with their measures. The governor ordered the steamer to make a cruise round the island, and to fire indiscriminately upon the land. The casualties resulting from this measure was the death of an old woman and two children, and the maiming of two or three others. On the governor's being remonstrated with at the useless cruelty of such a course, his reply was, "that it was merely done for the purpose of intimidating the natives, for they were like dogs — give them a beating, and they will lie down at your feet." The sagacity of this remark was shown to be as profound as that made by Monsieur D'Aubigny, when he asserted that "Mr. Pritchard was the only daily mover and instigator of the disturbances of the natives."

A party of the French, protected by the guns of the steamer, then marched along the shore, setting fire to all the houses in the vicinity; and the missionaries at the various stations, taking alarm, abandoned them to their fate, leaving their own dwellings and effects exposed to plunder and destruction. The natives at Hidia, seeing that their teacher had fled from them, observed, "that it was better for them to take his property than leave it to be burnt or plundered by the French;" and accordingly they stripped his house of every thing, carrying the goods to the mountains. But, subsequently, when they discovered that the troops had passed on without committing the missionary residence to the flames, such of the property as had not been consumed or destroyed was brought back again. These and similar proceedings had by this time induced most of the natives to join the encamp-

ment in the mountains, but a party assembled near the isthmus had resolved to encamp themselves at a place called Mahina, and give the Frenchmen battle. Mahina lies to the eastward of Point Venus, which may be looked upon as the north point of Tahiti, and is a small plain facing the sea, walled in by mountains in the rear, open to the line of coast trending easterly, but protected on the Point Venus side by conically shaped hills. The poor fellows dug trenches, and threw up sand-banks to protect them from the shot and shell of their powerful adversary; but they overlooked the possibility of the hills to their west being escaladed with field-pieces, which would entirely command their position, and neglected providing against surprise from this quarter. The French landed under the guns of the frigate, which continued to pour grape-shot and shell amongst the natives, who, nothing daunted by these terrific engines of destruction, assailed their foes with great bravery; and it is asserted that some without arms rushed madly on the attacking force, and succeeded in wresting the bayonets from their muskets, and with their own weapons causing several to bite the dust. If the natives, instead of hastening to meet the French, had waited to receive them on the plain, a different termination would have perhaps been given to the day; for as the French retreated from the impetuosity of their assault, the shot and shell from the frigate came to their aid, causing the natives in their turn to retreat; but when they sought the shelter of their trenches, they found the hills to their left in possession of the enemy, who commenced

playing upon them with field-pieces. Under these circumstances they abandoned their defences and took to the bush, calling upon the French to follow; but they, with true appreciation of the politeness, declined the invitation. Nothing was gained by this victory, but a useless waste of blood on both sides, as the French could not follow it up, and no single good was achieved unless they had in view the extermination of the natives; but even with this end in contemplation they paid dear for its attainment, as they lost in the engagement many more lives than they contrived to destroy. The native loss ascertained from themselves was sixty-nine killed on the field (including the wounded that were mercilessly bayoneted in the trenches from their inability to fly), and one who subsequently died from his wounds. The French they assert lost more than double this number, but they only confess to twenty-five killed and fifty-four wounded: be that as it may, a large launch load of the dead, to save burial, was carried out to sea and sunk; but after a day or two the bodies escaped from their confinement, and the shore became strewed with putrescent corpses. Finding it idle to think of exchanging musket balls for grape, and canister shot, and shells, the natives withdrew to the mountains. But I must not omit to notice the feats of daring to which their exigency drove them. Being badly off for powder, and discovering the secret of the shells' explosion, they used to watch for their alighting, when they fearlessly seized them and cut off the fusees; and they assert they are better off for ammunition now than they were before the fight. The

shells themselves, directed against them with a far less hospitable intent, they have converted into drinking-cups. Their intrepidity and daring must have mightily undeceived the French, as, previous to this encounter, an official was heard to declare, "give him fifty men and he'd march through Tahiti." Penetrating observer! — the forbearance and long-suffering of the simple and kind-hearted natives were looked upon as currish fear; but the delusion is for ever dissipated, as the timid Tahitians have shown, that as to mere manhood, they are more than a match for the best and bravest of the French.

The French, after this engagement, were kept in continual excitement, and their steamer constantly on the move; and the day preceding that of my arrival, a party of soldiers, under command of the governor himself, were marched to Point Venus, intelligence having been given by a renegade native that his countrymen were assembling in that quarter. The governor proceeded to the house of the Rev. Mr. M'Kean, the missionary station beyond Point Venus, and remained some time conversing with him and another of the missionaries who happened to be present, endeavouring to persuade them to take charge of a drunken French soldier, who could neither walk nor keep seat on horseback. A boat was in readiness to convey the reverend gentlemen to Papeeti, and the governor urged them to take his man with them, saying, "he knew that the natives would kill him if he was left behind, and he would be no trouble to them, as he was so drunk he would lie in the bottom of the boat like a log." Induced by

these representations, the missionaries gave their consent, and the drunken man was brought and laid down inside the fence of their premises. The noise of firing being heard, the governor mounted his horse to join his party; but ere doing so, he rode to the fence and again called out to Mr. M'Kean, repeating his injunctions respecting the care of his man. With eager politeness Mr. M'Kean hastened to the end of his verandah, and raised his hat in complying acknowledgment; and as the governor rode off, and Mr. M'Kean was in the act of re-entering his house, a musket ball struck him at the back of his head, behind the ear, and the unfortunate gentleman fell, never to rise again. He breathed heavily for six or seven minutes and expired without uttering a syllable: the ball did not pass through the head, but lodged below the socket of the eye. This lamentable event was supposed to have been occasioned through the apprehensive policy of the French, for the commanding officers, meeting no opposition, yet fearing an ambuscade, ordered their men, as they advanced, to fire right and left into the guava bushes. The noise being heard by two old men, who were prevented by their infirmities from joining the encampment, but who conceived that their countrymen were suddenly attacked, they speedily collected between eighty and ninety boys and young men, not of age to be termed warriors, and with twenty-one muskets and rude weapons hastily assumed for the moment, they attacked and routed the governor's party of 120 men, well equipped and appointed, leaving several of them dead on the ground. It is not known from which party the shot came that slew Mr. M'Kean, but as he was

in a line with the advancing troops, it is conjectured that it was fired by a native, although no one grieves more for the unhappy occurrence than the natives. That night the house of the slain gentleman was converted into an hospital and barracks for the French soldiery; and, the usual consequences attendant on military occupation followed, in the destruction of the live stock on the premises, and the appropriation of any convenient articles of property.

It was the morning after this sad event that I entered the harbour; and I found that my partner, with several of the missionary residents and others, had gone in the boat of the ketch Basilisk to pay the last tribute of respect in their power to offer to the deceased. Shrouded in its bloody vestments, the body was committed to the dust; and as the party returned from their melancholy task, I had the unspeakable mortification and surprise at beholding them; on their reaching the Basilisk, put into quarantine, and the yellow flag, by a mandate from the officer commanding the French frigate Uranie, run up to mast-head of the ketch. My amazement was only exceeded by my indignation. What indignity will be offered next? thought I; and as I had already undergone a decent spell on board ship, I did not wish to repeat the dose by venturing to the ketch; but I could not be restrained from jumping into a canoe, and pulling to within speaking distance, to learn the cause of this most extraordinary proceeding. I could obtain no information at the time, the singular position all on board were placed in having created a complete revulsion of feeling; and the prisoners

crowding the decks of the little vessel amidst convulsions of laughter did nothing but banter me, daring me to come on board, and shouting at the tops of their lungs, "Rule Britannia," giving particular emphasis to—

"For Britons, never, never, never, shall be slaves!"

The scene was ludicrous enough, though mortifying; and I was constrained to join both in the song and the laughter. This disgraceful state of things did not long continue, as, on the return of the governor in the steamer, he immediately, and without communication from the frigate, despatched the commander of the steamer to remove the quarantine, and to say, "that those ladies and gentlemen who had been confined to the vessel were at liberty to go ashore;" plainly showing, that he, at all events, did not approve of this attempt to cast contempt upon the British flag when that flag was left defenceless. On the prisoners being liberated, I was informed that an Englishman who had been present at the funeral entered a boat with the intention of returning to Moorea, and was about leaving by the Taonoa passage; but seeing a boat approaching with Belgian colours flying, which he mistook for French, and per consequence becoming jealous of her intentions, he altered his course and shaped it for Papeeti. In passing the Basilisk her commander hailed him, and learning his purpose, he recommended him to avoid getting into trouble by first reporting himself to the Uranie; and for thus endeavouring to preserve peace and good will, he had the humiliation

of submitting to orders on board his own ship from a commander under the French flag—an event not of common occurrence to our navy I believe.

From this date to the 12th the French were kept in constant excitement and alarm: the drum was continually beating to arms, and the musket was the companion of all engaged in the French interests; the soldiers were harassed off their legs, and it was apparent that, notwithstanding their frigates and their steamer, the natives had it in their power so to fatigue and wear them out, that with any one to guide or direct them, they could render French possession so ticklish and unprofitable, that evacuation would not only be a preferable alternative, but a step to be rejoiced at. Rumours of an attack would be brought from Port Venus, and scarcely had the troops marched half way, when they would be countermanded, and ordered to repel an irruption of the natives from Puanania, a place miles in an opposite direction. Night and day there was no peace for them; and from their jaded and exhausted condition, a few well organised and resolute men could easily have cut them to pieces. On one occasion, when the governor had been with the steamer to fire on the insurgents, as he calls them, at Papenoo (an encampment of natives nine or ten miles to the eastward of Port Venus), and the troops that had gone by land were marched back again, they had the satisfaction of seeing the houses and chapel of the Romish priests on fire, and, instead of taking the rest they so much needed, of being ordered to a fresh scene of attack. They were directed to “fall in”

rank and file in front of our house, and many of them were so completely exhausted that they rapped their own heads with their muskets in going through the evolution of shouldering them.

One cannot but sympathise and feel for the poor fellows, who do but obey their superiors' orders. Pomare entreats her people to remain tranquil: this damps their energies in a measure; otherwise, were they to persist in the game of finding the troops incessant occupation, there is little doubt it would incite them to mutiny, as they are worn out with fatigue and bad living, and it is not a war from which they can hope to derive much honour or promotion. A few days after the burning of the priests' houses, a party of natives came over the hills from Puanania; and under the guns of the frigate and the battery ashore, one of them came down to the beach with the Tahitian standard, and waved defiance. A gun was discharged at him from the frigate, and two or three were discharged at him from the battery; still he continued to wave the flag, and point with his hand in the direction of the hills. Subsequently he planted the flag upon the beach, and deliberately rejoined his companions. It is by no means a pleasant subject of reflection, that this gallant and confiding people are abandoned to the chances of annihilation by superior force and strategy.

July 12th.— This has been a day of qualified rejoicing for Queen Pomare. H.M.S. Carysfort arrived off the harbour, and her captain, Lord George Paulet, entered in his boat: he brought the news

that Louis Philippe did not recognise the seizure of Tahiti, and wished merely to preserve the protectorate. No official intelligence to this effect had reached the governor; and after several interviews with Lord Paulet, it was agreed that Pomare should be allowed to go to one of the Leeward Islands, there to remain unmolested until definite instructions arrived from Europe. Letters were dismissed by Pomare to her various chiefs, apprising them of these particulars, and beseeching them to remain in peace till affairs were determined on, for good or evil. The French looked rather astounded at this unexpected *dénouement*; and the governor, with a shrug and a smile, remarked, that he was only placed in a similar position to that formerly occupied by Lord Paulet with relation to the Sandwich Islands: but his lordship observed, and with justice, that their situations would not bear comparison, as the cession of the Sandwich Islands to his lordship, was the voluntary act of the king, and made with the full understanding that the act was a conditional one, subject to the approval or disapproval of his own sovereign; whereas Governor Bruat, on his own authority, had proceeded ruthlessly to take violent possession, not only of the island, but of the queen's houses and private property, ejecting her therefrom, and enforcing his authority by bloodshed and slaughter. Commander Hunt, of the Basilisk, was ordered to get his vessel ready to bear Pomare and her suite on board the Carysfort, it not being Lord Paulet's intention to let the Carysfort enter the harbour, although determined that she should

have the gratification of carrying Pomare once more to some spot where she could remain without being exposed to dread or insult.

July 14th. — The gallant little Basilisk put to sea, to deliver up the royal freight of which she had had custody for nearly six months. Pomare was considerably affected at parting with her protectors, but much of her feeling must naturally have been absorbed in the delightful idea of being again free to walk the earth. Pomare's fortunes are another instance of the justness of the observation. "When things are at the worst, they sometimes mend." She had resisted all the entreaties and specious offers of the French to induce her to trust herself to their honour, determining to be *aut Cæsar aut nullus*; but she began to get ill and to despair at her long confinement, and the want of diet prepared in native style; yet, withal, she never for a moment contemplated compromising her independent rights by yielding to the wishes of her invaders. The cruel treatment she had suffered made her wary of putting faith even in their most solemnly plighted word. Only a day or two previous to the arrival of Lord Paulet she had been soliciting me to take her in the schooner to one of the neighbouring islands. She mentioned Maitea or Toobuai; but on telling her she was interdicted from setting foot on any of her own islands, or on the islands of the Society group, she proposed Rapa. But when I described its insignificant size and rugged nature, the coldness and humidity of its climate, and mentioned its products—that it was without cocoa-nuts, bananas,

&c. — she at once deprecated the idea of going to any country that was without cocoa-nuts. I mentioned her request to Commander Hunt, and his opinion coincided with mine—that as the poor persecuted queen had suffered thus far, she should struggle on a little longer, and bide the result in her own dominions, whilst receiving the protection of that flag she had placed herself under.

July 16th. — A passport having been obtained from the governor, to-day I sailed in a small schooner to collect the effects from the houses abandoned by the missionaries. It was dark when we beat our way into the Tautira passage at the east end of the island, and the vessel glided gently on to the soft sand and anchored herself. I hailed a canoe to set me ashore — one came off; but on landing, I found a native with a musket, and fully accoutred, ready to receive me. He challenged me as to whether I was French or English; I laughed and gave my name. Not recognising it, he shook his head, and seemed doubtful as to the propriety of allowing me to pass. Many other armed natives now came crowding down, with some of whom I was familiar; they immediately shouted who I was, and greeted me with much energy. The missionaries' property at this station remained undisturbed, and the natives expressed their regret that I was going to remove it; they looked upon my so doing as a fatal omen of their prospects. "Why," they ask, "will the missionaries leave us, if there is any hope of the French going away." I did my best to cheer them, but could not say much to the purpose,

appearances being so opposed to the chance of any alteration favouring their wishes.

Having sent all the goods on board, we made sail for Hidia, to collect such of the property as had been returned to the missionary's house, who, as before mentioned, had fled affrighted at the approach of the French, whose advent was announced by the crashing of shot, and the burning of houses. It was early in the afternoon on our reaching the anchorage at Hidia, consequently there was no mistaking us for French; yet the natives were in readiness, prepared for opposition or flight: their bundles were all made up and slung over their loaded muskets, which were stuck in the thatch of their houses. They told me, if an overpowering force made its appearance, their intention was to burn down their houses, take a farewell shot at the invaders, and retreat to the mountains. I passed a night with them; and it was amusing, but at the same time piteous, to listen to their simple relations of the various engagements they had been in with the French. Several of them showed me their wounds, some not yet cicatrised. They had quitted their domestic and field labours to join in opposing the French; but when the latter had retreated, or passed on, they again resumed the employments which their coming had interrupted. Nothing that can be stated would offer a more glaring proof of the unprovoked nature of these hostilities.

July 27th. — Between forty and fifty natives were waiting at Papeeti for me—some of Pomare's adherents, whom she had requested me to carry to Borabora when I sailed for the Leeward Islands.

A good deal of trouble and annoyance was given us before they were allowed to take their departure, as they had to pass the inspection of the Belgian incendiary, the prime mover and instigator of all the wrongs inflicted upon the natives, and who, from being Consul de France, and Commissioner Royal, is now elevated to the high and honourable office of "*Director of Native Police.*" At length, all scruples being satisfied, we took our departure, and arrived, *July 28th*, at Borabora. Pomare was not there. In Tahiti it was generally believed that Borabora was to be her destination; but the queen having learnt that Tapoa was at Raiatea, she induced Lord Paulet to land her there. The desolating effects of the gale were as much apparent as when I last parted from Borabora; the natives have no heart for anything, the rumours of French proceedings destroying every other desire but that of securing powder, shot, and munitions of war; and there was a recklessness in their manner, as they told me that the true reason why Pomare did not come to Borabora was, because there was no part of that island she could fly to that the French could not reach with shot and shell fired from the guns of the frigate, and that the mountains and valleys of Raiatea afforded much better shelter and protection. I staid a day at Borabora, to allow the women and children to recover from their sea-sickness, and then we beat our way into Huaru, the western passage of Raiatea.

August 1st. — The queen being at Uturoa, the settlement on the opposite side of the island, I took

a boat and paid her a visit. She appeared more cheerful and contented, and spoke in warm terms of the kindness and sympathy of Lord Paulet. We were unfortunate in missing the Carysfort, as she sailed for the Sandwich Islands the day we entered Raiatea; we saw her in the distance standing with all sail set to the northward. Tapoa and his wife were hearty as ever, and gave me the same cordial welcome, preparing a native banquet, and inviting me to meet Pomare and her husband. Much kindness was exhibited to Pomare; but she being a refugee, the prestige of her presence is somewhat diminished; and the close proximity of the dreaded French, exciting apprehensions shared in by all the natives, high and low, has destroyed in a great measure the forms and observances used in former and happier times. The common danger in which they are all involved may have drawn them closer together in the bonds of affection, but it has rendered them less deferential in manner, and more careless with regard to ceremony in their intercourse with their chiefs. I slept at Pomare's house, and the following morning the queen invited herself to pass the day on board the schooner with me. Her mind was any thing but at ease respecting the security of her person; she still dreaded seizure by the French, and begged from me every thing I possessed in the shape of weapons of defence. She does not appear too sanguine in her hope of being restored to her own islands.

CHAP. III.

Pass the Rubicon.—Dissuade the Natives from building useless Forts.—Go to Huaheine.—A Chant of the Huaheine Girls.—News from Tahiti.—Account of the French Steamer's Movements, and the Risk she ran of being captured.—Attempt of the French to obtain an Interview with Pomare.—Effects of the Steamer's Mission to Borabora.—A Visit from Tapoa.—Return to Tahiti.—Accounts from Sydney and New Zealand.—Letters from Queen Pomare.—Arrival of the French Admiral.—Another Comet.—Reflections:—The French Steamer goes on a last Mission to the Queen.—The Queen deposed for ever.—A Regent appointed, but no Alteration in the Posture of Affairs.—Trade with the Leeward Islands restricted to Vessels wearing the Flag of France.—Rumours.—D'Aubigny sails for France.—The United States Brig Perry salutes the Protectorate Flag, &c.—Intercourse with Raiatea prohibited.—Sir Thomas Thomson arrives in the Talbot, and is frivolously exposed to much Indignity.—The Treatment of the English under French Domination compared with the Treatment of the French under Tahitian Rule.—A Letter from Queen Pomare, and the Motive for introducing it.

“She was a thing of life and light,
That seen, became a part of sight;
And rose where'er I turn'd mine eye,
The morning star of memory.”

“My dark-hair'd girl, thou hast promis'd me,
And I my faith have pledg'd to thee;
And I would not give for the crown of an earl,
The pride of being lov'd by my dark-hair'd girl.”

August 7th.—AN eventful epoch for me. Passed the Rubicon, and entered this day into married life

with Mary, the third daughter of Captain Hunter. The young lady was born in Tahiti, and is the adopted daughter of one of its highest chiefs; thus I have another inducement to attach me to its soil.

The Raiatearians, in their desire to prevent the possibility of their island being taken from them, commenced building a fort on a flat near the entrance to the harbour at Uturoa. Any frigate, in the course of an hour, could shell out its occupants, and blow it to atoms. Not liking to see the poor fellows make such a bootless waste of time and means, we pointed out to them the folly of such a work, and showed them how incapable they were, with their ineffectual means, to defend themselves against the entrance of any ships of war to their harbours: our arguments were so convincing, that they abandoned their operations. But a few days after my marriage, a fleet of canoes and boats came to us, and the leaders requested Captain Hunter and myself to accompany them in search of a place of security, where they might seek refuge in case of an invasion, observing, "that as by our representations we had prevented their going on with the works at Uturoa, the least we could do would be to aid them in selecting a spot to which they might resort, and be capable of defending." We did not exactly see the force of this reasoning, but there being no objections to our rendering them the benefit of any knowledge we might possess; we consented to go with them. After an examination of various bights and inlets, we fixed upon a place called Vaiaao, in the

south-west part of the island, as being, in every respect, the best adapted for their wants. It is shut in by inaccessible mountains on every side but that facing the sea, can only be approached by boats through a long, shallow, and tortuous passage, and is beyond the reach of any destructive fire from shipping. The mountains enclose vales of considerable extent, abundantly supplied with those spontaneous productions which form the staple diet of the natives; so that if they could successfully maintain the *pass*, which with some labour can be rendered impregnable, they would run no risk of being reduced by starvation. Having made them sensible of these advantages, we returned to Huaru.

August 19th.—Left Raiatea for Huaheine, where, after I had negotiated the business that led me there, I was kept wind-bound for several days. I believe I have noticed the sweet inflection of the natives' voices, and the passion they have for melodious combinations. It is a great treat on moonlight nights to listen to them chanting beneath the umbrageous grove; the women taking the first part, the men the second. I was so much struck with the sweetness of one of their chants the other evening, that in order to retain it in my memory I composed the following

SONG.

Tune—A Chant of the Huaheine Girls.

One summer's night the moon shone bright,
 As forth I wander'd to the grove,
 To plight my troth, my gage, and oath,
 To the girl I love.

The skies were clear, no clouds were near
 To overcast the scene ; and when,
 With warmth, I press'd her to my breast,
 I vow'd to love as then.

As roses blush, as starts the thrush
 When footsteps rude disturb its song,
 So blush'd the maid, who, trembling, said,
 " She hop'd no wrong."

I vow'd by this — then snatch'd a kiss,
 And once more folded to my breast,"
 The maid whose truth enthral'd my youth ;
 Loveliest, and best.

One holy vow has bound us now,
 And thou art mine, for ever mine ;
 The dear lov'd wife, to hold for life,
 And scarce with life resign.*

Not satisfied with the above words, I was desirous of procuring the original, and took a person well skilled in the language to write them down for me ; when, to my great surprise, I discovered that both the words and the air were a beautiful modulation of our sailors' capstan song of " Round the corner, Sally ! "

The same jealous distrust of the French prevails here, although the natives pertinently inquire, " Why,

* See the " Bride of Abydos." In my admiration of that beautiful poem, I have, unconsciously, paraphrased four lines of Selim's address to Zuleika :

" Now thou art mine, for ever mine,
 With life to keep, and scarce with life resign ;
 Now thou art mine, that sacred oath,
 Though sworn by one, hath bound us both."

if Pomare has offended the French, should they trouble us? Our islands are independent of Pomare's rule, and as we are innocent of any offence, why should we be made partakers in her punishment?" Their excitement was increased to a feverish pitch on the French steamer being recognised standing over to Raiatea. Various conjectures are afloat as to what her object can be. The natives have but one idea — they firmly believe she has gone to seize Queen Pomare. The consternation had not ceased when the brig taken up to convey the missionaries (who are leaving for England) to Valparaiso entered the harbour. She confirmed a report that the consul general for the islands in the Pacific had arrived at Tahiti in the frigate *Thalia*, but the governor would not recognise him as consul for Tahiti; and we also learnt that the French had broken their treaty of amnesty with the natives, by the seizure of a boat, and the detention of her people as prisoners: and it is reported that their feelings were so outraged by this breach of faith, that 500 resolute fellows, well armed, had resolved, at all hazards, on making a descent upon the settlement; but owing to the representations of the captain of the *Thalia*, in an interview he held with the governor, the natives, with their boat, were enfranchised; and for this time the threatened attack is averted. The brig, having taken her last departure for Moorea, knew nothing of the movements of the steamer.

August 31st. — A small schooner arrived from Tahiti, strengthening what had been already confirmed, and bringing me a letter, wherein I was ap-

prised that Governor Bruat intended making an example of me. Now, as the authorities had shown that they were not scrupulous in exercising the power they possessed, and fearing lest I might be dealt with after the fashion of Mr. Pritchard, before I had the opportunity of introducing my wife to her home, I placed the poor girl under the protection of the worthy old missionary of Huaheine and his wife, who were going to Raiatea in the brig, and, without loss of time, got the vessel under weigh to beat to Tahiti, and meet the charges that might be exhibited against me. The wind, however, proved more powerful than my will, and after beating twenty-four hours, and losing ground, we were reduced to close-reefed topsails. This being worse than useless, I directed them to run to Raiatea again, before we were too far to leeward. We reached it

September 2nd. — It was too true, the steamer had been after Pomare; but with what object is not known, as Pomare, immediately upon its appearance, fled to Vaiaao. A boat from the steamer went in pursuit of her, and had it continued its pursuit, must have come up with her, as her boat was so laden, the men had not room to use their oars, and the wind was so light that the sails scarcely served to propel it through the water. The natives, as if from curiosity, flocked off to see the steamer, until such numbers were assembled on board, that by a sudden impulse they conceived the idea of taking her, and sent a messenger to Tamatoa their king to know if they should do so. Tamatoa, with sagacity I did not give him credit for, as he is an indo-

lent sensual fellow, despatched the messenger back with orders for them to remain quiet, "as he did not wish to be the first to commence aggressions, and thus furnish the French with a pretext for assailing them." There is little doubt, from the unguarded nature of the vessel, that the attempt would have succeeded: the natives had planned to place, in a careless way, two stout fellows to every man on board, whom they were to engage in friendly conversation; and at the signal from Tamatoa they were to seize and bind them, and after plundering the vessel, they were to burn and scuttle her. The Raiatearians have been noted for capturing well manned vessels in this bloodless way, and it was fortunate for them that Tamatoa resisted the temptation.

The French have not hoisted their flag on any of the Society Isles, nor did they venture on this occasion to display the tricolor as token of possession; nevertheless, a party had the hardihood or effrontery to land and commence a survey, at the missionary settlement (Uturoa), as if for the purpose of planning a fortification: probably it is as well that the idle gasconading took place under the eyes of the missionaries, or they might have been roughly handled. Shortly after, when a boat with some officers was sent to seek an interview with Pomare, it was stopped, and forbidden to proceed further. On the approach of the boat, a single man in a canoe was directed to put off to them and desire them "to return from whence they came, as they were not wanted there." Disregarding what he said, the party in the boat

pulled for the shore. Tamatoa then stepped forward and hailed them.

“Don’t come ashore,” said he, “or you’ll cut your feet with the oyster-shells” (a figurative way of telling them they would come to harm, as no oysters were ever seen there).

In defiance of this warning, they grounded the boat, which was instantly surrounded and seized. “Search the boat,” said Tamatoa, “and see if it contains muskets or powder or any arms; if it does, we will take care of them for you, and return them when peace is certified between us.”

Search was made, but no arms were detected. The purport of their visit was next inquired into. They came to bring a letter to Queen Pomare. “Pomare is not here; who told you she was?”

“The missionaries at Uturoa.”

“Well, we tell you she is not; she may be at Tahaa, at Borabora, any where; we don’t know where she is.”

“Will you receive the letter for her?”

“What’s the use? Pomare is not here, and there is no use in your leaving the letter:” and, foiled in accomplishing their mission, the party had to return to the steamer again. Subsequently, a native was bribed to convey some letters to Pomare from the French, for which he narrowly escaped having his head cut off. I don’t know what reception the letters met with, but I question much if Pomare will acknowledge them. From Raiatea the steamer went to Borabora, after vain endeavours to procure an interview with Tapoa.

September 6th.—Received a visit from Tapoa, who told us that on the appearance of the steamer at Borabora, Omai, the former king, and most of the inhabitants, took to the mountains. The French caused it to be made known that they had not arrived with any hostile purpose; and at a small gathering on the beach, the natives were desired “not to be alarmed, but to continue their planting and their building, for the French did not come there to do them any injury, but to *protect* them from being injured by others.” At this monstrous assertion, the natives turned upon their heel; nor did they deign to notice the evolutions of the steamer, which sought to make an impressive display by steaming several times in and out the various bights in the harbour. Subsequently she bore for Huaheine.

The appearance of the steamer and the pursuit of Pomare had evidently induced the necessity of action in the minds of the natives; and a message was again brought us from Pomare, Tapoa, and Tamatoa, urging us to go once more to Vaiaao and aid them in selecting the most judicious spot for the erection of defences. We complied with their wishes, and gave them instructions to the best of our abilities; and if they carry out the work, the pass will be impregnable, even should ammunition fail them; but I incline to the opinion that the work will be too much for the constancy and persevering industry of the natives. They will work with great energy on the immediate pressure of danger, but let it pass, and the cause of apprehension be removed to a more distant or indefinite period, they become careless, their eye

is averted from the future, and they let sufficient for the day serve. At this moment no one is troubling them, no hostile force is in sight, and the thunder of big guns is not booming in their ears; and without some such exciting causes actually goading them to the task, I question if they will display the assiduity necessary for the accomplishment of their designs. The chiefs have not *now* the commanding influence over the people possessed by the chiefs of the heathen times. Pomare was looking pallid with anxiety; she had received letters from Consul-General Miller, and from Captain Hope, of the *Thalia*. "They were very good," she said; but they had failed to re-assure her, and her mind was evidently but ill at ease. We left the camp as night was approaching, having a long intricate pull through the reefs before us. The encampment is romantically situated in a mountain gorge, surrounded by tall forest trees and sweet-scented flowering shrubs; a stream ripples its murmuring course through it, winding in convolutions like a snake, sometimes hidden from the eye by overhanging shrubs, at others glancing in the sunlight like gushing silver: this secluded and beautiful spot being shut in by mountains rising in majestic grandeur close around it. The extensive valleys in the bosom of these mountains are only accessible from the encampment. The natives have already erected a considerable number of temporary houses, and thrown rustic bridges across the stream; but their zeal, no danger at hand, is of so evanescent a nature, I doubt if they will carry out the fortifications. Tapoa accompanied us to Huaru: he is the

most sensible of the chiefs, and any thing uttered by him is received with marked attention by the natives at all the Society Isles. He abstains from returning to Borabora at present, as he does not wish to have speech with the French; for he wisely says, "if he neither speaks nor writes, he cannot commit himself."

September 7th. — The wind favouring us a point or two, this afternoon I made a fresh start for Tahiti; taking my wife with me, and her mother, as the best consoling guardian if any thing is to happen to me.

September 10th. — Dropped anchor at Papeeti, and thinking it best to "beard my fate," I accompanied the captain on board the *Uranie*. Whilst the captain was engaged making his official report, I continued pacing the quarterdeck, unnoticed, and we came away without a word having passed of any charge against me. I thought this strange; but as certainty is at all times better than doubt, I made my way to Monsieur D'Aubigny, the governor-particular, to have this doubt resolved. My unexpected presence took him by surprise, which was not lessened when I announced the motive that led to the intrusion.

"Sir," said he, "it is a great pity that people pay any attention to tales that are going about; sir, I would advise you to listen to nothing but what you have from me; sir, you will receive a letter." Monsieur D'Aubigny does not speak English with facility; and not being desirous of prolonging the interview, I tendered my salutations, satisfied in this respect, *that the rumour was not groundless*; but in what I have committed myself, I have yet to learn.

The second day after the above entry, I was cited to appear before the judge of peace. On attending at the hour notified in the summons, I was apprised that I had been sent for agreeably to the instructions of the governor, to be censured and admonished; and the judge, turning to a paper he held in his hand, commenced translating it for my benefit. Opposition and dislike to the government on my part were more than hinted at, and I was accused of having sold powder to the natives at Tautira when I was there on business for the missionaries. The judge was directed to inform me, which he did in a voice of conscious dignity and power, that a "procès verbal" had been issued against me, but that the governor, in his great clemency, had ordered it to be quashed; believing at the same time in my guilt, but in the hope that his mercy would have a good effect, and deter me and others from committing similar acts. The proceedings were stayed, and I was now advised of this clemency, and admonished against future misconduct, as in case of renewed offence, my punishment would be summary. I was told that I had subjected myself to trial by a court-martial, composed of military and naval officers, who were relieved from all responsibility from the consequence of their verdict; and if in their opinion I was considered guilty, I might be conducted from the court to military execution. So soon as the indignation which choked me, allowed me to find breath and utterance, I denied having sold or been privy to the sale of powder at Tautira; I laughed at the governor's clemency,

requested that I might be put upon my trial, and expressed my readiness to abide the consequences, *even if they led to the death I was threatened with*; assuring the judge, I was well convinced, that my country would never suffer its children to be causelessly murdered in cold blood, without exacting a rigorous account for the same. The judge was perfectly astounded, and declined conveying any answer to the governor, as he said "*that* was no part of his instructions;" and he commenced, in a paternal way, to give me hints for my future guidance. This exceeded the bounds of my endurance, and I wished him good morning.

September 14th.—My partner sailed for Valparaiso, leaving me to enjoy a spell ashore with my wife.

September 17th.—The brig Diana arrived from Sydney, and reports the colony in a state of bankruptcy, failures of the largest houses being of daily occurrence. "It is not for me to reveal the secrets of the banking house," as Hamlet's father's ghost would have said, had he been confined in one; but any one versed in the affairs of the colony must have foreseen years ago, that sooner or later this result must ensue. The mutual-accommodation system of "Three months after date, I promise to pay," with the facilities offered for the discounting of these "promises," having induced over-trading and speculations, no matter how vague or wild, or how inexperienced the parties entering into them, or how blind to the day of reckoning that must come. It is true the colony has advanced to a wonderful extent,

surpassing any thing probably in the annals of time; but the colony's gain has been the British merchant's loss. Oh, John Bull! John Bull! thou hast ever betrayed sturdy limbs, and a strong back to support the wild vagaries of thine infant offspring, and how hast thou been treated, John? Thy children even now deny the benefits of thy fostering care, although they are existing upon thy vitals. Sometimes I fear me, John, thy numerous family would be glad to see thee expire in neglected old age.

The brig touched at New Zealand on her way here; the accounts from that country are not of a more cheering character. The New Zealanders are losing their awe of the whites, and giving the settlers no little trouble.

“Encampment on Raiatea, October 12th, 1844.

“To Commodore Bruat, &c.

“I have been informed that the king of the French and his wise counsellors have disapproved of the proceeding of Du Petit Thouars in seizing my government, my houses, and my land, because my personal flag did not please him.

“The great king of the French and his wise counsellors have also said, that Du Petit Thouars acted without being commanded, and with injustice and without wisdom, and they have commanded you to restore my government to me.

“I thought, and wise men also thought, that you would regard the commands of your master, and restore quickly to me my flag, my houses, and my land.

“But you have not done so; you still persist in building barraeks and erecting forts upon my land, and my people’s land; and you interfere with my people in appointing judges and other officers, which you have no right to do.

“I write this to you, that you may know I throw all the evil of these things upon you, and to make known to you that, until you restore to me my flag, my land, and my property, and rehoist the proper flag, agreeably to the command of your king, I can place no confidence in what you say, or even listen to you.

“And now may you be kept and saved by the true God.

(Signed) “POMARE.”

The above letter *may have had* an influential effect; the works at some of the fortifications having been suspended, and others not having been proceeded with so briskly of late; but the tricolor still usurps possession, and has now assumed intention of shortly spreading its folds over a more extended range. We had conditionally agreed to purchase the Diana brig in conjunction with Captain Hunter of Raiatea; but when the owner went to clear out for that port, he was told *he would not be permitted to go to Raiatea*. To save vain talk and useless correspondence, he cleared out for New Zealand; and in a few days I received a letter from him, dated in Raiatea, acquainting me that he had closed the contract of sale, Captain Hunter having fallen in with our views. I hastened to the governor, telling

him we had purchased the vessel, and as she was of sufficient burthen to carry timber, we were ready to sign a contract containing certain provisions to supply the government with that article. The contract was drawn out, signed, and no questions asked.

December 22nd. — Admiral Hamelin, of the French frigate *Virginie*, arrived, and it is said, with orders to restore the protectorate.

December 26th. — What does this portend? — to-night another comet was visible in the south point of the heavens. It is not so large nor so bright, neither has it such a blazing tail, as the one first noticed by me on the 5th March, 1843; it is more nebulous in its character, but nucleus and tail are distinctly recognisable. Do these wandering orbs affect the atmosphere of our globe, rendering us bipeds more hostile and rabid? In “olden times” they were supposed to be the precursors of “bloody wars.” The Tahitians view these appearances with superstitious dread.

January 3rd, 1845. — The French steamer has been despatched to Raiatea on a last mission (so goes report) to induce the queen to return to Tahiti; and to-day the *Diana* brig came in without occasioning any observation from the authorities.

January 8th. — The steamer returned from Raiatea. She reports the queen’s flight to the mountain encampment, on the vessel being noticed in the offing, and her absolute refusal to be seen by any of the French officers, or to hold any correspondence with them. She will listen to no treaty, and accept nothing but an unconditional surrender of her rights; which, she is firmly persuaded, it is the true intention

of Louis Philippe to restore to her. Be that as it may, her firmness, or her obstinacy, call it by what term you will, has brought about a singularly anomalous measure: the protectorate flag was this day restored, and the first act of the protectorate was to announce the formal deposition of Pomare for ever, and the appointment of a regent in her place. A fat-bellied fellow, named Praitā, whose interests were secured by the Belgian for the French before they came to the island, was nominated regent. He is a jolly old gourmand of a native—one of the sort that Cæsar wished Cassio to be when he uttered the exclamation “Would that he were fat!” Bulk in this instance, however, has not prevented the party turning traitor. After the investiture of the renegade, the governor gave an entertainment to such of the natives as chose to be present. I was confined to my bed, and did not witness any portion of the ceremonies; but it was described to me as a miserable affair: only 200 or 300 natives attended, and they were the riff-raff of the island, who assembled to dance lewd dances, and procure all they could get in the way of eating and drinking.

The change of flag and nomination of regent do not alter the position of affairs one jot—the siege is not raised, and martial law is still proclaimed to exist.

There was talk of the Diana's not being allowed to return to the Leeward Islands. To carry out our operations, it was absolutely necessary that she should: and I waited upon the governor to let him know, that in order to complete our contract for the sup-

plying of timber, we needed men from Raiatea accustomed to the work, and who were capable of diving through surf, and bearing much exposure in the water. The governor replied, "That if it was not the intention for the *Diana* to trade at the Leeward Islands, she was at liberty to go; the privilege of trading being reserved for vessels wearing the flag of France, just as in England the coasting trade is confined to vessels strictly English." My object, for the time, being attained, and as no good could result from my questioning by what authority he sought to monopolise this privilege for the flag of France, I offered no remark, but ere long I shall have to argue the point with him. Captain Hunter has been residing there for the last twenty years, and many of his children were born there; and why we are to have our communication interrupted, I cannot see. Raiatea is a kingdom independent of Tahiti, and was never in any way subject to it.

January 11th.—The *Diana* sailed for Raiatea and the Hervey group, and the French steamer weighed anchor yesterday, bound for the isthmus, and then, it is asserted, to make the tour for the Leeward Islands, for the purpose of hoisting the protectorate flag. I sincerely trust, if this prove the case, that the natives will show them no violence, or they will assuredly provoke a bloody retaliation, and have good grounds for hereafter preserving their belief, "that the appearance of a comet is the sign of coming evil."

January 21st is memorable for the departure from Tahiti of Monsieur D'Aubigny, the commandant-

particular, the man who, because "a French sentinel was attacked in the night of the 2nd to the 3rd of March, in reprisal caused to be seized *one Pritchard*," and who, under this dignified appellation, subjected the British consul to the rigorous treatment of the worst of felons. Monsieur D'Aubigny may consider himself a zealous servant of France, but to allow his feelings of prejudice to master all other considerations, and induce him to commit acts liable to involve his country in a war with England, is not the way to betray his zeal, or obtain the thanks of his country, one would think. It is frightful to consider what might have been the effects of his conduct. We hear that the threatening storm has passed away; but I regret that Monsieur D'Aubigny had not been *forced* by his government to atone upon the island in public for his outrageous excess. Who instigates the natives now?

January 29th.—The United States brig Perry arrived from the Sandwich Islands, and on going to anchor, saluted the protectorate flag with twenty-one guns, and the French flag afterwards with the same number, the salutes being returned from the shore. The commander of the Perry was perfectly indifferent as to the number of flags he saluted, and jocosely inquired if there were any more; but he was scrupulously observant that a like number of guns was returned. One of the return salutes fell short of a gun; he immediately dispatched an officer with a remonstrance, an apology was made, the officer committing the mistake censured, or put under arrest,

and a fresh salute was given true tally. What children we are!

February 2nd.—The *Diana* came in from the Hervey group; she had encountered tempestuous weather, and had been compelled to return with half a cargo. After discharging and getting ready for sea, she was peremptorily prohibited from returning to Raiatea if she thought of visiting Tahiti again. The captain of the port read his instructions from the chief of the staff, who writes, “that he had been directed by the governor to inform him, that any vessel under a foreign flag calling at Raiatea would not be allowed to re-enter the harbour of Tahiti; and all vessels wearing the flag of France were absolutely forbidden, under any circumstances, to visit Raiatea.” Here is a change, my masters! Remonstrance being useless, we waited upon Consul-General Miller: he was of undoubted opinion that France could not interfere with the trade of British ships to the Society Islands, which were independent sovereignties, and he protested against any such interference. Meanwhile, to save delay, we cleared the *Diana* for the Hervey group again, and on *February 8th* she cleared the passage.

February 11th.—H. M. S. *Talbot* entered the harbour; having no official instructions to that effect, she did not salute the protectorate flag. Now mark! the French admiral, with authority, seizes the island of Tahiti, and is the cause of much loss of life; his government, repudiating his conduct as unjustifiable, orders the island to be restored to its protectorate (?). With this strong precedent before their eyes, what

do the French authorities? This—and mark again! because Sir Thomas Thomson, the captain of the Talbot, has no authorisation from his government to recognise the protectorate flag, they send an armed boat from the Uranie frigate to keep guard upon the Talbot, to prevent communication between her people and the shore; in other words, they throw down the gauntlet of war to a corvette. But let me not mistake; H.M.S. Salamander is also lying in the harbour, but she has been at her anchors a quiet spectator of passing events for so many months, that I have omitted to record her presence. She arrived here during the exciting time, nine or ten months since, and her commander has acted so entirely upon the *non-committal* principle, that I have had nothing of interest to note respecting her. I believe her arrival took place during my last sojourn at Valparaiso, which will explain why I have no entry made of it. Under the circumstances in which he was placed, it would have been worse than madness for Sir Thomas Thomson to have used force. We saw a boat with an officer in dress leave his vessel for the Uranie; the guard-boat immediately gave chase, until they observed where she was going, when the pursuers rested on their oars till its return, and then resumed their guard. The Talbot remained in harbour five days, and during that time no one belonging to her put foot on shore, and native canoes and others that wanted to approach her were driven away, nor did the guard-boat for an instant relax in its watch upon her. On *February 16th* she took her departure, and Consul-General Miller departed

with her. An address was left for the British residents, to the effect that the public service required his presence in the Sandwich Islands; and that he had left his nephew, Mr. G. C. Miller, as provisional consul, to assist in matters not in collision with the local authorities, by whom Mr. Miller was not recognised. The consul-general is an observant man, of quiet and reserved habits, but kind and friendly: his presence amongst us was no doubt of service in checking the exercise of unbridled authority, but, as the French would not recognise him as consul for Tahiti, he could only, in his general official character, protest against unwarrantable proceedings. But it is a fact not to be disputed, that British subjects, since the French have usurped dominion in Tahiti, have been the objects of more ill-treatment and unjustifiable oppression, than ever were subjects of France under Tahitian rule: our trade has been interrupted, our vessels seized and detained, and our persons incarcerated, on the most frivolous pretences. I will not dwell upon particulars, and will only remark, that the charge of insult to the French nation which Du Petit Thouars brought against Queen Pomare, and upon which he based his violent proceedings, and eventually extorted the independence of her island from her, is as the shadowy complaint of some fantastical dreamer compared with the charges that might be preferred against the French for the solid indignities heaped by them upon the British nation. But Tahiti is a helpless little isle, and the policy adopted by our cabinet with her European relations appears to be conciliation and concession. It is doubtless better for the cause of

humanity that we should brook insults from a few hot-headed fire-eaters who act intemperately, than risk deluging the land with blood in a general war; but concessions ought not to come all from one side, methinks.

By the arrival of a small schooner, one of the island traders, we were put in possession of a letter, of which I here enter a translated copy.

“Uturoa, February 12th, 1845.

“To ——

“Peace be with you. I have received the box of cloth you sent down here; are these ten pieces in the box the cloth which you mention? I have taken five and returned five to ——.

“This is my request of you — do not press me at present for payment, you know I cannot obtain money whilst I am a wandering fugitive in this foreign land.

“I felt for you when you went away to that far country, but now I am much pleased that you have returned again to Tahiti.

“I have also received the cloth which —— sent to me here; I have taken four pieces and returned two. He subsequently sent me three other pieces, which I have kept, but I have not paid for them. Do not think ill of me, I will pay you exactly when I obtain money. Peace be with you. You know that during my present troubles I cannot obtain money.

(Signed)

“POMARE,
“Queen of Tahiti, &c.”

The poor queen was aware that my partner had been to Valparaiso, and it was the receipt of a box of prints he had brought her thence that produced this letter. I have introduced it for two reasons: the first, to show how badly off she is; and the second, to disprove the idea that Raiatea was in any way subject to her.

When Pomare was dethroned, and her houses and land taken from her, she sold by public auction all her household effects to assist in liquidating her debts. We have continued to supply her wants; and it is in vain to tell her not to distress herself as to payment, for with every fresh application for any little thing she invariably writes to assure us that she will pay us when she can.

CHAP. IV.

Wreck of the *Averick*, cast away at Raiatea, purchased. — Permission to go to Raiatea. — Report of the French Steamer's Proceedings. — Conduct of the Queen of Huaheine. — Anecdote of her Sister Maiera. — The Way in which the Protectorate Flag was conferred upon Raiatea, and its Reception. — The Nature of the Protection accorded to Raiatea exemplified. — Quit Raiatea, and return to it from Tahiti in the *Hamburgh Brig Ferdinand*. — Difficulties with the Natives. — Go in Search of the King. — *Faroa*. — Queen *Pomare*. — *Opoa*. — Relaxed Allegiance owing to the Excitement of the Times. — Crew desert. — An Official Notice, and its great Utility. — Anomalies. — Clear out for Raiatea, with an Admonition. — O, rare blockade! — War, and Rumour of War. — More difficulty. — Go to see *Tamatoa*, who now signs himself *Ariipeapea* (the troubled King). — Disaffection of the Chiefs at *Borabora*. — How *Tapoa* became King of *Borabora*. — Obstinate Conduct of the Chiefs at the Encampment. — Sail for the *Hervey Group*. — *Mitariu*. — *Atiu*. — *Mauke*. — *Nārurotu*. — Non-existence of certain Islands marked on the Chart. — Set of the Current off *Mauke*. — Come to an Anchor at Tahiti, and learn that the Siege is raised, but that all the old vexatious Regulations continue in force. — More Bother about returning to Raiatea. — Expensive Autographs. — Scenes in *Borabora*. — Alas! how changed the Place! — French Influence. — A pleasing Surprise. — Death of *Pomare's* Infant. — A Visit from the blockading Squadron. — Word from *Borabora*. — French Steamer called at *Huaru*. — The Courtesy of her Commander. — Sail for Tahiti. — Mr. Pritchard sent to the

Navigator Islands as Consul. — Report that the English Admiral is in sight.

“A wond’rous tale could the rare old whale
Of the mighty deep disclose,
Of the skeleton forms of by-gone storms,
And of treasure that no one knows.
He hath seen the crew, when the tempest blew,
Drop down from the slippery deck.”

February 22nd. — THE Union, a small schooner, arrived to day from Raiatea, with the officers and crew of the American whaler Averick, cast away during a heavy gale from the north-west, as she was lying at anchor in Huaru, “trying out.” By letters we learn that Captain H—— purchased the wreck at auction, with all her gear, stores, &c. on joint account, and has drawn on us for the amount.

February 23rd. — Paid the purchase money for the wreck, and learning the French schooner Sophia, had obtained special permission to go to Raiatea, I requested a passage in her; but received a letter from the chief of the governor’s staff, intimating, “that having always been a person openly opposed to the French government, permission to visit Raiatea would not be granted me.”

My partner then hastened to the chief of the staff to try his luck, and I posted to the commander of the Salamander to demand his advice and interference. He advised me to protest against the prohibition, and to demand an investigation of my conduct. This latter I was ready to submit to; but what on earth had my conduct to do with commercial

relations at Raiatea? the government might just as well pretend to refuse me permission to proceed to England or to Valparaiso. A joke's a joke — I didn't care to cavil and split straws about rights and dignities when my object could be obtained without further waste of breath, even if I apparently had to make concessions, or accede to conditions, as what was I, an unknown unit? but now the affair is getting serious. Whilst discussing the matter with Commander Hamond, my partner sent down a letter he had just received from the chief of the staff, "refusing him also permission to depart for Raiatea, upon the same grounds that it had been withheld from me. We were in a quandary, a "regular fix," as the Yankees would say, and I set me down to pen a protest, and adduce reasons why this despotic conduct should not be persisted in, and had just brought my appeal to a close, when an orderly made his appearance, and invited us to attend the chief of the staff at his office. We complied with the hasty summons, and on entering his presence, referring to the letters we had received, I challenged the minutest inquiry into my conduct, demanded what the accusations were against me, and who were my accusers, and requested to be confronted with them. The chief regretted that the letters had been written, and the governor wished to have no more troublesome correspondence with us; he was quite sick and tired of receiving reports and letters, and if we would only sign a document purporting that we would not talk of politics to the natives, nor suffer any one in our establishment to do so, we were at liberty to go

where we pleased. The conditions were not very hard as *neither of us could* discuss politics with the natives; so we laughed, and signed a document already prepared in French, and which the chief told us was to the above effect. No hindrance to our departure then existing, we were soon under weigh for the scene of the wreck.

February 25th.—The wreck proves to be a large and apparently a fine vessel, sunk with all her stores for a three years voyage on board, and about 200 barrels of right oil, with some bone. We entertain hopes of raising her, and of rescuing every thing not irretrievably damaged by the salt water. If we succeed, well; if not, the speculation will not prove advantageous.

From the English residents at Raiatea, we learned the following particulars relative to the French steamer's mission to the Society Isles, alluded to in my note of January 11th. On arriving at Huaheine, her commander, preserving the *suaviter in modo*, and deprecating any hostile movement on the part of the natives, threw himself upon their generosity. "He had been ordered to hoist the protectorate flag, and [like a boy at command of his master] he must obey his order; and he trusted, whatever they might do thereafter, they would throw no obstacles in the way of his performing his duty." Ariipae, the queen, and her principal chiefs were absent at Raiatea, but a chief stepped forward and formally protested against the raising of the flag; but neither he nor the people offered the slightest insult or injury to the commander, or to those that were with

him: and under these circumstances the flag was hoisted and suffered to remain unmolested, until the return of Ariipae, which was only postponed for the time necessary for the voyage, after she had been apprised of the event, when she immediately ordered the offensive flag to be torn down.

Ariipae, like her deceased sister Maiera, is a woman of great energy and fearless temperament. In former years, when conflicts were common between opposite parties of natives, Maiera turned the tide of battle, and saved the broken party, whose cause she espoused, from a shameful defeat. It had been routed and panic stricken; the natives, regardless of the cries of their leaders, were flying in wild confusion for their lives. Maiera, who was on board a vessel in the harbour, seeing how affairs went, sprang into the sea with a musket in her hand, and, swimming ashore, intercepted the retreating fugitives. She reproached them in the bitterest and most sarcastic terms, and called out that "the barren mountains should be the future portion of the land for those that fled, and their food should be grass and the roots of the feiis."* Stung by her reproaches, they rallied and turned upon their pursuers with such spirit and fury, that they speedily converted a disorderly retreat into a victorious pursuit. Only very recently, having learnt that some of her chiefs had been tampered with, and were betraying symptoms of favouring the French, Ariipae immediately quitted Raiatea in a boat, seized

* Feii is a mountain plantain.

them, and carried them back with her as prisoners: had Pomare acted as promptly towards her rebel chiefs, probably many of her difficulties would have been spared her.

The protectorate flag was hoisted at Raiatea in a singularly covert manner: — One morning, so early that no one was stirring, a boat from the steamer then lying at anchor at Uturoa quietly landed a party on a little mole or jetty opposite the missionary's residence; and this party, happily for them, raised the flag without notice or observation, and effected their retreat to the vessel in the same unostentatious way. The natives became first aware of the flying of this symbol of protection, thus *royally* and *graciously* vouchsafed to them, by hearing it saluted from the guns of the steamer. They rushed out of their houses at the noise of the firing, and saw with rage and indignation the cause of it, so treacherously introduced. Without a moment's hesitation, they tore it down and rent it into shreds; and one native, wrapping parts round his head and body, ran frantically about the beach, yelling shouts of scorn and defiance. Warned by this, I suppose, they refrained from attempting to land the flag at Borabora; but it was formally hoisted and saluted on board the steamer as she lay in the harbour.

If these proceedings are advised, do they not evince exceeding folly? Here is a nation, unsolicited, *forcing protection* (?) upon a people who dread nothing so much as intercourse with France; they go through all the idle ceremony of hoisting and saluting flags, and then what do they? Listen! *They leave the islands without a Frenchman upon them, or a single*

representative to watch the interests of the people they insist upon protecting; and what follows? Why, the United States brig Perry, which sailed from Tahiti on the 8th of February, reported bound for the Sandwich Islands, touched at Huaheine; and upon the complaint of a citizen of the United States, for many years resident in Huaheine, and married to a native woman, the commander of this ship went over to Raiatea and bullied Tamatoa out of seventy or seventy-five dollars. The amount is not large, but dollars are not coined in Raiatea, neither are they picked up from the beach; and small as the sum was, the state of the king's treasury did not admit of his paying the whole down, and he was suffered to pay one half at the time, on his promising to pay the other half at a future period. I learnt the cause of this imposition from an English resident of many years' standing in Raiatea, and who was intimately acquainted with the particulars. It appears that some years since, an American whaler was lying in Huaheine; and seven of her crew, dissatisfied with the overbearing conduct of the mate, determined on leaving her; and not wishing to distress the vessel more than was necessary, they took the worst of the boats in the night, and made their escape to Raiatea. On landing, the natives, suspecting they were runaways, made them prisoners, and the boat was taken to the king; who, on learning the name of the captain of the vessel, and from whence it came, recognised in him an old acquaintance; and as he expected him again at his island, resolved on preserving the boat for him. After a time, the American living in Huaheine, discovering

where the boat was, presented himself before Tamatoa with a receipt, which purported that he had purchased the boat. Tamatoa demanded the captain's letter authorising him to deliver it up, and as the man could not produce it, he declined doing so. It was kept under a shed, and occasionally Tamatoa made use of it; but years rolled on without the captain appearing to claim it, and it ultimately fell to pieces. And so, for doing no more than his duty, the American commander *does* the king out of seventy or seventy-five dollars. He must certainly have had the might of his nation more than the justice of the case in view when he did it, — *and such is the PROTECTION extended to Raiatea.*

March 19th.—By the indomitable energy and perseverance of Captain Hunter, we succeeded in turning the Averick keel up, with all her cargo in her; a most arduous task, as all her dead weight was in her bottom, and empty casks and shooks in the 'tween decks; and, be it remembered, the vessel was not in a dock or near a yard, where every mechanical means could have been resorted to, but in a place where he had to trust alone to his own invention for forming and contriving purchases, and where he was left with the scantiest and poorest means for accomplishing such a purpose. None but a man possessed of his iron will and constitution could have succeeded. He has temporarily repaired the damage, and raised her; and it does not require much attention to keep her free with the pumps. To-morrow he will commence discharging her; and seeing the speculation in this favourable train to-day,

we took passage again for Tahiti, in the same schooner, *Union*, that conveyed the wrecked people thither. The master of the *Union* tells us, that the French authorities detained his vessel for having gone to Raiatea; and she was under *duresse* a week, and liberated only upon the interference of Captain Hamond, of H. M. S. *Salamander*, and then had permission to go any where. We have fallen on queer times!

April 1st.—Started again for Raiatea, having chartered the Hamburg brig *Ferdinand* to convey what cargo might have been procured from the *Averick* to Valparaiso. Found the natives in great excitement at the proceedings of the French, and could not depend upon any of them for labour; emissaries from the chiefs having been down to summon all to the encampments, under pain of having the land taken from them, and fire put to the houses of all who kept away. Despatched the *Ferdinand*; and after many ineffectual attempts to heave the *Averick* out, to submit her to thorough repair, we came to the resolution of taking the brig *Diana* to the Hervey group for the remainder of the timber destined for Tahiti, and on her arrival at Tahiti, to provide new falls and gear, copper, &c., to replace the worn out material which could no longer be trusted to. But now came the difficulty. In consequence of the interdiction of the chiefs, we could not engage hands to man the brig; and being utterly at a loss, a son of Captain H——'s and myself took a canoe, and made for the encampment on the north side of the island, where we heard the king

was staying, to see if *he* would grant us men. After a pull of about seventeen miles, we reached Faraa, a horse-shoe bight, running from a mile to a mile and a half inland. It is a pretty spot; but owing to the abrupt hilly and mountainous character of the surrounding country, which attracts the clouds, it is subject to much wet weather. Tamatoa was absent; but we saw Queen Pomare, who complains bitterly of the persecuted life she leads, and of the inconvenience she is exposed to; she yearns for her own beautiful island, like a mother longing for her child. We took breakfast and dinner with her; and learning that Tamatoa was at a settlement called Opoa, about five miles higher up, at the conclusion of the repast we renewed our journey. It was late when we arrived at Opoa. The king received us with great friendliness, and not only gave his sanction for our engaging as many men as we required, but volunteered to supply us gratuitously with men from those who had been sentenced to labour for their offences, if we would engage to bring from the island we were bound for two large canoes that had been manufactured for him long ago, but which the natives had no means of conveying to him.

Opoa is the most beautiful valley in Raiatea; it extends, a fine level, covered with the richest verdure, three or four miles from the sea to the base of the mountains; and a streamlet, in its own joyous translucency, wantons through it, smiling and dimpling in the glowing favour of the sun, silent and stealthy beneath the overhanging banks and cool shadow of its sombre foliage, like another co-

quette escaped from the parent eye. The mother of this streamlet was at home, high up in the bosom of the mountains, feeding other children. We passed the night at Opoa, and at dawn again started for Faroa. The present excited times have so far disturbed the submissive allegiance of the people, that when a certain number of those under sentence were told to accompany us, they flatly refused, and the chief who bore the orders had not the power to compel them. The barriers of rank and distinction are wofully invaded; nor is it much to be wondered at, from the unsettled way in which they are thrown together by continued alarms. The only point on which all seem agreed blindly to yield devotion and obedience to their chiefs is, in the hearty determination to repel the French. They swear they will live under their chiefs alone, or share with them one common grave. Finding we could do nothing with them, we returned to Huaru. On the way, we called at Uturoa and engaged three white men for the voyage, with whom, and with those on board, we hoped to manage. But now our old hands turned round, and refused to leave the harbour unless we raised their wages to an exorbitant extent. We told them if they would not leave the harbour, we would very soon make them leave the ship; which we did instanter, by ordering them to the office to get the balance of any wages due. The three men we had just engaged met them as they were going to the house, and their representations induced them also to declare off. Abandoned on all sides, we bent the sails of Captain H——'s little schooner Rambler, and manned

her among ourselves. Captain H—— is a capital cook, an excellent hand at frying rashers of salt pork in the ashes, wood ashes being *clean dirt*; and as for his son, commend me to Jack for turning out a pancake. Modesty forbids me speaking of my own merits, but I must confess I am a *capital hand* for “*turning in.*” On *April 18th* we availed ourselves of a favourable breeze, and gallantly shaped our course for Tahiti, bearing with us a letter which Captain H—— had received from the commander of the French steamer, and which no one on the island could comprehend, as it was in the French language. On our laying it before the commander of the Salamander, he apprised us that it was an official communication from the commander of the Phaeton, advising Captain Hunter “that he had the orders of the governor for informing him, that the island of Raiatea was in a state of blockade, and if after eight days from the receipt of this notice any of his vessels were found leaving the island of Raiatea, they would be confiscated.” This letter or notice concluded with “assurances of the utmost consideration,” and was dated *March 25th*. We sailed, in our blissful ignorance, on the 18th of April, and on arriving in Tahiti learnt that the blockade had only been publicly announced there on the 15th,—more anomalies! There is an old saying, that “proffered service stinks;” happy would it have been if the French had thought of this before they tendered their services of “protection” to the Society Isles; but it is outrageous, because these proffers are rejected, that they should seek to blockade their ports. It is like a strong man approaching a weak one, and

offering him the hand of friendship or a blow on the cheek. How long is this game to be played?

By the assistance of Captain Hamond, who supplied us with two of his men from the Salamander, we engaged sufficient hands for the Diana; and her master procuring a passport from the governor, on *April 27th*, all being ready, and the little Rambler tolerably well laden and crowded, we got under weigh; the captain of the port having admonished the master of the Diana that if he went into Raiatea without getting the passport furnished by the governor countersigned by the commander of the Phaeton, the Rambler would be seized.

April 29th. — Passed the island of Huaheine; saw no signs of the Phaeton. Continued our course for Raiatea, reaching it the same afternoon. The Young Hero, an American whaler, was there — O, rare blockade! — but no steamer; and at 6 P.M. we had the Rambler moored alongside the Diana at Huaru. On entering the passage at Uturoa, we were boarded by one of the missionary residents, who told us, with considerable agitation, that Tamatoa, Tapoa, Pomare, and her husband, with about thirty whale-boats, well manned, had left the preceding day for Tahaa, for the purpose of making a descent upon Borabora, three of the chiefs there having listened to the seducing offers made them by the French, and thrown off their rightful allegiance. As we wound our way through the reefs conducting to the anchorage at Huaru, we noticed a fleet of boats under sail; but they appeared approaching us from Tahaa, and our surmise proved correct. In a short

time one of the boats lowered its sail, and Pomare's husband pulled alongside, and not long after came Pomare herself. A messenger from Borabora had brought them intelligence that the French steamer was lying there, and in consequence, for the present they had abandoned their designs; but Tapoa intended going over, whilst Tamatoa remained at Tahaa. This created a still more feverish excitement, and runners were despatched to call every man, woman, and child to the encampment; not one was to be left; even our household servants, and the men engaged to pump the *Averick* and keep her from sinking, were ordered off. This was an extreme measure, and we strongly opposed our veto against the pumpers leaving; but we might as well have "whistled jigs to a milestone," go they must. The men were not desirous to leave, but were under the fear of having their lands taken from them. Bidding them continue their watch and work till our return, we engaged a boat's crew and pulled over to Tahaa to obtain Tamatoa's sign manual for the men to remain with us. He gave us, without scruple, written permission to retain as many men as we pleased, upon condition that we allowed them to leave if the French came to attack the island. He signed this document "*Ariipeapea*." I asked the meaning of this change of signature, and was told that it was a new name he had adopted on account of the difficulties that surrounded him, and it signified "the troubled king." It is a common practice with the kings and high chiefs to assume new names on any extraordinary occurrence of a personal nature; and

formerly, when a king adopted any word as his name, it became sacred, and was discontinued in common conversation; for which reason, the derivation of Tamatoa, Tapoa, and many of the ancient names of chiefs is now lost in oblivion. Raiatea was also formerly called Ulitea, and Moorea, Eimeo; but I never heard on what occasion, or for what reason, these names were transmuted: their proper names, generally, have very significant meanings attached to them.

Old Tamatoa, or Ariipeapea as he now writes himself, looked troubled enough; "I wonder," said he, "what the French mean, I suppose they will take all the islands in the sea." Tapoa had started for Borabora, and the natives of Raiatea were to hold themselves in readiness to follow him at any moment; and if, during the night, a beacon fire was lighted on the mountains at Borabora, they were at once to go over and aid in subduing the disaffected party. The night was spent in anxious watching, but passed over in quietude; and during the day ensuing a messenger from Tapoa arrived, requiring the people to remain in tranquillity. He had had an interview with the commander of the French steamer, in the presence of the English missionary resident; he demanded "What the steamer was doing there, exciting his people and troubling his land?" and he ordered her away.

The commander of the steamer replied, "that the government of the island had been given to Louis Philippe, his king, by Omai, and therefore he would not leave unless Omai desired him to do so."

Omai rejoined, "that he would as readily consent to their cutting off his head."

Omai, formerly the king of Borabora, is an aged man, and somewhat sunk into obliviousness. Many years since, by a stipulated treaty, he resigned his sovereignty to Tapoa, when the latter lost his own island of Tahaa in fighting for the Boraborans, in the endeavour to attain for them supreme authority over the island of Raiatea. As has been shown, Tapoa once achieved the victory; but the spirited conduct of Ariipae's sister changed the fortune of the day. When the Boraboran party fled, Tapoa was discovered behind the breastwork of his defences, shot through the wrist, and with a bullet in his knee (which remains there yet), unable to move, and supported in the arms of a solitary female attendant. The Raiateans were about to kill him, but their hearts relented, for they could not shed royal blood; and instead of doing so, they wept over his afflictions, embraced him, summoned their people from the conflict, and prepared a splendid banquet for him. In all amity, Tahaa was subsequently annexed to Raiatea, and Tapoa, by the unanimous voice of the people, and the free and unconstrained surrender of Omai, was called to rule over Borabora and its dependencies. He was solemnly invested, like the kings of ancient Israel, in the presence of the head chiefs of all the islands of the Society and Georgian group, who assembled to witness the ceremony, and was anointed with sacred oil by one of the missionaries to add to the solemnity of the compact, and to stay

all future feuds. From that time Tapoa has enjoyed quiet sway; and in proof of the excellency of his management, it may be mentioned, that since his rule more trade has been conducted in native produce from that little island, than from all the other islands of the two groups combined. Tapoa is a quiet, reflecting, and exceedingly well-behaved chief; and though it would be none the less absurd, yet it would be less pitiful and inglorious, if France were to lay claim to the throne of Great Britain because James the Second abdicated it and sought refuge in France, than seek to disturb the peaceful administration of these Lilliputian kingdoms, by practising on the imbecilities of old age, or tampering with the grosser passions of sensuality. Faaita and Tivaura, the other two chiefs in league with the French, are so completely animal, that either of the two would lend his wife or sister for a dollar: is anything more needed to explain the influence acquired over them?

We sent Ariipeapea's missive to the chiefs at the Vaiaao encampment; but one of the stern old fellows said, that Tamatoa had given him instructions to collect all the people, and if *he* (Tamatoa) did not know his own mind, he knew what his orders were, and he would not allow us to retain the people we required. The fear of being held responsible for the loss of the ship if she went down induced him to let four of the pumpers remain; but every other soul was summoned to the encampment. We addressed another letter to the chiefs, pointing out the probable consequence of the obstinacy if it was persisted in, and throwing all blame upon their shoulders. After

waiting a reasonable time for an answer, without getting one, on *May 6th* we set sail for the Hervey group, called also Cook's Archipelago, lying between four and five hundred miles, in a west-south-westerly direction, from Tahiti.

The first island we discovered was Mitiaru, on *May 10th*. It is small and low, differing little in elevation from the islands of the Paumatu group. We also sighted Atiu, an island of similar appearance; and in the course of a few hours made Mauke, the island we were bound for. It is in latitude $20^{\circ} 12' S.$, and longitude $157^{\circ} 20' W.$ It is not above six or seven miles in circumference, and is evidently of volcanic formation, being entirely covered with vitrified scoria; but there is rich black soil beneath it which yields prolificly, splendid groves of tamanu and aito trees appearing to shoot from the solid rock. The settlement is in a cleared patch, about the centre of the island, and is really a pretty spot: its population, including men, women, and children, does not exceed 200. A missionary teacher, native of Raiatea, is their instructor, and deals his cards with a knowing hand. The natives resemble more the Paumatu men than the Tahitians, having a rougher appearance and less refined habits. The fecundity of the cleared soil supplies them abundantly with vegetable productions, they have plenty of fowls, ducks, turkeys, pigs, &c., and consequently they are well fed and a strong-built race. Pathways are partly constructed, and partly worn by time, leading in various directions through the island; and off these it is scarcely possible to move, owing to the sharp

jagged points of the vitrified scoria, scattered and wedged in a way to defy walking.

Atiu used formerly to exact and receive tribute from Mitiaru and Mauke, not because it had ever rendered them any service, or was of present benefit to them, but on the principle which has always governed the world, and will ever do so, I suppose, "that might makes right." We see that with the birds of the air, the fish of the sea, and the brutes of the forest, the stronger prey upon the weak; and man differs only from the brute creation in that, by his superior cunning, he preys upon all. This tribute to Atiu was discontinued for a season, and the natives thereafter refused to renew it; upon which Atiu assembled its warriors and attacked Mitiaru, burnt down its villages, cut down its coconut trees, destroyed the plantations, and carried off all the young women and children. Having reposed themselves after the successful accomplishment of this notable exploit, the men of Atiu began to think of directing their civilities towards Mauke; but it so happened, that, just at the time Mauke received warning from a Mitiaru fugitive of the kind attentions that were preparing for them, Captain H — called at the island to barter for timber. In great consternation, the natives told him of their deadly apprehensions, and besought his advice and assistance. Now the men of Atiu possessed muskets and powder, obtained from whalers, which gave them an infinite superiority over their neighbours, and the Mauke people had good cause to tremble. But Captain H —, not liking to see his

old friends destroyed, supplied them also with muskets and powder; so that, when the Atiuans arrived, not a little to their disgust and surprise, they found as warm a reception in readiness for them as they were prepared to give, and, dissembling their designs, they returned home. They made two other attempts, hoping to catch Mauke napping; but as she was always on the alert, they ultimately abandoned their meditated purpose, and entered into a league of friendship with them.

Nearly south-east by east from Mauke there is an island, known to the natives as Nārurotu. Their ancestors used occasionally to resort thither to fish, as it possesses a lagoon in its centre, — the only crater island in the group. They have only traditionary accounts respecting it, as no native living on Mauke has ever seen it. Some charts have “island” laid down in the direction indicated; but I learnt from a person who had visited the island more than once, that its true position is $21^{\circ} 45' S.$, and longitude $155^{\circ} 10' W.$: it is not inhabited, although there are plenty of cocoa-nut trees upon it. The islands of this group are all laid down with much inaccuracy; and Armstrong Island, Roxburg Island, and Mahowara, have no existence. There are no harbours at any of them, being rock-bound and steep too; the landing places are on flats of crystallised coral, and you have to watch your opportunity of going over with the roll of the sea. The natives use, for visiting ships, two light canoes lashed together, which they pull with oars, as we do our boats. Atiu is the Tahitian name; in the vernacular the island is called

Katutia. We were engaged three or four days rafting off the timber prepared for us at Mauke, and we then entered into a fresh contract with the people. Whilst lying off and on, we noticed a strong current setting from the northward; and Captain H—— tells me he was present on one occasion when a schooner was nearly swept ashore by it, in consequence of the master of her persisting in keeping to the northward of the island, and the wind subsequently falling light.

May 26th.— Came to an anchor at Taonoa. The siege was declared raised on the 8th current; but the only difference it makes is, that the residents have had the liberty of staying out of their houses extended to 8 o'clock instead of sundown, all the other vexations, restrictions, and regulations, being in full force.

As usual, objections were again opposed to the Diana's return to Raiatea; but after some warm expostulations, the governor finally determined that our vessels might go to Raiatea, but on condition that they did not return to Tahiti. "But that will entirely prevent our carrying cattle from Raiatea." "He could not help that; he was determined to prevent direct communication *from* Raiatea, and, therefore, if we had permission to go there, we must visit some other port before returning to Tahiti." Having thus definitively declared himself, Monsieur Bruat rose abruptly and wished me "good morning." He has no more right to interfere with British commerce at Raiatea than he has with that to New South Wales; but query, if he violates international

law and seizes our vessels, having the force to do so, will our government see us indemnified? ay, there's the rub! The way in which Mr. Pritchard has been sacrificed does not offer much encouragement to the spirit of British enterprise. We shall see.

May 31st.—Lifted the “mud-hook;” the master of the brig receiving reiterated instructions from the captain of the port by no means to enter Raiatea until his passport was countersigned by the commander of the steamer; even if it was necessary for him to visit Borabora, or any other port, to obtain the authorising autograph—What the deuce do they take us for?—and on leaving Raiatea for any other port, he was to go through the same formality. I think, as a mercantile man, that it would be difficult to find a purchaser who would give a profit on the price they wish us to pay for these autographs. Bah!

June 1st.—Without having seen a French vessel, or experienced any hindrance, this afternoon we were again safely moored at Huaru; and in a day or two from this date I crossed over to Borabora in the Rambler, to wind up certain commercial operations which the natives now are prevented from attending to. The French steamer was lying at anchor, and I waited upon her commander, who received me with much politeness. But what a change has come over Borabora! formerly, it used to be the busiest and best ordered island of the group; now all order is subverted, industrious pursuits are absolutely at a stand-still, and vice has spread its disease amongst them. On landing, the first thing that greeted my ears were the shrieks of

a woman. I hastened to ascertain the cause, and beheld a native striking a woman, and forcing her to accompany him. It proved to be his wife: she had been on board the steamer with one of the officers, and had only just come ashore in a boat with some of them. The officers walked away without offering to interfere; and I think it was well they did, for there was that "quiet devil" in the man's eye which indicated that the measure of his forbearance was full, and I have not the slightest doubt that any personal collision would bring on a general affray. There is but one missionary resident on the island—a mild timorous man, not at all calculated for disturbed or unsettled times. Vice and sickness have been introduced amongst his pupils, his schools are broken up, and his labours rendered of no avail; and he is afraid to open his mouth to the distressed people, who have listened to his instructions for the last six years, lest he should give offence to France. Abandoned in their hour of need by the man to whom they have been accustomed to apply for advice in their difficulties, is it wonderful that they should fall?

Much has been talked of the influence acquired by the French over the natives from the intrigues of the renegades Mai, Tivaura, and Faaita; but with the exception of the immediate relatives of the apostates, they absolutely possess none. The women, from the softness of their character, and their fondness for finery, commit themselves; but there is not a *man* upon the island, allowing for the above exceptions, that does not hold the French in the heartiest

detestation, —and of a verity they have cause. The Ethnological Society of Paris has engaged itself to co-operate with the English Aborigines Protection Society in the effort to ameliorate the condition of the aborigines of those countries which may have been, or may hereafter be, conquered by any of the nations of Europe. “Prevention is better than cure;” no better opportunity can present itself for the exercise of philanthropic zeal; and timely interposition may yet avert the fate impending over this fine race, already considerably advanced in civilisation.

On returning to Raiatea, a pleasing surprise was awaiting me; five or six of the Raiateans, the times being auspicious, had allowed their cupidity so far to get the better of their judgment, that they had accused me to the king of having brought two Frenchmen from Tahiti in the schooner Rambler; and Captain H—— was accused of having concealed them in his house. The motives alleged for our conduct were based upon the most popular theme—nothing less than the seizure of Pomare. We were told that these rumours were first propagated whilst we were absent at Mauke; probably upon the supposition that our impeachers would be commissioned to institute a search, which would facilitate the opportunity of pilfering, particularly as none but females were left to protect the place. The king, however, would not listen to their idle talk, and pooh-pooh'd them from him; but some of the chiefs, not so incredulous as the king, absolutely went and examined the house and premises. And now the authors of the charge repeated their assertions, and attributed my visit to Borabora to no

other purpose than that of putting the Frenchmen on board the steamer, having through them been defeated in my intentions. The impudent pertinacity of these accusations calling for correction, I wrote to the king, demanding that my accusers might be allowed the opportunity of proving their charges, or, failing to do so, that they might be punished. In his answer, Ariipeapea begged me "not to be in a hurry; he was aware of the bad talk, and in a short time the judges would be down our way, when my request should be complied with."

June 21st.—News was brought that Pomare's last born child was dead, and that she was inconsolable for its loss; she neither ate nor drank for three days and nights, and "her grief is very sore," as the natives express it. She seems to have clung the more to this child from its having been the child of her afflictions: born, as it was, in the midst of her troubles, when she sought refuge in the mountains from the French. Poor woman! her trials and difficulties have usually come upon her when the delicacy of her condition required more than ordinary kindness and attention, and in this instance her offspring has proved the sacrifice. Another thing that adds to the bitterness of her grief is, that she had christened the babe after our gracious queen, and was in hopes that Victoria would reciprocate the compliment, by calling some future daughter Pomare. With the loss of this infant, she feels her inward faith of support from Britain dying from her.

June 24th.—Two vessels wearing the tricolor, one a barque, the other a schooner, have been ob-

served cruising off the island for the last three or four days; and to day a boat came in from the barque with an officer, who demanded a sight of the Diana's and Rambler's papers. I was not in the way at the moment to question his authority for taking such a liberty, and the Diana's papers had been exhibited before I could prevent it; but, to see to what it might lead, I excused producing the Rambler's papers. "Where are they?"—"They are not on board,"—which was true enough. I was then advised to have them in readiness by the next week, when the steamer would make her appearance, "Otherwise," said the officer, "the schooner will be seized."

"Very good," replied I; "I can't help it, they must seize her." With a true French shrug at my nonchalance, the officer stepped into his boat and rejoined his vessel. I presume that he conjectured he was safe from ill-treatment whilst in our hands, but I cannot imagine impertinence more thoughtless and uncalled for. Surely they might find better employment for their time than frittering it away in such childish frivolity. The entire proceedings of this blockade are nothing better than a farce, as, notwithstanding the two vessels in cruise, no interruption whatever is occasioned to the intercourse between the islands.

July 4th.—My accusers were tried to day, and for the wanton wickedness of the false assertions they made to cloak other evil designs, each has been sentenced to pay a penalty of six pigs; and the half of each fine is to come to us. "We wish we may get it."

July 7th.—Tapoa paid us a visit. He had received intelligence from Borabora by a native, who came over the reef in the night to avoid the vigilance of the steamer. A meeting of the people had been convened to listen to something the commander of the steamer had to propose to them; and on their assembling, he, through his interpreter, proposed that, as Tapoa had voluntarily left Borabora, Mai, Tivaura, and Faaita, should be nominated governors of the island, and Tapoa no longer be considered king. At this truly modest proposition, the natives instantly broke up the meeting, and turned severally each his way. The rebellious chiefs were in possession of an ounce a month, the price of their apostasy; but Tapoa observed, with chuckles exulting in every dimple of his broad face, “that it did them no good, as, to render themselves acceptable, whenever they went on board the steamer they took with them a present of pigs, bananas, and cocoa-nuts, which actually cost them more than their month’s base hire.” He told this anecdote with such humour, and his eyes twinkled with such racy enjoyment, that, although it had to be interpreted to make me fully comprehend it, I could not refrain, by a species of infection, from participating in his roguish mirth. No attempt had been made to hoist the protectorate flag, or any other flag, upon the land, and any such attempt was to be held the signal for a general attack; forbearance was then to cease, and it would be “war to the knife.” Tapoa was asked if he had not written to France, complaining to Louis Philippe of his treatment. “Yes I have written,

but I have had no opportunity of forwarding the letter; and what's the use of writing to that land of liars?" he emphatically ejaculated.

July 9th.—The French steamer made her appearance, and came to an anchor opposite Captain H——'s house. There was no assumption of the *great airs of littleness* with her commander. The object of his visit we could not divine, as he merely staid sufficiently long to send us some letters that had come from Tahiti, and to receive a visit that I made him to return thanks for his courtesy. Instructions had been forwarded to him with respect to our vessels, the *Diana* and the *Rambler*; he had mislaid those concerning the former vessel, but the latter, on leaving Raiatea, was not to visit Tahiti within a month, that any news conveyed might be stale. "How then am I to get to Tahiti?" inquired I; "our business will not admit of my making much longer delay here, far less will it afford my consuming a month in idleness elsewhere." He appeared puzzled for a moment; but after calling my attention to the fact, that he was only obeying orders, he undertook on his own authority to free me from any ill consequences of proceeding to Tahiti direct, if I would promise to allow no other person on board to hold communication with the shore until the pleasure of the governor was known. I gave the promise readily, as it in no way interfered with our operations, and I cared not if the vessel returned to Raiatea without coming to an anchor in Tahiti. On quitting the steamer, she "got up her steam," and sped her way between the reefs towards Tahaa.

July 23rd. — Ariipae called to-day. Pomare's lamentations for the loss of her child continue unabated; it is not yet buried; we asked when it would be. "When her grief is satisfied." Ariipae says that Pomare has received a letter from Mrs. Pritchard, wherein she tells her, that her husband and family are going out to the Navigators' Islands; but Pomare exclaims against this, saying, that Mr. Pritchard fell into trouble through her, and if her kingdom is to be restored, she would like to have him always near her.

July 24th. — Sailed for Tahiti in the Rambler.

July 26th. — Dropped anchor in Papeeti Harbour. Admiral Hamelin, in the Virginie, was there, and the English admiral was looked for daily. Strange events come to pass. H. M. S. Daphne had touched at Moorea, with Mr. Pritchard on board; and that ill-used man is now being conveyed to the Navigators' Islands, to figure as British consul amongst unreclaimed savages, where there is scarcely a British subject, and where his services can rarely be required. I suppose he is sent there to expiate, in his declining years, his first grand error in confiding too strongly in his own government.

August 10th. — Whilst partaking the hospitality of the officers of the Salamander, the admiral was reported to be in sight; preparations were instantly commenced to get her steam up, and in a short time the Salamander put to sea to place herself at the service of the admiral.

CHAP. V.

Disappointment. — The Protectorate Flag saluted by the British Admiral. — Frantic Behaviour of a Native. — Object of the Admiral's Arrival. — The Collingwood (eighty) enters the Harbour. — A Deputation to destroy Hope. — A Pic-nic in the Valley of Faatanua. — Departure of the Admiral. — A Trip to Moorea. — Proceedings of the Uranie. — Trust betrayed. — A Deputation to effect Cessation of Hostilities. — The Consequences of holding out false Assurances, &c. — Papeeti attacked by the Natives. — The Uranie recalled. — The Blockade of the Leeward Islands publicly announced to be removed. — Re-appearance of the French Admiral. — A Voyage to Sydney. — The Schooner calls at Raiatea, and is nearly lost. — A passing Interview with the Chiefs. — Under weigh for the Navigators' Islands. — Rose Island, &c. — The Island of Upolu; its Harbours. — The Natives; their Habits, &c.; their Houses. — Earthquakes occasionally felt. — Mischievous Work of the White Ant. — The Way in which Mr. Pritchard was installed British Consul. — Propagandists. — War at Savaii. — Timely Concessions avert War at Upolu. — Council Meeting, &c. — Apolima. — Walpole Island. — Isle of Pines. — Port Hunter, at New South Wales, made a Port of Entry for Merchandise. — Arrive in Sydney. — Observations.

“The rich man had exceeding many flocks and herds: but the poor woman had nothing, save one little ewe lamb.”

August 11. — To us of the commonalty who are incapable of fathoming the profound depths and wisdom of our legislators and political agents, not a slight

disappointment was in store when we saw the *Modeste* enter the harbour this morning, and learnt that the Admiral was on board, and that he had left his own ship, the *Collingwood*, outside, with injunctions for her not to appear within sight of the island.

Apparently much correspondence ensued between the admiral and the governor, and some difficulty seemed to exist; but if so, on *August 12th* it was removed, and the *Modeste*, wearing the admiral's broad pennant, saluted the protectorate flag. This consummation of unhoped for evil filled the natives with consternation; a regular rush was made to the mountains, and in a short time scarcely a native was to be seen. A messenger from the camp came to our store to see the British officers, and learn beyond doubt if their worst fears were realised; and after what he both saw and heard, his grief amounted to agony; he tore off his shirt, threw it on the ground, and stamped frantically upon it; and in his passion, the tears streaming down his face, he asked, "Why we had behaved to them thus? Under the strong hope that we would not abandon them, they had opposed unequal resistance, and had lost their friends and relatives; they had sacrificed their best and bravest; why did you let us hope, to treat us thus?" We could only answer him, "This is none of our doing; we feel for you, and participate in your sorrow; but we have no control over the great men who guide our nation, and you ought not to visit your displeasure on us. We have never deceived you, our sympathy is sincere as ever; but it is not

in *our* power to alter your condition : our nation is great, but we, as members of it, can be compared only with drops taken from the sea : we have hoped with you, and we feel for your disappointment, therefore do not think evil of us. We have no speech, and our voices are not heard in the great governments of Britain and France ; but you *must* know that our hearts incline towards you." When all this was explained to him, the old man shook me by the hand and withdrew, bitter tears still coursing each other down his cheeks.

A day or two from this date I accompanied some officers attached to the *Collingwood* in an excursion to the Valley of Faatanua : here similar questions were asked, and the same reproaches cast at us ; *but in defiance of what they see and hear, they persist in hoping against hope ; they will not believe that England has utterly abandoned them.* It is useless to argue with them ; they will remain quiet till they hear from Pomare, but they swear they will never submit to the French, and they are confident that the queen will not come up from Raiatea.

Admiral Sir George Seymour did all in his power to dispel their delusive expectations, and had ordered the *Collingwood* to remain out of sight of the island, lest he should create too much excitement, and raise hopes only to be dashed down again by disappointment. His object in visiting Tahiti was to adjust with the French admiral Mr. Pritchard's claims for indemnification on the French government. He pointed out to the natives the irretrievable nature of the act which had forfeited them their independ-

ence, and he advised them to submit quietly to the protectorate.

The two admirals appointed each an agent to investigate Mr. Pritchard's claims, and the agents called each two merchants to assist them with their experience. We watched the proceedings; and never was conduct upon the part of a government in fault more illiberal. The French would allow nothing but what could be judicially established, and at the conclusion of the investigation, they wished to award the magnificent sum of 450*l.* as the royal reparation for the losses Mr. Pritchard had sustained — a sum that would hardly defray the travelling expenses of the family of the man who had been expelled from his home of twenty years, whose household goods had been rudely exposed to the gaze of the stranger and sold at the fall of the hammer, whose business had been destroyed and merchandize sacrificed, and whose family by various conveyances, had been compelled to find their way to Europe. There is a paradoxical saying, "that he who injures another never forgives him," and in Mr. Pritchard's case it appears to hold good. He has received grievous wrong at the hands of the French, and they cannot pardon him for it. The intemperate heat they get into when they do but speak of him, is unaccountable; and when they pronounce his name *Prreet-chard*, a rolling burr on the *Prit*, they aspirate the *chård* with such ferocity, you almost wonder they don't spit their front teeth out. They have invented tales respecting him which they swear by, and which are as ridiculous as

they are unfounded: doubtless this has been done with the design of destroying all sympathy in the minds of the French public for him; and hence may arise the kingly proffer of 450*l.* for his damages. As his agents, we protested to Admiral Seymour against the proceeding; and for this I was summoned on board, and received a nice rap on the knuckles. Sir George doubted if I fully comprehended the purport of what I had written; he would answer the letter certainly, but he doubted if I had given its contents due reflection. What! he who had been sent by his sovereign to settle the question in dispute to have his proceedings protested against by a private individual! I saw the slip that had been made, apologised, and begged to withdraw the letter. Sir George courteously returned it, and without loss of time we framed another of the same argument, *praying* instead of *protesting* that any decision now come to by the commissioners might not be considered final, and asking for time to communicate with Mr. Pritchard, who might hold documents capable of materially strengthening his case. This application met a different reception, and our request was granted.

August 17th.—On this day it was our turn to play the “big ’un.” Somehow or other, rumours had got abroad amongst the natives that the admiral’s ship had been ordered to keep outside by the governor, and she did not dare make her appearance; and that the *Uranic*, though a much smaller vessel, was more than a match for the *Collingwood*. These insinuations might possibly

have had some effect had they been postponed till the Admiral's departure; but if they were put into circulation with this object, those who issued them were a thought too precipitate in their reckoning; it was out of the question to suppose that these bragging vaunts could be kept from the Admiral's ears. Whether he was influenced by them is another thing, but this *I know*, much to the chagrin of the governor, the Collingwood (eighty) line of battle-ship, the first that ever appeared amongst the islands of Polynesia, sailed close along the reef of Papeeti Bay, presenting to our admiring gaze her warlike broadside and triple battery; and with as much facility as a whale-boat, *no permission previously obtained*, nor intimation given, entered the harbour and dropped anchor nearly opposite the British consulate. The excitement amongst the natives was tremendous; and if the boast of keeping the Collingwood out had emanated from thoughtless idlers or boasting fools, they were regularly ensnared in their own speech. The beach was speedily swarming with natives from the encampments, and several came into our store and requested us to entreat the admiral to capture the French vessels of war, and they would quickly drive the men from the land. The admiral's prudential forethought in not suffering the Collingwood to appear in sight in the first instance was now clearly manifested; and he was certainly much affected at seeing the highly excited hopes which her presence created: for the natives actually believed that the taunt of defiance had brought her in; and they were all in nervous anxiety and

trembling eagerness to communicate the signal of preparation for attack. To annihilate all such ideas, and to destroy for ever the vain belief that Britain would yet send to their assistance, the admiral despatched a deputation to the camp, to remonstrate on the folly of their hopes, and the vanity of their resistance, and to advise them to submit to circumstances that were unavoidable, and to live quietly under the protectorate. The natives wept, and were bitter in their lamentations, but continued firm in the resolution never to submit to the French. The gentlemen forming the deputation assured me that it was the most painful and affecting interview they had ever witnessed, and it was a great relief to their feelings when they quitted the scene. I heard subsequently, that the intensity of grief at their disappointment was such, that the principal natives retired in solitude to the mountains, and remained three days in solemn fasting and prayer.

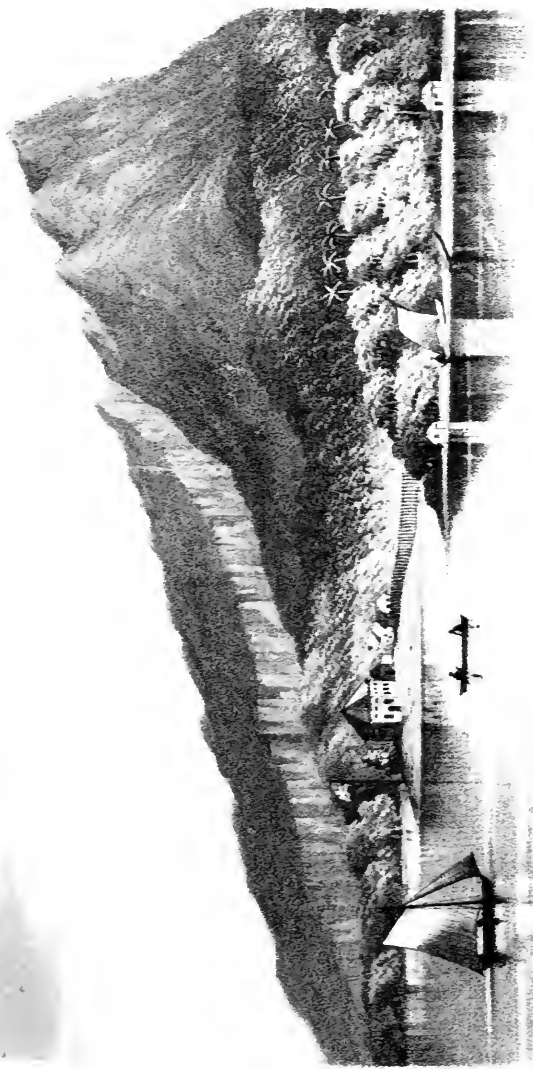
To give the officers of the *Collingwood* an opportunity of seeing something of native manners and habits, I induced a native to prepare a luhau, or native pic-nic, in a shaded glen in the valley of *Faatana*; whither thirty or forty of us proceeded, the chief of the district coming out to meet us. Many of the natives had gathered there, and they would not lose this opportunity of showing their regard for the British. The chief conducted us to his house, which was entirely lined with English ensigns, and on a flagstaff outside, the British ensign was flying above the flag bestowed upon them by Captain *Laws*, of the *Satellite*. In the firm persua-

sion that the Collingwood had come to restore the original order of things, the natives had prepared for themselves ponchos, which they exhibited before us, one half representing the English ensign, and the other the Tahitian. They were manufactured of appropriate coloured calicoes, and some of them had designs painted on them, executed in a manner reflecting no little credit on their skill as artists. All the devices bore testimony of their attachment towards us, the words "Victoria e Pomare" being conspicuous on most, in a sort of scroll, beneath an attempt at the British arms blended with designs typical of Tahiti; and these ponchos were to be the jubilee dresses on the restoration. To gratify the curiosity of the officers, the natives exhibited some of their dances, and the day passed off with much pleasantry; but on the following morning, to my surprise and vexation, I heard that political motives had been assigned to our party, and I had been accused of giving offensive toasts, such as, "Away with," or "Destruction to the French," &c., &c. Three or four Frenchmen were observed hovering about us, but we were far too pleasantly occupied to trouble ourselves with a thought concerning them; and these were the fellows who got up the report. As the governor thought proper to take notice of it to the admiral, I waited upon him to remonstrate against conduct so much calculated to keep alive ill-feeling between the French and English. The governor said it was true that such reports had been made to him, but he had not taken any notice of them; which means, I suppose, that he had not caused me to be arrested.

A long diplomatic correspondence took place between the admiral and the governor relative to the Society Islands, and I understood that the conclusion arrived at was, that they were to remain unmolested until the decision of the home governments was made known, as to whether they formed dependencies of Tahiti, and as such, were to be included in the protectorate; and the officers of either country were to be at liberty to collect all the evidence in their power to prove or disprove the question.

November 20th.—To-day the admiral, whose urbanity and affability will not soon be forgotten by us, and whose personal kindness to myself and family will ever be remembered with feelings of deep gratitude, took his departure in the *Collingwood* for the Leeward Islands. He had the *Salamander* with him, and the admiral went from island to island, assuring the natives that the governor had promised to leave them in peace until it had been decided by the home governments of France and Britain whether or not they formed dependencies of Tahiti; and if it was proved that they *did not*, then they were to remain independent, and free from French protection. I saw a copy of the admiral's public letter to them on this subject, which occasioned great rejoicing.

To distract my thoughts a little from the cares of the world, before the admiral had taken his valedictory leave of Tahiti, I made a pleasure excursion to Moorea. The scenery of this island is particularly romantic, more so probably than any other of the Georgian or Society groups. It is more broken into



DRAWN BY W. WILKS F.S.W.

THE ISLAND OF MOOREA

M. & W. DODD, LONDON



spurs and ridges of stupendous altitude, assuming the shape of pinnacles, broken turrets, sharp-pointed spires, crumbling walls, and falling arches. Without any great stretch of the imagination, you might fancy you were surveying the gigantic ruins of a castellated building where onced welt the ancient deities; and the illusion is aided by a bright green foliage, looking like ivy, clinging to the ruins, which has overrun the summits of the loftiest pinnacles, and adheres to the mural sides of the most precipitous ridges. But amid the grandeur of these ruins, Moorea possesses some beautiful little vales, which sleep in the light and shadow of their own loveliness, and which are rarely disturbed in their tranquillity. The house of the missionary resident reposes in one of these soft, secluded, peaceful spots. It is in a little valley called Papetoai, itself embosomed amid towering slopes richly clothed with verdure. His premises are enclosed by dry stone walls of great solidity, and the grounds have been carefully freed from scrub and weeds, and laid with verdant grass of almost emerald greenness. Beautiful trees are grouped at intervals, or stand singly in their perennial livery; and as you catch a glimpse of the lake-like bay through the vista of trees, and notice sleek cattle grazing, or quietly ruminating with their young, you are strongly reminded of some of Cumberland's lovely summer retreats. I remained a few days to enjoy excursions in various directions. Most of the natives had gone to Tahiti, and I was struck with the solitude that prevailed in my rambles. The few natives I met would eye me with a glance

of mistrust and suspicion. The laughing joyous expression of face, the jocund voice, and friendly greeting once so universal, seemed to have fled with their hopes; but when I spoke, and they detected in me a Piritani (Briton), their faces would light up for a moment, but were almost as instantaneously shaded again by a look of sadness. I avoided any attempts at conversation, as I had nothing cheering to impart on the only topic they would have thought it worth while listening to.

December 13th.—The Uranie French frigate, Captain Bonnard, got under weigh for the Society Islands; the reason wherefore subsequently came to light. It is reported that he sailed through the group till he made the little island of Maupiti, the one farthest to leeward, and having satisfied himself that the English admiral with his tenders were fairly departed from the scene, commenced a series of outrages, which, from their unprovoked nature, and in *defiance of good faith*, are probably without parallel. From the Maupiti natives he demanded 120 dollars for some alleged insult which he taxed them with having offered to France. The astonished natives, few in number, and without their leaders, submitted to the extortion, and scraped together the money. Borabora next received his attention; and as this island was considerably larger, so did he increase his demand, and 300 dollars was the sum now called for to appease the outraged majesty of France. The natives had no means of resisting the combined force of the Uranie and Phaëton, supported as it would be by the renegades. Their



M & R BARTON. 1850.

DRAWN BY E. L.

THE NATIVE CHURCH AT THE ISLAND OF MOOREA



king was away, they had no secure place of retreat, nor any defences, nor had they the means of complying with the infamous exaction. To avert the consequences of non-compliance, the missionary resident advanced them 100 dollars, and the other 200 dollars they managed to collect among themselves. On leaving Borabora, the valiant captain, passing by Tahaa and Raiatea, made a descent upon Huaheine; and still keeping in view the *scale of proportion*, demanded from Ariipae, the queen, 600 dollars, and the reinstatement of a chief whom she had banished for having endeavoured to subvert her authority, and for attempting to plant the French or protectorate flag on the island during her absence. Fatau, the chief in question, is a fat, drunken, sensually-happy rascal, passionately devoted to the bottle; and whilst under its influence, any promises to keep him well supplied with spirits would tempt him to do any thing — at those moments, a bottle of brandy would buy his whole family. He was one of the chiefs seized by Ariipae, formerly alluded to. Confiding in the assurances of the English admiral, Ariipae refused to hearken to any thing coming from Captain Bonnard, and she and her people retreated from the settlement and encamped at a place called Maeva, near the lake at the north part of the island. At this juncture, a lieutenant belonging to the Salamander found his way to Huaheine in a small sailing boat belonging to us, and seeing how affairs stood, rode down to the camp and advised the queen to pay the money under protest. But, in the first

place, the queen could not raise the money; and in the second, the old Trojan swore she *would not* pay it *if she could*: she was also queen over her own people, and if they proved traitors she should deal with them accordingly. Moreover, her reliance on the letter received from the "amiral Piritani" (British admiral) was not to be shaken, and Captain Bonnard might work his pleasure. Captain Bonnard allowed the queen two days for consideration, and then, if she did not produce the money, and otherwise yield to his dictates, he would first destroy the settlement, and afterwards attack her at the encampment. The lieutenant of the Salamander, being on leave of absence only, and limited as to time, was constrained to come away, but not before he had engaged a promise from Ariipae that she would do nothing rash. Immediately on his arrival in Papeeti, he came to us and borrowed the money necessary for liquidating the pecuniary part of the imposition, and which he trusted to forward to Huaheine by the missionary resident, who had been on a visit to Tahiti, and was on the point of returning to his charge; but that nothing might be wanting to make their disregard of all engagements as glaring as possible, the governor prohibited the missionary from returning to his station; and on *January 22nd*, 1846, a whaler arrived from Huaheine, and announced that hostilities had commenced there.

This report was confirmed on *January 23rd*, by the appearance of the Phaeton, bringing into port forty-five wounded men, and some of the foreign residents. From the latter were obtained the fol-

lowing particulars:—The limited period having passed without any concessions from Ariipae, all the foreign residents who valued their safety were ordered on board the *Uranie*, and then her captain commenced an indiscriminate fire on the deserted tenements, the more valuable of them being the properties of foreigners. This preliminary step being taken, he landed his men, who plundered the houses of the English and American residents, and slaughtered their live stock; and when remonstrated with by such of the owners as accompanied the boats to look after their property, they were rudely thrust aside, and admonished to hold their tongues. After the demolition of the settlement, leaving the *Uranie* to guard the harbour, Captain Bonnard, with the majority of the forces, joined the steamer, and went round to attack the encampment. The steamer could not approach near enough to render her guns effective, and the landing was effected by boats. The French had been beguiled by Fatau, who led them to suppose that more than half the natives at Maeva were ready to create a diversion in his favour; and whilst the troops, expecting their arrival and co-operation, were blindly feeling their way through the bush, the natives burst furiously upon them, killing and wounding a great many, the survivors having to seek their security in flight. Old Ariipae, musket in hand, and with half a dozen cartouch boxes belted round her slender waist, was there to encourage her people; and of a verity, Captain Bonnard's attempt transmitted no additional lustre to the rays of glory surrounding the French throne.

It is said that the governor, in his vexation at the repulse and slaughter sustained, thought at one time of sending the steamer back with reinforcements; but it reaching his ears that her departure was to be the signal for a concentrated attack upon Papeeti, he altered his tactics, retained the steamer with him, and caused Borabora to be evacuated; the war schooner bringing up to Tahiti all those natives who had forfeited consideration at the hands of their countrymen.

This check appeared to convince the governor that he had too many irons in the fire, that he had been too precipitate in his measures, and that it were well to essay an opposite line of conduct. With this conciliatory spirit, emissaries, under the safeguard of a female, a relative of Queen Pomare's, sought the encampment at Papenoo, with overtures from the governor to the natives; but they declined listening to any proposals in their queen's absence, and would be guided by her dictates if she returned. A cessation of hostilities was then proposed, until the steamer could return from a mission to the queen. This was consented to, and the steamer made the voyage, and brought word that the queen was near her accouchement, but would come back to her people as soon as her safety would permit. Not a native on the island credited the report; but to keep up appearances, after a decent interval elapsed, the steamer was again got under weigh, having on board the female relative who served as escort to the encampment.

March 9th. — The steamer has come back bootless,

and without the female relative, Pomare having detained her. It was easy to discern that all was not the "clean potato," but it was confidently asserted that Pomare intended coming up if her health had admitted, and that on the recovery of her strength she would most assuredly return.

It would have been better, probably, if nothing had been said, or that the truth had been told; for the natives, distrustful of any thing coming from the French, dispatched a whale-boat to Raiatea to learn the truth, and to their unmitigated exasperation and dismay, they became acquainted with the fact, that their queen had written to the governor apprising him in terms not to be misunderstood, "that she never would return to Tahiti so long as he or his troops remained upon it; and he might proceed to exterminate her people, and when his work of destruction was complete, he could then murder her." The falsehoods with which they had been entertained, the reports from the Leeward Islands, which spread like wild-fire through the camps, combined with the personal ill-treatment of some Tahitians, who had been unjustly confined in the calliboose, and starved upon bread and water, created a vehement thirst for vengeance; and on *March 21st*, a party of fifty or sixty, unable to control their rage, burst in upon the settlement. They cleared the Uranie barracks, set fire to the house of the *justice of peace*, and to a large building the French had erected for the purpose of manufacturing bricks in, and were about burning down the residence of a traitor chief named Maré; but before

doing so, they entered the house occupied by the commander of the Salamander and gave him warning of their intentions. As nothing could have prevented Captain Hamond's house from being involved in the same conflagration, he begged the natives not to set fire to Maré's house, "for if you do," said he, "mine will be burnt also."

"Ah! very well," they replied, tapping their muskets; "but it's good for us to destroy the bad men of the land." And they retreated, leaving the house unmolested.

Maré, in alarm, took refuge beneath Captain Hamond's roof, and entreated him to shield him from the vengeance of those who were hunting him for his life. Fortunately *he* found safety in the shelter of Captain Hamond's house; not so well did it fare with another rebel chief, named Mamoó; he was discovered in all the luxury of helpless drunkenness, and, not to waste powder on him, they knocked his brains out with a stone. If the natives had come in force, such was the consternation and the unprepared state of things, that they would have carried all before them; but it appears to have been the unpremeditated attack of a reckless few, whose indignation overleaped all prudential barriers, on their listening to the recital of the sufferings of one of their companions, who had escaped to the mountains after his liberation from the calliboose. The French now set about the most vigorous measures for defending themselves. Armed parties were employed in clearing away the brush and underwood immediately at the back of the settlement; breast-works

and barricades were raised, by filling casks with earth, and arranging sacks of earth upon the top of these, leaving apertures for firing through. The residents were ordered not to be absent from their houses after sun-down, nor to quit them before gun-fire in the morning, and were directed strictly to confine themselves to the line of defence, a space about a quarter of a mile long, by one hundred yards broad; and those whose houses were situate without this narrow limit had permission to retreat to Motu-iti, the little islet near the entrance to the harbour. Some availed themselves of this retreat, whilst others sought the shelter of the shipping. Those remaining on shore were instructed to keep lights burning in their verandahs throughout the night. For several nights after this, the rattling fire of musketry was kept up with scarcely any cessation; and on *March 24th*, a few natives having been seen approaching from Taonoa, it was quickly rumoured that a large party was coming in that direction, from Faatanua and the encampment at Papenoo, and that another large party were also on their way from the encampment at Puanawia.

The corvette *La Fortune*, stationed at the Taonoa end of the "line of defence," then opened fire on the beach, and did considerable execution amongst the cocoa-nut trees; she also damaged a house or two by sending shot right through them: and in the middle of the night, hearing the ringing report of cannon, we looked out and beheld one of the English resident's houses in a blaze. The French assert the natives set fire to it. No body of natives came in

from either camp, and it is the opinion of Captain H——, who knows the natives well, and happens to be here, that a few mad-brained fellows, excited by orange rum, are the sole authors of these disturbances. All day long, you may see parties of six and seven on the heights towards Puanawia, who will come down and fire into the blockhouses and barracks in that direction, and then deliberately retire, to reload their pieces. All this takes place in the sight of every one. The natives are as nimble as goats in climbing the hills, and at such work the French would stand no chance with them. It is amusing to watch the latter manœuvring their field-pieces in the blockhouses. They appear reluctant to raise their heads above the walls; and no wonder, as the moment they do so, bang! goes a musket: consequently they are a long time before they can get their guns pointed, and the very instant they are discharged, down the natives run to take a chance crack at them. The nine days topic of wonder is that the Sultana schooner was sent by the governor, who is also commodore of the *Uranie*, ordering the return of his frigate; but Captain Bonnard refused to evacuate Huaheine, as he wanted first to be revenged upon the natives for the defeat his party had sustained. This refusal to obey orders will show what a pretty jumble of an affair they have made of the protectorate.

April 11th.—The Sultana has gone a second time to recall the *Uranie*, and the chief of the governor's staff went in her, to lend, by his presence, weight to the authoritative missive. Captain Bon-

nard did not feel inclined to disobey this last summons, and immediately after the return of the Uranic, the blockade was publicly announced to be removed from the Leeward Islands. The chief of the staff crossed over to Raiatea, hoping to induce Queen Pomare to come up with him, but she remains firm in her refusal. I hear that she has been heard to exclaim, "that a British ship of war took her from her island, and she will only return to it again in a British ship of war."

April 29th.—The French admiral has again arrived amongst us. I omitted to make entry at the time of an expedition by the boats, a few days ago, to attack Puanawia; when the French were repulsed with loss. It is rumoured that the admiral disapproves exceedingly of the governor's measures, and declines participating in their responsibility. The governor is hurrying preparations for a concentrated attack upon the encampment at Puanawia, with the idea, it is thought, of implicating the admiral, as he could not quit the port while in a state of insecurity.

May 2nd.—Business requiring that one of us should go to Sydney, the lot has fallen upon me.

May 6th.—Bade farewell to my wife; for but a short time I trust. The governor commences his attack upon the natives to-morrow.

May 7th.—An awful day, wind from the northwest, lightning, thunder, and sleet driving with force almost sufficient to deprive you of sight. No day for the French to exercise ball practice on the poor natives.

May 8th.—Becalmed; verifying the old adage,

“after a storm comes a calm.” At daylight we were within six miles of Faraa, Raiatea: lowered a boat and pulled in. Pomare was at Uturoa, where trade was beginning to revive. On returning to the schooner we noticed her flag half-mast high, and we only reached her in time to save her. A light breeze springing up, the mate had ventured too close to the reef, and on his attempting to cast her head off shore, the current caught hold of her and was sweeping her broadside into the breakers. The mate was stupified, and had lost all self-command; and it was as much as he could do to find intelligence to comprehend our signals, and the hoarse roar of “Let go your anchor, you fool.” One minute later, and she would have been lost. I jumped into a canoe and hastened to the settlement for assistance. Pomare lent me her boats, and I borrowed another, and with eighteen men made for the rescue. Before we could render any service, however, I had the gratification of seeing her inside the reef: a steady sea-breeze having set in, the master lifted his anchor and ran in.

I had a passing interview with Tamatoa and his wife, Tapoa and his wife, and the “old brick,” Ariipae. Pomare and her little one were looking well and hearty; she keeps up her spirits wonderfully, and late events do not appear to have lessened her determination. I did not remain long with her, being anxious to get to Huaru before dark.

May 13th.—Under weigh for the Navigators’ Islands.

May 20th.—Sighted “Rose” or Kordakew Island, the easternmost of the “Samoan” or Navigators’

group: it is a small haycock-shaped island. With a fine breeze we ran past Manua, Ofoo, Tutuila, and on *May 22nd*, dropped anchor in Apia Harbour, island of Upolu. This island is amazingly fertile; it absolutely revels in the luxury of its vegetation, and it is abundantly supplied with gushing streams of silvery water. The islands of the Samoan group are not so lofty, neither do they rise so abruptly, as the Georgian and Society Isles. Upolu slopes gently to the sea, and the coast inclines with gentle undulations for miles. Nothing can surpass the varied richness of its vegetation. The cocoa-nut tree is every where abundant in thick and extensive groves, and words fail me to convey an idea of its fruitfulness; but its harbours bear no comparison with those of the Queen of the Pacific and sister islands.

It appears to me that a coralline flat extends from the shore all round the island; and the harbours are formed by the rushing of the mountain streams, which have worn gaps, or checked the labours or growth of the zoophytes; consequently they are small: and being on the north part of the island, they are open to the north-west gales, which are the most awful in their violence. But I am told when these gales ensue, they are generally accompanied by heavy rains, which occasion such a rush from the mountain streams, that the rapid current would prevent any vessel's driving ashore. Apia used formerly to be considered the best harbour, and it is the one where the shipping generally resorts; but there is another called Saluafata, fifteen miles to the eastward of it, which is more commodious, and equally

safe, if not more so. The Samoans have not benefited much as yet by their contact with civilised men: they for the most part go naked, with the exception of a kirtle of green leaves fastened round their waists, and reaching to the middle of their thigh. Men and women dress alike. They are a powerful, athletic-looking set of fellows; the chiefs, as is generally the case throughout the islands of Polynesia, being the biggest men, which may be accounted for upon the principle of our breeding prize cattle. From their infancy they are always supplied with the choicest food, and with plenty of it; and having little mental care, and partaking only in those exercises which promote health and vigour of the frame, they thrive corporally in proportion. Their bodies are tattooed from the waist to the knees, like those of the men at Rotumah, whom, in appearance, they greatly resemble. They wear the hair long, and some dye it red by means of burnt coral; and when twisted in a rakish knot at one side of the head, it looks very like a horse's tail tied up. The missionaries have acquired a little ascendancy with some, to whom they have imparted a trifling knowledge of the mechanical arts; but the number of converts is few at present compared with the population, which is roughly estimated at between 50,000 and 60,000. Notwithstanding the visits of whalers and other vessels for so many years past, I was surprised at the little appearance of articles of European manufacture. Wine bottles, for which they will exchange fruit and vegetables, are eagerly sought for, being required to

hold the oil with which they lubricate their bodies. No mother omits to bathe her child every morning, and afterwards to rub its body with scented oil; and they prize bottles because they retain the oil without leakage, which nothing of their own manufacture will do.

The natives, under the directions of the missionary resident at Apia, are building a large stone church about the centre of the harbour, and when completed it will be an imposing building for such workmen. Their houses are fashioned like an inverted ship, the keel corresponding to the ridge pole, the timbers springing from it to the rafters, and the stringer to the wall-plates: they are thatched with grass and an outside coating of a species of palm-leaf, and are exceedingly cool — a great desideratum in a scorching climate.

The American consul has got a store and office in the bay; and a well built two-storied stone house, his private residence, between Apia and Saluafata. It was erected by the natives, assisted by one or two Europeans, the consul himself being architect and superintendent. The walls are two feet thick, and it is delightfully cool, in an elevated situation, commanding a fine prospect of the sea: but the consul tells me he is in dread of earthquakes, as they experienced a shock which so disturbed the level of his house, that they could not entirely close a door or window in it; but some time afterwards came another shock, which restored things to their former position. The country is also infested with a destructive white ant, which, in an incredibly short

space, destroys the wood-work of the buildings. The missionary is residing in a comparatively new house, but the doors and framework are falling to decay from the destructive work of these mischievous insects.

The natives are inspired with a wholesome dread of the French, and are exceedingly averse to leasing or selling their land to foreigners.

The unfortunate British consul had been landed from the *Daphne* in the most undignified manner. In the first instance sent ashore in a dingy, with two boys, he was, after toiling all day in receiving and assisting at the landing of his goods, informed by the lieutenant, on the last occasion of his quitting the *Daphne*, that the captain, who was on shore, had left orders that Mr. Pritchard was to be saluted with the number of guns appointed for a consul; *and he was saluted*, and this formed his sole introduction to the chiefs, and his inauguration as representative of British authority. No reasonable hopes could be entertained that Mr. Pritchard would receive any respect or attention after so wanton a violation by the captain of the *Daphne* of all courteous regard, not only for his own sovereign, but for the nation to whom he was sent to introduce her delegate, and consequently no *great* surprise was elicited when Mr. Pritchard found he could not obtain a roof to shelter his head, nor a spot of land whereon to erect a dwelling; and had it not been for his brother consul, whose hospitality he shared for several months, it must have fared hard with him. Mr. Pritchard is like a fish out of water, and mental suffering has wrought its work upon him: he is reduced one third

in size, his face is withered, and lines you might lay your finger in have ploughed its surface—he is like a tree in autumn, suddenly blasted by a frost.

Two French priests have recently obtained footing on the island, agents of the Propagandist Society, and their eagerness to gain proselytes persuades me that they belong to a body who will scruple at no means to establish themselves. At present they are living with the natives, and conforming to their modes and habits, with jesuitical skill preparing the way for a future display, by a contrast of their power. It is surmised that they belong to a strong party in France, who are endeavouring to effect a revolution in the religious world, and to gain for their church power equal to that once possessed by the head of the Papal Church. Attached to their mission they have a trading store, similar to the store belonging to the same society in Tahiti. Louis Philippe, it is said, is in some way connected with the society; and from his accredited trading propensities it is not unlikely. The society is supported by shareholders; and what a field seems open! and what a speculation—*the trade for souls and worldly wealth and power!* The union appears blasphemous; but Louis Philippe, as one of my father's patients used to say, when speaking of him, "is the man with the long head." He has schemed to get the members of his family mated with the potentates of the earth; he cannot depend upon the love of France, and perhaps he is working to secure the support of a powerful body, who can sway the minds of men, in the event of any opposition to his deeply planned schemes. The idea, however, is fatuous; the men

of France in these enlightened days are not so readily disposed to yield blindly body and soul to the guidance of a fellow-worm. And right too; any attempt on the part of a minister of the gospel to check inquiry ought at once to put us on our guard, and induce us to reject his ministry, as in this exists the proof that it is his will, and not the will of God, that he is desirous we should follow. As yet, the priests in Tahiti have obtained no neophytes; and I became convinced of the nature of the regard they entertained for the spiritual welfare of the natives, by hearing one of them, in the most exulting tone, describe an attack that had been made, in which *several natives* lost their lives, and *not a Frenchman had been wounded*. Their *amor patriæ*, their prideful vanity, in seeing exhibited the *GLORY of France*, has converted them from church militants into military disputants.

May 24th. — Put to sea, ran along Upolu to the westward, and through the passage formed by Apolima and Savaii. Savaii is the largest island of the group, but is destitute of good harbours for shipping. A small cutter arrived thence at Apia the evening before we started, and the master of her reported that war had broken out between two contending parties, one of which having concealed themselves in ambush, rushed out and killed three chiefs on the opposite side. It is difficult to know what they are fighting about. These islands, instead of being each under one sovereign, or head chief, are cut up into countless chieftainships, each chief possessing absolute power over his own district. I was witness to the peaceful termination of a quarrel at Upolu

which was nearly ending in a bloody feud. The men of a district near Saluafata had insulted those residing near Apia; and added further contumely to the injurious language first made use of, by boasting of their deeds, and challenging the outraged party to punish them if they could. War was talked of, and the aspect of affairs was threatening; but the insulting party humbled themselves, and a deputation of them appeared in the district of the offended chief, and prostrated themselves, and presented mats (the money of the country) as an atonement. On this occasion the chiefs and elders of the district assembled to consider whether they should accept the offering or declare war. When I arrived at the scene they were seated in semicircular rows on the beach, beneath the shade of a superb grove of umbrageous trees, and a dozen old men, orators of the district, were standing up in a line in front, with long white wands in their hands.

After making a decent display of the right or equal privilege that each had to conduct the proceedings of the day, first one retired, and then another, till only two were left standing. It was well known who was going to address the meeting, but this ceremony was gone through that each orator might support the pretensions of his own hamlet. Peace had been decided on by the junta; and having heard what was to be the result, I grew tired of the ceremony, and passed on by making a wide circuit, as it is considered one of the greatest insults that can be offered to pass through or near a council convened in deliberation. The atoning party were grouped opposite the council, and on the side farthest from their

own district. One thing struck me as indicative of the industrious habits of the people — almost every person had his bundle of cocoa-nut-husk fibres with him, with which he continued silently to manufacture sennet; and many of them had tame pigeons or wood-doves, tethered by the leg to a wand, and now and then they would jerk the bird into the air and hold out the wand for it to resume its perch. I also noticed the strict observance of humility which the chiefs exact from the lower people; the latter, on approaching them, crouch to the earth, and dare not carry themselves erect in their presence.

Apolima is an islet shaped like a horse-shoe, the curve opening to the westward, with a conical rock, not unlike a sugar-loaf, off the centre of the bight. We looked in, and could distinguish houses above the glowing sandy beach between the dense fringe of cocoa-nut trees; and the passing glimpse we had showed us that the little isle was crowned with fertility. Between Apolima and Upolu there is a smaller islet, called Manona. Vessels may take this passage, there being no hidden dangers.

June 5th. — Sighted Walpole Island. It is small and low, similar in appearance to the Hervey Group Isles. We supposed it to be thickly wooded, but were not close enough to determine accurately.

June 6th. — We were in hopes to have weathered New Caledonia and the reefs to the southward of it, but the wind buffeted us, and brought us in sight of the Isle of Pines. We stood on till we saw the surf on the beach, and naked objects moving to and fro. Judging from the view we had, the extreme length of the island is north and south. It attains the

altitude of 2000 feet or more, and stretches by easy descent into two long low points, till at the northern extremity the trees appear to rise from the water. The low ranges of the land are covered with lofty pine trees, from which, doubtless, the island receives its name. The natives kindled a fire on the north-east side, where there is a good harbour, but they have had so many cruelties practised amongst them by the sandal wood hunters from Sydney, that we had no desire to add to the list of atoning sacrifices.

June 17th. — Howe's Island discernible in the distance. Since leaving the Isle of Pines we have been jammed "hard upon a wind."

June 21st. — Encountered a furious gale from the south-west, which compelled us to heave to.

June 22nd. — Land in sight: we expected we had been driven to the northward of our port, and so it proved; at noon we discovered ourselves abreast of Port Hunter. The wind continuing violent and contrary, at my suggestion, the captain ran in and anchored in Newcastle Harbour. The breakwater is nearly completed from Nobbie's to the Main, and although it may afford protection to the harbour, it is contended that the sand-banks are increasing; the deposits formed by the set of the River Hunter not having the outlet to the ocean they formerly had. Small as our schooner was (fifty tons), we found ourselves, on making a tack, embedded in the slimy mud. She sustained no damage and was hauled off by a kedge into a safe berth. The inhabitants of Newcastle had petitioned the government that their port might be declared free to receive imports direct; the

governor visited it in person, and subsequently their petition was accorded: the announcement of it having appeared in the journals a day or two previous to our arrival. Great increase of commerce, it is anticipated, will follow this freedom of the port; to me it appears pretty much the same as granting permission to a fisherman to cast his nets into a pond where no fish existed. No vessel of any burthen, except a steamer, can enter Port Hunter without a fair wind, and under any circumstances it is difficult of ingress and egress. With the exception of the breakwater, I see no alteration or improvement in Newcastle since my visit six years ago.

June 23rd.— The wind still adverse, I availed myself of the company's steamers, and at eleven A.M. we were outside Nobbie's, reaching Sydney about seven P.M.

In the immediate township of Sydney I did not perceive much change, but in the suburbs wonderful alterations have taken place; large townships have sprung up, and where, six years since, barren tracts of deep snow-white sand glared upon the eye, and scorched the feet of the toiling traveller, villages and hamlets have taken their stand. It surpasseth my comprehension. The colony is only just emerging from a state of general bankruptcy in which it has been involved for the last five years, and yet I will venture to assert, that in no five years since its foundation could it boast an equal amount of erections and improvements. John Bull is like the goose that continued to lay golden eggs for the benefit of any one but herself.

CHAP. VI.

On the way to Tahiti. — Sight the Three Kings and Rurutu. — Land on Rurutu, and obtain further Particulars of the Island. — Ingenuity of a Native. — A neuralgic Headache prevents further Exertion. — Arrival in Papeeti. — Sail for Raiatea. — Ill-treatment of Pomare by her Husband. — Arrival of the Frigate *Grampus*. — Make an Excursion to the Encampment at Papenoo, to try and induce the Natives to submit to Circumstances, and save further Effusion of Blood. — Result of the Attempt. — Sail for New Zealand in the *Barque Janet*. — Call at Huaheine, now a Scene of Desolation. — Renewed Acquaintance with the Navigators' Islands, and more Particulars. — Sight Islands little known. — Arrive at Bay of Islands. — Overland Excursion to Hokianga. — Some Particulars of the War with Ioni Heke. — The Country on the Route described. — Directions for entering Hokianga from the Sea. — A Kaori Forest killed by Fire. — Cross the Country to the Bay of Islands. — The Country on Fire. — Perilous Travelling. — Return to Tahiti. — Pomare and her People had at length submitted to the Protectorate. — Arrival of Monsieur Lavand to succeed Monsieur Bruat as Governor. — Departure of the *Uranie* for France. — Bound for Valparaiso. — The Island of Toobuai. — High Island, or Raivavai. — Another fortunate Escape from Wreck. — The Coast on the Main to the northward and southward of Valparaiso. — An Earthquake. — Again sight Ambrose and Felix Islands on the return Voyage to Tahiti. — The Marquesas Isles. — Resolution Bay. — Island of Oaitahu. — Nukuhiva, its Harbour, &c. — Sight Manihi. — Oahe and Aratua, low Islands of the Paumotu Group. — A ludicrous Incident. — Arrival in Tahiti.

“Huzza, for Otaheite!”

· *Cry of the Mutineers of the Bounty.*

July 18th. — WITH considerable satisfaction I once more saw myself bounding “o’er the glad waters of the dark blue sea,” on my way to Tahiti.

July 29th.—The Three Kings are dimly visible, looking as if desirous of mizzling in the gloomy fog that invests us. The voyage thus far is noticeable only for its great discomfort,—the vessel has never had a dry deck, and a chilling dampness pervades every thing.

August 14th.—Made an island in the position assigned on the chart to “Rimitara,” but lo! on heaving to, off the south by west end of it, a canoe came to us, and I found, as I had before suspected, that it was an old acquaintance, to wit, Rurutu. The greatest length of Rurutu I conjectured to be about seven miles, in west by north half north, and east by south half south direction: its character is that of the Society Isles, on a smaller scale; its greatest elevation I imagine does not exceed 2000 feet. On its western side, trending southerly, there are some remarkable isolated rocky fragments, that must have been hurled there by some extraordinary convulsion, as they are detached from the beach, where they lie. There are only two landing places for boats on the island, one on the north-west, and the other on the south by west side. The former I thought bad enough on my first visit, but the latter is infinitely worse, and from our ignorance we were nearly losing the boat; for the crest of a wave caught us, and but for the timely assistance of a native, who jumped into the sea opportunely to our aid, we should have been smashed upon the rocks.

I opened trade for *live* stock, but owing to recent visits from other vessels, business was not *particularly lively*. The chief of the district, in his patriotic

desire to secure to his island all the European trade that he could, advised my trying the other settlement. As it was then nearly dark, I agreed to pass the night with him, whilst the vessel stood off and on, and see what the morrow would produce. From former observations, and those I now made, I am of opinion that the natives of Rurutu are less given to unbridled sensuality than most of the inhabitants of islands in the Pacific. Whether it is owing to the absence of low white loafers, who pander for European visitors, or to the paucity of women compared with men, or to the lessons of the missionaries, who in their visits cannot remain on shore sufficiently long to destroy, by their deeds, the force of their doctrines, or to all these circumstances combined (which is most probable), certain it is that the women are jealously watched, and much order prevails in the settlements. I was amused at witnessing the ingenuity and industry displayed by one of the natives. He had been to the island of Raiatea, and had learned from Captain H—— the process of sugar-making, and on returning to his own country, he constructed a mill entirely by his own unaided skill. The rollers, three in number, were made out of the aito or iron wood; they were set vertically, and worked on a spindle, the cogs for turning them being pieces of wood let into the upper ends of the rollers; the trough for carrying off the juice was dubbed out of a solid slab, and the apparatus was turned by two strong bars, crossing each other at the centre, where they were secured by strong lashings to the shaft from the centre roller,

furnishing four ends to heave by. There was not a nail or a piece of iron used in the whole construction. For boiling the juice, he had got a whaler's try-pot, which he had cemented into a rude, but strong mass of stone-work built over a cavity hollowed for the purpose. I purchased some of his sugar, and have seen much worse manufactured by those pretending to a scientific knowledge of the art. The natives here were in great perturbation from the accounts that had reached them respecting the movements of the French. The proximity of their neighbourhood alarms them, as they fear that some day they will frame a pretext for seizing their island.

August 15th.—After a night passed restlessly, from the attacks of innumerable "light cavalry," as we used to call them in New Zealand, I arose at "peep of day" to lave my flea-bitten carcass in one of the running streams. Refreshed by this act of purification, and freed from the company that had so annoyed me, I strolled about the island. It is rich in vegetable productions, and rejoices in many springs of limpid water that issue from the hills; it is a real ocean emerald. I purchased several boat-loads of yams, bananas, sweet potatoes, cocoa-nuts, &c., and a few pigs; and was about crossing the island, when I was seized with one of those inscrutable headaches I am occasionally subject to, and which deprive me of all power of exertion. I was glad to get on board with the last boat, there to do my dread twelve mortal hours, being the usual time allotted me to undergo agony scarcely to be surpassed. Neuralgic headaches the faculty term them.

“Your system is an exceedingly nervous one,” said a medical man to me one day, when I was suffering from headache; and he imparted to my temples a shock from a galvanic battery, nearly causing my eyes to leap from my head, and giving me an idea, that its whole internal structure was in ruins: “Bless me! I never saw a person with nerves so numerously developed.”

It may be, doctor, but you certainly did not do them any good.

August 25th. — Entered Papeeti Harbour. The French, during my absence, had sustained another severe check from the natives; the commander of the troops had been killed, the chief of the staff had lost his leg, many others had been killed and wounded, and I heard from the chief of the staff's own lips, that had there been any one to have led the natives, not a Frenchman would have returned alive from Puanawia.

August 31st. — Sailed for Raiatea to fetch my wife from her father's care. I did not call to see Pomare, as I had no pleasing intelligence to convey. It is reported that Ariifaite, her husband, treats her very cruelly, because she will not submit to the French and return to Tahiti. On more than one occasion, she has been compelled to fly to others for protection against his brutality. When taxed with his cowardly inhuman conduct, he at first denied it, but subsequently confessed, “that when he was first married to Pomare, he was only a boy, and she used to beat him; and why shouldn't he beat her now?” Ariifaite, like his father, is an awful fellow for

ardent spirits, and when under their influence is capable of any excess.

The Salamander had been ordered home ; and she was gone on my return from Sydney, after a stay in Papeeti prolonged over two yearly changes of the seasons.

September 28th. — H. M. S. Grampus came to-day to take breathing spell in the quiet waters of Tahiti. She occupies the Salamander's station. I waited upon Captain Martin. He avowed that his arrival amongst us was from no political motive, made light of Mr. Pritchard's claims for indemnification, and gave it as his unqualified opinion, that the French had got Tahiti, and would keep it ; and "that I might just as rashly expect a pension of 10,000*l.* a year from Lord Palmerston, as that our Government would renew any further correspondence with France respecting Tahiti, or interfere in any way between her and Queen Pomare." Our experience for the last four years tending to confirm these sentiments, I resolved on making an effort to induce the natives to write to their queen, and submit to their fate. To this end I solicited a *pass* from the governor to visit the encampment at Papenoo. This was readily granted, as the governor said he was ready to avail himself of any overtures or mediations that might bring about peace, and stay the effusion of blood ; but of course I acted entirely on my own responsibility, as he could not interfere in any way further than granting me the passport to clear his outposts.

October 5th. — The passport was made for myself and two ladies, as I mentioned my intention of

taking my wife and her sister with me, not only to act as interpreters; but as Variau, the chief woman in the encampment, was my wife's foster-mother, I thought it not improbable, that a plain statement coming from her of Pomare's position, and of the utter hopelessness of any longer resistance on their part, would have some influence. We started at dawn, but on reaching Point Venus, the wind came with such strength from the eastward, that we could not prosecute our journey further by the boat, which we beached, and continued our way on foot. This proved a dreadfully fatiguing jaunt to the ladies, and one I never dreamed of exposing them to. By the time we arrived at 'the river from which the encampment takes its name, they were completely exhausted, and I was little prepared for what was to follow.

The natives had sentinels and advanced posts like the French; and it is a wonder to me how, from the difficult nature of the country, they ever suffered the latter to commit the devastation they have done. Not a house, and scarcely a bread-fruit tree, is left standing from Taonoa to Papenoo. In certain districts, whole groves of bread-fruit trees have been girdled, and they now, with bleached and leafless limb, offer mournful testimony of the downfall of their country. We were stopped at the different outposts after we had passed the French picquets, and challenged as to the cause of our journeying. On explaining that I had business with their chiefs, we were suffered to pass on. Variau happened not to be at the foot of the encampment where we halted;

she was twelve hours' journey in the mountains. They engaged to send for her if I would wait, as from the late heavy rains the river was so swollen and rapid, it was utterly impossible for the ladies to proceed up it.

The chiefs present demanded the purport of my visit. I entered into details, and pointed out how hopeless it was to expect that the French would leave their island, and how impracticable the task for them to expel them; and I assured them, that Pomare's act in putting her name to the letter asking protection from the King of the French, put it out of the power of England to interfere.

One of the chiefs rejoined, "We know that England will not assist us, the admiral told us so, long ago; she never did us any good, and we have long ceased to look to her for help; our only trust *now* is in God, and to him we pray night and day for aid."

They turned a deaf ear to all I had to say; and one of the inferior speakers had the assurance to tell me "to go back to the place from whence I came, and to carry my speakers with me;" and he finished with this pithy conclusion,— "That's all I have to say."

"Who is that man," said I, starting up, "who presumes to address me in this style? is he a chief?"

"Never mind him! never mind him! he's only speaker to ——" (name I don't remember), entreated one of the chiefs, catching me by the arm.

"Well, I came here to talk with chiefs, and not to be spoken to by a man like that."

I intended trying what effect an interview with Variau might produce, when the imprudent interference of my boat-steerer spoiled all; before I had the slightest idea of his intentions, he stepped forward and said, "I see how it is, you don't care any thing about your queen, and you want to lose your lands and your lives too." It was electrical, the burst of passion that followed this rash speech.

"Dog, that you are! We don't care for our queen? *What are we bleeding for?* For what have we lost our houses, our food, our best and our bravest?" It was my turn now to become the beseeching party, and I begged the chief to take no notice of the foolish words of my servant. At this he drew himself up with dignity, and retired from the altercation. But my man was not to escape so easily; others of the assembly handled him, and threatened to lay him dead at their feet. I was necessitated to interpose personally to save him from the consequences of his folly; and such was the fierce violence of their words and gestures, that my wife, frightened beyond measure, could not be reassured, and insisted, fatigued as she was, on instantly leaving the place. The chiefs were greatly chagrined at this, as the duties of hospitality are highly revered amongst them. "See what you have done," said I, "by your fierce talk. Variau's child has come this long way to see her, and you frighten her away: here, let this* be sent to her; say it is from her child, and tell her that we came here in love for you all,

* A piece or two of print, prized by the natives.

but that you, in anger, have driven us away." They were earnest in their entreaties that we should *rest* and *take food*, if we only remained for a short time; but no, I could tell by the tremulousness which thrilled my wife's frame as she clung to me, that we had better be on the move, and I imagined also that my exit being more in sorrow than in anger, would have its beneficial effect. Slowly we turned and recommenced our painful travel. The natives, as we journeyed, came up with quivering lip to ascertain the result of our interview. When informed, they appeared deeply affected and disappointed; but it was clearly to be seen, that their determination was bound up in the will of their chiefs. It was nearly midnight before we gained our home, the darkness and the intricacy of the passage between the coral reefs from Point Venus having obliged us to take the sea-board; and never I believe was any unfortunate lady more wayworn and foot-foundered than my poor little wife (her sister being much stronger, suffered less inconvenience). I waited next morning on the governor; who regretted the hardships the ladies had been exposed to, but seemed to think that the journey would not be thrown away, as the natives would feel, more sensibly than ever, the inutility of trusting to reliances on foreign aid.

November 25th.—Having entered into a speculation to proceed to New Zealand for a cargo of timber, to-day we set sail in the barque Janet, of 400 tons. My wife accompanies me, and we intend touching at the Navigators' Islands.

November 26th.—We lay to last night, to afford me

the opportunity of going ashore at Huaheine. The French have made a complete waste of the pretty settlement; there is scarcely a house standing, and the trees have been chopped down and destroyed in the same wanton manner as noticed on the route to Papenoo: the principal of the inhabitants were away at the encampment. It is a feature in the character of the natives worth recording, that, although they have suffered so much from the hands of the French, having been rendered houseless and destitute, and sustained the loss of many of their number, they are far from entertaining feelings of deadly hatred, or a savage thirst for revenge against their oppressors. There was no display of anger or ferocity as they pointed out the injuries the French had so causelessly inflicted upon them, and they smiled mournfully as we shook our heads at the desolate scene. From Huaheine we stood across to Raiatea, which we reached the same afternoon. We hove to whilst I landed my wife's sister at her father's residence. I made no stay, and we were soon clear of the land on our route to the Navigators'.

December 8th.—Renewed my acquaintance with Kordakew, or Rose Island. We ran close to it and sailed half round it. It is, as before stated, small and clump-shaped, and I now noticed it to be well covered with trees and shrubs, and girdled by a coral reef. From the mast-head I could discern its whole extent; the water was of a deep blue inside the reef, but I could see no passage through the reef, although I am told that an opening large enough to admit small vessels does exist. I think my informant was mis-

taken. The island is not inhabited. Manua Oloosinga and Tutuila were visible this evening, and tomorrow we trust, if the wind holds, to be at our anchorage.

December 10th.—Came to an anchor at Apia. The captain lost no time in discharging what cargo he had to deliver, and on *December 12th* we again made sail. Mr. Pritchard had succeeded in obtaining very precarious tenure of a piece of land, on which he had erected a small dwelling and store-house; but he was subject to many insults and annoyances, which probably would have been spared him had the captain of the *Daphne* adopted the proper method of installing him representative of England's queen. He is greatly to be pitied; exiled in the decline of life from a career of busy usefulness, and doomed to pass his days without occupation in neglect, it would not be wonderful if brooding thought, with all its train of recollections and regrets, should impair his mental, as well as bodily faculties. "It is hard to teach an old dog new tricks," and the human mind is just as little susceptible of bearing fresh impressions, where these call for a violent rupture of all the habits and associations of the best period of life. A wounded stag will be gored to death by his fellows, and a porpoise struck with the harpoon will be drowned by his companions; and because Mr. Pritchard has been treated ill by one country, *his own* thinks it necessary to keep up the ball, by forcing him into banishment from every thing that tends to make life agreeable. Alas! poor Pritchard.

Strong dews, heavier than I have experienced in

any part of the world, fall after sundown at the Navigators'. We are all suffering from severe cold, from sleeping incautiously with the ports open.

December 13th.—Sighted Boscawen's Island, but at such a distance we were unable to note other particulars, than that it was high land of conical formation.

December 16th.—In latitude $18^{\circ} 46'$ S., or thereabouts (for the horizon was by no means clear at meridian altitude), and longitude $175^{\circ} 20'$, two islands were in sight. The first, bearing east by north three quarters north, distant ten leagues, was a small but bold island; the other which bore south-east by south half south, distant about thirteen leagues, was considerably larger, and much more lofty, rising to a sharp peak in its centre; we judged it to be from 3000 to 4000 feet high. "Lati" is the name on the charts for one of a group of islands about this position; but we find very few of the small islands laid down in the general chart accurately placed. In the evening another island became visible, apparently at no great distance from the one last alluded to, but farther to the eastward and southward; it appeared a flat island, and not nearly so lofty as the others.

December 29th.—Early this morning we beat our way into the Bay of Islands. The settlement at Kororarika has been completely destroyed by the hostile natives; new stores are beginning to show themselves, and buildings are in progress, but jumbled together in the same old independent style, without the slightest regard to uniformity. Kororarika never could boast much pretension to architectural beauty

or arrangement, but it now looks as elegant as a Maori mat patched with calico.

Ioni Heke, the Maori chief at the head of the party opposed to the British, talks of making another irruption, and of again destroying and plundering the houses so soon as sufficient property shall be collected to pay him for his trouble. There are 200 troops at the Wahapu, which is at the entrance of the Kawa-kawa; but I imagine, if they were so disposed, the natives could easily destroy all the houses at Kororarika, before the troops could come to the assistance of the residents.

December 30th.— Started overland for Hokianga. The formation of the country I traversed is just such as one would imagine the bed of the ocean would present were the sea suddenly to dry up; it is thrown into waves and ridges, as if, when in a liquid state, it had been troubled with mighty convulsions, which had suddenly become arrested and rendered rigid. This is more particularly observable on the route from the bay to Waimete, a distance of about fifteen miles, the country being nearly denuded of trees, and for the most part covered with a close dry stunted fern (proclaiming the poverty of the soil); and as you skirt wave after wave of land, you have nothing to relieve the sight but the swampy bottoms. Waimete itself is a pleasant district, and offers an exception to the general description. It is a missionary station, and for three or four miles the country is of more level character, and under cultivation; fields of wheat and enclosed paddocks, in which fine cattle were grazing, gratified the eye, and occasional glimpses of the

pointed spire of a church as I neared the station gave assurance to my tired legs of rest and shelter for the night. It was late when I arrived, but happily I found a hospitable reception in a settler's cottage. About four miles from Waimete is one of Heke's pahs, where the British were repulsed with loss; it is near the inland sheet of water, called Mawhe. My guide pointed out to me the spot where many of my countrymen fell; and from what I heard, I could only wonder at the insane folly of a commander ordering up his men to be shot without the prospect of deriving any benefit from the sacrifice. The Maories were protected by a strong palisade, impervious to musket balls, from behind which they could shoot our poor fellows with deliberate security, who could only obey orders, and fall when the bullets prostrated them. If what those who were present on the occasion told me be true, Don Quixote, in his madness infatuate, when he attacked the windmills, was scarcely less guilty of folly than was our commander, who ordered up his men to be slaughtered as if he considered their bodies invulnerable to lead discharged from muskets in the hands of dark-skinned men. It is said that he had some field-pieces with him, but instead of, by concentrated fire, endeavouring to effect a breach in the palisades, he, in the spirit, (I suppose) of English fair-play, disseminated his shot as equally as he could, disdaining to take advantage of a handful of black fellows. And "now, my men, go and take possession; I don't care how you do it—you may gnaw your way through, or use the butt end of your muskets—but go!" What

followed? They went, and were slain. Unfortunately, Colonel Despard did not head the men himself, or probably he would have changed the fortunes of the day, or, what is still more likely, have made room for a more sagacious leader. I am assured by the oldest residents, that, had it not been for the diversion created in our favour by Nene, or Tamata Waka, a chief devoted to our interests, and who, by an attack on the rear caused Heke to fly, not a white man would have been left alive on the northern island. It is a good saying, *audi alteram partem*. I know nothing of Colonel Despard, nor did I take part in his exploits; but I have conversed with those that did; and if accounts are not exaggerated, instead of being knighted for competency in inditing a despatch, he ought to have been *benighted* with an *extinguisher*, in the same way that we honour a useless rushlight.

It is bad policy to allow savages to obtain the first advantage, as it gives them an overweening opinion of their own power, which it requires many an after lesson of severity to efface. An armistice exists at present; but the varlets speak of us in the most contemptuous terms, and imagine that 1000 Maories in the field are worth ten times that number of European troops. Now, if our attack had been postponed until it could have made the Maories effectually convinced of the superiority of our tactics, New Zealand might at this moment have been in the enjoyment of peace, free from the fear of interruption.

Mawhe is a sheet of any thing but pellucid water, resembling in colour ship pea-soup. There are some

boiling springs in this neighbourhood, but I had not time to visit them. Not many miles from Heke's pah we came up with one occupied by Nene and his men at the time they arrived so effectually to our assistance: both pahas are now deserted. From Nene's pah our route led us through a dense forest district, over abrupt ridges, and through deep gullies, impassable in the rainy seasons. The narrow foot track worn over the twisted roots of trees, knotted and entangled, making it ticklish walking for the Rozinante I had hired at Waimete, five or six miles of delectable travelling, wherein I expected every moment either that my raw-boned brute would break his leg or my neck, brought us to a water-course, called Waihou. From the long and unusual drought that had prevailed, this course was now easily fordable; but the torn banks indicated the impetuous force of the torrent when swollen by the rains and the thousand rills which would then lend their tributary aid. By following the windings of this course, by crossing it and recrossing it from twenty to thirty times, we at length arrived at what is termed the head of Hokianga river. My guide did not accompany me in my watery meanderings; but giving me instructions, consisting of a wave of the hand, and the ejaculation "there!" he would dart off through the almost impervious forest jungle spreading abruptly from either side the Waihou, and intercept me at places where he suspected I should be at fault. My plan was, to continue wading till I could wade no further, and

then to cross the stream and pursue the banks till I could commence wading again. The river had as many turnings as there are quirks in the law; and I, in it, resembled a suit in chancery — *in, safe enough*, but it was impossible to foresee when I was to be *out* again. In the last of my dubious crossings, my guide, who, in the tranquil enjoyment of his pipe, was waiting my appearance, took my horse by the bridle, and by a blind path, through an inland cut of three miles, led me to the river head. Independent of Waihou, several other streams help to form what is called the river Hokianga, and which, under this cognomen, does not extend above thirty-five miles from the sea. The tributary branches possess each its independent appellative. The Hokianga is impregnated by the tidal influence of the sea throughout its whole extent, but at low ebb the water is fit for use at the head of the river.

Two Englishmen have taken up their abode here, known commonly as Frank and Dick: they are sawyers, and have coupled in work for the last twenty years; and what is exceedingly rare for sawyers, have sustained the character of being quiet, industrious, and sober men. I engaged one of these to convey me in his canoe to my destination, eight or nine miles lower down. It was past eleven o'clock P. M. when he reached it; and, as it was the last day of the old year, I sat up with my host to welcome the new one in, which we did by salutation from a carronade. Having made arrangements for a cargo of kaori spars, I wrote for the captain of the Janet to bring his vessel round.

The pilot's house is situated in a sandy bight, on the south side of the river, near the heads, and furnishes a very good mark for vessels to enter by. It is painted white, and is conspicuous at a long distance; and in order to take the best channel, a vessel should get the pilot's house to bear in a line with the black rocks appearing off the south head. The shoalest water we found, by attending to these directions, was something less than four fathoms: this was at first-quarter flood.

As you approach the river from the sea, the coast wears a peculiar aspect; and it seems incredible how, once seen, any other part of the coast could be mistaken for it. A low range of yellow sand hills appears shut in between two bold headlands. The apparent southern extreme of the sand hills is the opening to the river.

The country on either side the Hokianga consists of steep ridges of land inaccessible to the plough, and is so thickly covered with trees, bush, and scrub, that the expense of clearing an acre would amount to more than it was worth. It is very sparsely inhabited by Maories; and when the kaori timber is exhausted, this district will become valueless, as it will then be unable to furnish any thing for exportation. Mr. Russell, the gentleman with whom I contracted for the cargo, has, at a great expense, laid out for himself a beautiful spot: his garden is in the English style, and he has collected many English plants, flowers, shrubs, &c. But the money he has sunk seems as misplaced as silks and satins would be on a farmer's girl going to feed pigs.

There are a few other English settlers on the river, who can by cultivation supply their wants for food ; but as for raising any thing for exportation, it is out of the question. They have all been more or less engaged in collecting kaori timber and gum. The latter article of commerce has proved a failure, it is not worth more than the value of its freight to England ; and timber is getting so scarce, that in less than twenty years Mr. Russell thinks it will become exhausted. This gentleman is the lessee of a considerable kaori forest, and I accompanied him in a survey of it : when to our amazement we found every tree killed by fire. I have already made allusion to the unusual dryness of the season ; and it appears that Mr. Russell having engaged Frank and Dick to split slingles in the forest, the men went to kindle a fire to dress their food without first taking the precaution of clearing away a spot, when the fire communicated with the dry grass and underwood, and running along with inconceivable rapidity, soon wrapped the whole forest in a blaze, and for miles not a kaori tree has been spared. The men fled affrighted from the devastation they had unintentionally caused, only too happy to have escaped with their lives. One immense tree had been prostrated, and was consuming like a furnace ; it was held in a sort of veneration by the natives, and by them called kaori roa (the great kaori). Many large trees had fallen, but the generality of them were standing, although scathed and killed. The commercial value of the timber is not deteriorated, nor will be, if the trees are not allowed to stand over four or five years ; but there are thousands

of small trees destroyed, of no commercial value at the present time, but which has for ever ruined the prospect of future supplies.

The country is on fire in all directions; and having had occasion, whilst the vessel was being loaded to cross over to the bay, instead of following the water-course of the Waihou, I took another direction, called the Paramatta road. Shortly after leaving the Hokianga, I passed through a vale about four miles in extent. There were several kaingas in it; and I noticed a variety of fruit trees and patches of waving yellow wheat; the peach tree, and raspberry bush were growing wild. The natives were not numerous, and there seemed to be fully as much land under cultivation as would serve to supply their wants; and it is quite necessary that there should be, for the vale is ripped up with water-courses, and surrounded by such broken, precipitous, densely wooded hills, that communication with it in the rainy or winter season must be next to impracticable. This route led me into what is called the "Long Bush," which, after a scramble of five or six miles, brought me out near Nene's pah. The "Long Bush" is the upper road from Waimete to Hokianga, and the only one that can be travelled in the winter season. Road did I term it? that ever name should be so perverted! I really am at a loss for any epithet appropriate for the blind, rugged, broken, in-and-out, up-and-down, wretched track, villanously misnamed a road, which for twelve long miles twists like an eel, with every conceivable sinuosity, over the roots of trees, the interstices between, even in this

unprecedentedly dry season, being full of treacherous soft black mud, "taking you in" up to your knees with every unguarded step. I avoided the greater portion of this twelve miles by keeping a middle road, *parbleu!* which differs from "Long Bush," as much, I presume, as purgatory does from t'other place. And surely it was a small taste of purgatory that I was experiencing, for the whole bush was on fire, and it almost required the lungs of a salamander to breathe the atmosphere. But independent of the difficulty of respiration, I was kept in continual dread of some large tree falling and crushing me and my horse; and my poor beast's feet became so heated by plunging and floundering through the burning ashes, that more than once I thought I should be compelled to abandon him to be roasted, whilst I effected my escape, like the Maori guide, by *dancing from root to root*. Suddenly we were brought to a stand still—one of the burning giants of the forest crashed across our way; here was a "pretty go." It was a scene worth seeing for once, but rather an expensive gratification. We had to force and cut our way through the intricate lacing of the charred and matted jungle. I resigned the horse to the guide, and though I kept as close to him as I could, and a horse is no impalpable object, I was obliged to continue bawling for a clue to the mazes of this most awful road. On emerging from my difficulties, I was qualified by my appearance to "join the jovial ragged crew," or the "Chummie's Society."

Governor Grey had visited the bay in the interval of my last being there; he had spoken in terms of

encouragement to the settlers, and had left instructions for the soldiers stationed at the Wahapu, to be removed to Kororarika: there is some sense in this measure, for I should be glad if any one could point out the utility of their stay at the Wahapu. Heke arrived at the bay whilst the governor was there. The latter expected to receive a visit from Heke; but fearing treachery, or, as chief of the soil, conceiving that it was the duty of the governor first to wait upon him, Heke did not go on board; and the governor departed without an interview having taken place between them. The governor's lady, with the curiosity derived from mother Eve, and not being restrained by the same motives that withheld her lord, went to see the renowned chief in one of her rambles ashore, I am told; but this furnished Heke with no guarantee of good faith, and he did not return the visit.

February 5th (Thursday). — Having completed taking in our cargo, we dropped down the river to the heads, to get our water and be ready for a start. It blew a hard gale of wind from the north-west soon after we had come to an anchor, which prevented any of us moving from the vessel till Sunday, when I went ashore at the pilot's. The North Head, like that at the river Waikato, is a dreary waste of sand hills; the south is a bold bluff, on which the flag-staff stands. I was informed there was a good practicable round along the beach from the North Head to the "North Cape" and another from the South Head to Kaiapara.

February 10th. — The pilot came on board last

night, and between five and six this morning we took the bar and proceeded to sea. There was no swell or ripple upon the bar, nor had we the slightest difficulty. In going to sea it is advisable to have the tide contrary to the wind, that in the event of the latter failing, the flood-tide may sweep you back to a safe anchorage. We started with the first quarter-flood, and per consequence found less than four fathoms water. We had a tedious passage, owing to the obstinacy of the captain, who, contrary to advice, persisted in standing to the southward. He was warned that, after strong westerly gales, the wind invariably came round from the southward, and remained constant for a few days. But no! he would have his own way; and after losing between two and three days close hauled, had the luxury of retracing his route. I never met with a stronger instance of the penny-wise and pound-foolish class. This notable gentleman wanted to stand through Cook's Straits, because, forsooth, he could send his boat into Port Nicholson and procure a few bolts of canvass, which he thought he could buy cheaper there than at Tahiti.

10 7
It was *March 22nd* before we were again floating in the still basin of Papeeti. Great changes had been effected during my absence: the natives had at length submitted, and Pomare had returned to her island. Her long and heroic resistance, so long as the dimmest shadow of hope rested in her bosom, yielded at last, when it was crushed out of her by cruelty and neglect, and the persecutions of her own husband. Nor were her subjects a whit

too early in tendering their submission; for a few days after they had done so, and an act of general amnesty had been declared, rains — so unprecedentedly heavy prevailed that the earth opened her fountains, and the mountains sent forth their torrents, and the whole of the fortifications in the encampment were washed away; and probably had the natives been still encamped, they would have perished with their works.

May 21st. — Monsieur Lavand, with his wife, son, &c., arrived in the frigate *Siréné*. Monsieur Lavand comes to succeed Monsieur Bruat as governor, who has been promoted to the rank of rear-admiral, and returns without loss of time to France, in his frigate the *Uranie*.

A grand review of the troops was held, and Rear-Admiral Bruat proclaimed his successor, and resigned his sword of office. Ex-Governor Bruat is an officer, and a brave one, and doubtless devoted to his profession; and what is that profession? is it not the art of destroying a foe with as little loss to friends as possible? What is a warrior's delight? is it not to encounter difficulties and overcome them? War is the most exciting of all games, as the stake played for is human life; and military and naval men are decidedly not those best adapted for governors of commercial colonies. Their minds must naturally revert to former studies, and to the achievements, misnamed glorious, performed by men in arms; and doubtless they burn for the opportunity of emulating those deeds which have gained for their authors the title of *heroes*. - But I won't moralise.

May 31st.—The Uranie is outside the reef, and the ex-governor and his family are on their way to France. The new governor's manners are cordial and hearty, and he seems desirous of conciliating the good-will of the English; but these are early times to venture an opinion. Pomare gave expression to a very pertinent remark. She was on a visit to our place, and I asked her how she liked the new governor, remarking that he was supposed to be a good man. "Do you in England look upon a man as a good man because he shakes hands with every one?" was her observant answer. She says but little, and is particularly guarded in what little she does say.

August 18th.—Business calling me to Valparaiso, I took passage for my wife and myself on board the British schooner Sarah Ann, a vessel of 190 tons. After eight days' rocking we reached the island of Toobuai, where I went ashore. The island is from fifteen to twenty miles in circumference, and belted with a coral girdle: three small islets stand off its eastern extremity. The harbour is on the north-north-west side; but there having been a long prevalence of southerly winds, the sea was so still on the reef, that the schooner might have gone over it to an anchorage. The island rises by easy ascent to considerable altitude, accessible to its highest summit, and spontaneously producing arrow-root on all its sloping sides. This was the cause of a brilliant illumination on the night we made the land; the natives having set fire to the long dry grass clothing the exterior of the mountainous slopes, for the purpose of allowing

the arrow-root to thrive, the most elevated point was sheeted with flame, and the sky reflected the ruddy glare. The land from the sea to where the mountainous formation commences is low and swampy, and is divided by the natives into sections of tara patches. A ridge of earth raised above the level of the swamp encloses the patch of each proprietor: the whole island is laid out in this way. The villages are close to the beach, and the land for 200 or 300 fathoms immediately running back, is of a higher and drier nature; the swampy lands extend from one to three miles in breadth. There are only 180 natives now living on the island; it has lately been visited with much sickness, and many deaths ensued. From the testimony of some white residents, the country is not a wholesome one to reside in. It however produces all the tropical fruits and vegetables in much greater abundance than the necessities of the islanders require. The reefs swarm with fish, and live stock, such as pigs, fowls, ducks, &c., is plentiful.

August 29th.—This day and the day following we were in sight of Vavitoo, or High Island, called by the natives Raivavai; it resembles Toobuai in appearance, but is loftier and larger in extent.

October 4th.—Dropped anchor in Valparaiso Port. We made the land eighty or ninety miles to the southward, and narrowly escaped wreck on a shoal, of which we possessed no indication, eight or ten miles from the land. As we made our northing, the coast outline presented great uniformity of appearance, being gently undulating, and not very high. We passed close to the shoal of Topalcalwha, which

extends from twelve to fifteen miles from the shore. The coast immediately to the northward of the port of Valparaiso, is exceedingly high and bold, and if the towering summits are not hidden in the clouds, you will see that they are covered with periwigs which no mortal hand e'er helped to form. Hoary they are, as becomes the character, the majesty, and the grandeur of the wearers; but wreaths of eternal snow form curls which sparkle in the bright effulgence of the sun's meridian rays, or in the glowing radiance of its rising or declining beams, more gloriously than ever did the Hyperion curls fronting the brow of Jove.

A few days after our sojourn in Valparaiso, the place was startled from its propriety by the heavy shock of an earthquake. At one simultaneous moment, the people on hundreds of leagues of territory were thrown into consternation and dismay; the grandeur of the movement not sufficing to allay the terror it excited. The rumbling noise and vibratory motion continued for nearly a minute. My sensations were awful; nothing that man could do, no courage nor exertion, could avert the impending fate; and I momentarily expected the earth would yawn and engulf not only me, but her whose life is bound in mine. Steeples rocked and houses groaned; and it was the universal opinion, that had the oscillatory movement continued many seconds longer, nearly every house in Valparaiso would have come down. Providentially no serious damage was sustained.

Accompanied by my wife, I again visited Santiago and other places around Valparaiso. She was

delighted with the scenery, gardens, birds, cattle, flocks, &c., and all the novelties that met her eye; and I enjoyed, beyond measure, witnessing her delight, and listening to the *naïveté* of the expressions which her admiration called forth.

Nov. 26th.—On this day we went aboard a French brig bound for Tahiti *viâ* the Marquesas Isles.

December 1st.—Passed within five miles to the southward of Felix and Ambrose Islands. The last time I sighted them we passed to the northward, having Ambrose Island well to the westward. Present observation confirmed the opinion I had formed of Felix Island: it is a rocky inaccessible bluff. The centre of Ambrose Island curves inwardly, so that the prominent headlands look in the distance like two small islands: it is of a barren sandy nature, but I could not discover if there was any practicable landing-place.

December 24th.—At half past two A.M., by the “silvery sheen” of a bright moon a little past its full, we descried the southernmost of the Marquesas Isles. We could only distinguish that it was bold high land, as, wrapped in the mysterious light, it loomed but the spirit of an island. It is called by the Spaniards Madalena, and east-north-east from it ten or eleven miles distant, is a dangerous rock. The position assigned to this rock is latitude $10^{\circ} 21' S.$, longitude $138^{\circ} 29' W.$ It is not larger than a ship, and not more than twelve or fifteen feet above the level of the sea. At five A.M. we ran past San Pedro, another lofty island; and between six and

seven A. M. we entered the strait formed by the islands of Dominica and Christina, which last is called by the natives Oaitahu. The strait is two leagues broad; and, as we coasted Oaitahu, within half a mile of its rocky inaccessible cliffs, my curiosity was excited to discover the reason for the French ever occupying so useless a position. The island is absolutely nothing but an assemblage of broken cliffs and lofty inaccessible heights. We passed one or two insignificant sandy bights, where it was practicable (but for what good?) to effect landing by boats; and suddenly, on rounding a salient bluff, we shot into a little open bay, formed by an amphitheatre of mountains rising close upon you, and nearly perpendicularly, to the height of 3000 feet. And this is the bay where our famed navigator Cook brought to, in the *Resolution*, and on which he bestowed the name of *Resolution Bay*; and is an abandoned site, recently occupied by the French. The scenery is wonderfully imposing, as the mountains encircle the bight like a wall, and are clad in green herbage to their topmost ridges; but the bay is not safe for shipping, and there is no land available for any purpose of utility. It is on the north-west side of the island, and the French garrison must have worked incredibly hard, as the works they have left testify. But what a lamentable waste of time, life, and money! The natives resisted the invasion, as was natural to suppose, when they saw the pale faces clearing away their groves of cocoa-nut trees, and offering them no benefits in return; but European tactics prevailed, and the French maintained their miserably useless position,

till ordered to evacuate it. I do not believe the whole space they could command would occupy a square mile. The natives are a fierce-looking set of fellows, athletic and strongly built. The ferocity of their appearance is principally derived from the extraordinary way in which they tattoo themselves, apparently designed with the view of rendering themselves as frightful and terrific as possible; and ably have many of them succeeded, for they look the very imps of darkness. Dominica is the largest island of the group, and the loftiest; according to French surveyors its highest range is 3700 feet. It is broken into the wildest forms; and parasitical plants of intense greenness issue from the ravines and chasms, and clothe the most attenuated pinnacles, jagged spurs, and abrupt ridges.

December 25th. — Christmas Day. The heat is fearful, almost insupportable. Rather different this from the weather experienced in merry England just now. Little did I think the last time I formed one of a happy group sitting round a cosy Christmas fire there, cracking nuts and jokes at the same time, that my unsettled star would lead me in ten years, on that identical day, to where my brains were nearly stewing in my skull from the *white heat* of the sun, and introduce me to some of the fiercest-looking savages in creation. At daylight we were off Nukuhiva, or Marchand Island. It is about seventy-five miles north-west from Oaitahu. The harbour of Anna Maria, where the French are settled, is nearly in the centre, on the south side of the island. Nature must have been in terrible agony when she

threw up these islands ; and it must have been in one of her most convulsive fits that she was delivered of Nukuhiva, which came but crudely formed into existence, and which has hardened into features of unsurpassable wildness. *There are beauty spots upon its face* ; but their utility, my friend ?—their utility ?

On the east side of the bay, the rocky strata appears in regular layers, except at one point, where a perpendicular white vein runs into the sea and furnishes an excellent land-mark for distinguishing the harbour. Immediately to the southward of Nukuhiva is Baud Island, or Roa Pona, as the natives term it, distant about twenty-five miles ; and equidistant, in nearly an easterly direction, Solide Island, or Roa-honga. Get the westernmost point of Baud Island to bear south by west by compass, and you will run into Anna Maria Bay. This bay is a pretty bight, forming to the eye a sweep embracing nearly four fifths of a circle, backed by a stupendous range between 3000 and 4000 feet high, similar to the enclosing mountainous amphitheatre of Oaitahu, and like Resolution Bay. Mistress Anna Maria cannot boast any land available for the purposes of European colonisation : “pride will have a fall ;” sooner or later it must be abandoned. I do not wonder at Governor Bruat’s leaving *French possessions* in the Marquesas with disgust, as they *possess nothing* to compensate hard knocks and an inglorious strife ; and his dread of a residence there may have helped to bring about the present posture of affairs in Tahiti. The bay is not three miles in extent, from one

extremity to the other, and in no portion of the land does the interior extend one mile ere it reaches the acclivitous mountain sides. The greater proportion of the natives that belonged to it have died off, some have gone to other parts of the island, and there may be between one and two hundred remaining. Many of the men speak English from having made voyages in whalers; and it was not a little startling for me to hear myself, in my bush rambles, addressed by naked savages (who must be seen in their primitive state for a correct idea to be formed of their demon-like appearance) in perfectly intelligible English. The French have built a strong fort, commanding the entrance to the bay; it is defended by nine heavy guns, which traverse on semicircular slides. They have also erected blockhouses on different heights; and at one, which commands the whole range of the bay, they have got a large gun, which works upon a circle and can be pointed in any direction. Their works and buildings betray a great deal of energy, which it is a pity had not been devoted to a worthier cause. The natives, however, have cause to rejoice in the rugged inequalities of their country, since they prevent "vile appropriation." The French believe themselves that their government will not long continue to hold their frivolous Marquesan *possessions*. The natives go nearly naked; for although some French missionaries of Romish persuasion have been for years residing amongst them, they have had little if any civilising influence. It was pronounced by the *Most High*, "that it is not good for man to be alone;" and yet priests,

by a life of *avowed* celibacy, endeavour to subvert this *great* and natural truth. Where any beneficial change has been effected in the habits of savages, *the wives of the missionaries* may be looked upon as the refining cause. Priestcraft may obtain converts by aid of superstitious terrors, but generally speaking, the men whose *creed strikes at the foundation of life*, but whose practices, in many instances, are so different from their professions, are the last people in the world to create a salutary effect on the minds of the heathen, particularly in tropical climes, where their wants are limited, and their habits essentially sensual.

I had heard much of the beauty of the Marquesan women; but nearly all have died in the neighbourhood of the French localities, so that I had not a fair opportunity of forming a judgment: such as I did see had delicately small hands and feet, which were beautifully tattooed. They are lighter in colour than the Tahitians, and most of them had the under lip and the orifices in their ears tattooed, which to my eye did not lend an unpleasing effect. Like the natives of Rotumah, the Marquesans rub their bodies with oil mixed with a yellow powder, and drink kava, prepared in the filthy fashion I described when speaking of Rotumah. Their houses too, are built on artificial terraces; only these, instead of being walls of stone with earth filled in, are uncemented arrangements of boulder stones, raised in a square from three or four feet high to the extent required. The houses are curious from the simplicity of their construction. The roof and wall forming one, comes at a sharp angle from the ridge-

pole to the ground; this is the back of the house. On the front, the angle of the roof is more obtuse, and meets a wall-plate, elevated about six feet from the ground. The two ends are flat gables, and the walls are constructed of wattles arranged horizontally, to which is secured an outside covering of dried bread-fruit or pandanus leaves. The interior arrangements are no less simple and curious. Two spars, generally the unhewn stems of cocoa-nut trees, are stretched along the entire length of the building, between four and five feet asunder, and connected at the ends by curved pieces, the space between being filled with long dry grass, on which they spread their mats for sleeping; their heads resting on one of the spars, and their heels dangling over the other. From constant use, these sleeping bolls are worn quite smooth, and the round boulders of the floor are worn to a bright polish.

Their burying places, or morais, are in close proximity to their dwellings. Their dead are encased in hollowed pieces of timber, something resembling small canoes, and are suspended beneath sheds, on mounds of stones. After a season, the ashes of any great chief are deposited beneath heaps of massive boulders, arranged with unusual strength and care. I saw several of these tumuli; and from the great mortality that had recently taken place, so many bodies had been covered under one stony barrow, that the morais were shockingly offensive. I was compelled to hold my nose, and I almost held my breath, as I made my observations. Much human hair lay scattered about, and appeared between the

interstices of the stones. These islands are subject to long seasons of drought, when fresh water becomes scarce and difficult of attainment at Anna Maria Bay; the mountains that surround it are so uniformly scarped and acclivitous, that the rains and clouds have no chance of depositing any great body of water to form a continual stream. The French have provided for this first necessary of life, by sinking some excellent wells, which for the future will furnish good and unfailing supplies.

We remained a week at Nukuhiva, enjoying the hospitable kindness of the commissary of the establishment, who would not hear of our remaining on board the vessel, but resigned his own quarters to us, and showed us much attention. In his utter disregard of all personal inconvenience, he seemed scarcely to be aware of the existence of *self*, and a female could not have surpassed him in delicacy of deportment. Monsieur Quoniam's name has furnished us with a grateful souvenir for life; and happy should I be if at any time I were permitted to furnish him with as pleasing a one.

December 31st. — Got under weigh for Tahiti. We had a troublesome beat out, the wind being adverse, and the current strong against us. The coast, when we came to make our westing, faced the sea, *literally* abrupt as a wall; a nice lee-shore for a tempest-driven barque.

January 3rd, 1848. — Made Manchi and Oahe, two of those singular crater-lipped islands of the Paumotu group. We coasted the northern and western part of the latter within half-cable's length, and

we conjectured it to be fifteen miles long, by ten broad. The lagoon, from my observations aloft, indicated, by its glowing patches of yellow-looking water, plenty of coral knolls. On the west-north-west side, there was an opening through the lip into the lagoon, *wide* enough for any vessel to enter. A strong current was setting outward, and the water in the passage appeared shoal; but this may have been the effect of the sun's rays, which, glancing obliquely in the passage, may have caused a turbid reflection. There were only three or four cocoa-nut trees to be seen, and the island bore no signs of being inhabited. At half-past two P. M. sailed between Rairoa, or Dean's Island, and Aratua; the former not visible. There were several groves of cocoa-nut trees on the northern and western sides of Aratua; but the patches of vegetation on the ledge of the basin or lagoon were sparse and detached. In some parts the lip was awash, and could only be distinguished by the glistening yellowness of the water, and this is more particularly the case on the south and south-eastern sides. In moderate fine weather, no vestige of these hidden dangers could be detected, and the only guide for the mariner is the extraordinary stillness of the water near these reefs, which ought to put him on his guard. We had coasted the western side of the island, and were bearing away for Tahiti, under the impression that its inhabitants were on a migratory tour, when we noticed a signal flying, and saw one or two natives. The captain caused the boat to be lowered, and I accompanied him ashore. There were only two

natives, a man and his wife. The man told us there were other natives on the island, who were all engaged collecting cargo for our house, and, as well as I could understand him, they were staying close to a passage into the lagoon on the north-north-east side, as he pointed with his hand in that direction, and intimated, "that it was an obstinate long way off." It is only a boat passage. The man and his wife swam off to us, as it was dangerous to attempt landing from our square stern boat. Tempted by the facility with which the natives swam to and fro, one of the seamen craved permission to swim ashore, and help to bring down some cocoa-nuts; but he wasn't up to dodging a *swell* of the first water, and scarcely had he gained a footing, when the heavy recoil swept him off his legs; and it was ludicrous in the extreme to witness his open-mouthed amazement, as he felt himself rolling backwards, his heels higher than his head. He was "considerably galled," as a Yankee whaler would say; but as he was in no real danger, it was amusing to watch his consternation, and the coolness of the native man, who, instead of going to his assistance, stood still, beckoning and calling out, "Iri-mai! iri-mai!" (Come here! come here!)—a task which the Frenchman found more difficult to perform than it was to give the injunction.

January 5th. — Without further incident, arrived in safety at Tahiti. My partner's health caused me to urge his immediate departure for Valparaiso; he accordingly embarked on board the Georgian, and sailed on the 2nd February.

CHAP. VII.

A Voyage amongst the Paumutu Islands to check-mate unfair Dealings. — The Island of Matea. — Tikahau. — Rairoa. — Auura. — Apatai. — Toau. — Aritika. — Faarava. — Faite. — From Faarava go to Ana. — The “Two Groups” properly two Lagoon Islands, the one to the north called by the Natives Marokau, that to the southward Ravahere. — Hikueru. — Claim of the Paumutu Islands to the Designation of Coral Islands. — Marutea. — Wretchedness of its People. — A slight Dissertation on Murder. — Mutitunga. — Singular Rising of the Sea during a Calm. — Tipoto. — Tuanake. — Hiti. — Katin. — Raraka. — Dwarf Cocoa-nut Trees. — Instances of the Virulence of poisonous Fish. — Kauchi. — Toau coasted. — Auura revisited. — Rairoa. — Make the Island of Matea. — A trip across it. — Reach Tahiti, and learn the News of the Dethronement of Louis Philippe, and his flight to England.

“ Ah! believe that love may dwell
Where the coral branches twine.”

Song, the Deep Sea.

“ ’T is done! but yesterday a king,
And arm’d with kings to strive,
And now thou art a nameless thing,
So abject — yet alive!”

BYRON.

May 28th. — HAVING learnt from vessels coming from the Paumutu Islands, that a certain party had been intriguing with natives engaged to us, and had possessed himself of biche de mer collected on our account, and that another party was interfering with our diving gangs, I chartered a weatherly schooner,

called the Fairy, from Captain H——, and set sail to investigate matters.

May 29th.—Made Matea, an island about 120 miles north-east by east from Point Venus: it is one of the few islands of the Paumotu group that does not possess a lagoon in its centre, and that is not encrusted with coralline formations. We first sighted its north-west side, which bore a resemblance to the chalky cliffs of Dover; the southern part of the island slopes towards the sea, and is verdant with foliage; but in every other direction it rises a perpendicular wall of rock, from two to three hundred feet high, its edges fringed with trees. The land appears to recede inwardly from the summit, as nothing can be seen beyond the trees that skirt the top of this rocky parapet, and which for ages has breasted with its naked adamantine sides the ceaseless warring of the ocean. There are a few white sandy curves at the base of these cliffs, furnished with a dense growth of vegetation, which has a very picturesque effect to the voyager. These spots form the settlements. The north-western extremity of the island is the highest point, and may be 400 feet in altitude. The principal settlement is on the north-east side. I approached it in a boat; but in consequence of its being late, and the landing place exceedingly bad, I caused my mission amongst the islands to be explained, and returned to the vessel. One of the natives (the man in charge of our property) plunged through the surf and swam to us. How I envied the fellow his complete mastery over the watery element.

May 30th.—At daylight we were close abreast of

Tikahau (Krusenstern's Island), a dangerous reef island, in many parts bare of trees, and nearly awash. There are a few cocoa-nut trees on its north-west side, where also there is a ship entrance to its lagoon. We stretched across for Rairoa, or Dean's Island, which stands about fifteen miles further to the eastward: this is the largest island of the group (if the term island may be allowed to the collection of reefs that encompass a sheet of water), 50 miles long, by an average breadth of 20. Landed at the north-western extremity, through a very good boat entrance to the lagoon; saw a family sheltered beneath a fine grove of cocoa-nut trees; and learnt that our overseer was at the middle harbour, which proved to be situate north by west. The entrance is spacious, and there is depth of water for any class ship. An islet well covered with cocoa-nut trees almost equally divides the passage, and a vessel may enter the lagoon on either side the islet. The natives call it, *par excellence*, Queen Pomare's Islet; and it is under the surveillance of two humpbacked Tahitians. The Rairoans were expecting a visit from the queen, and had erected a new house for her reception; but I fear this display of loyalty will be thrown away. A houseful of biche de mer, belonging to us, was stored on this islet; but our overseer was away at the most windward entrance. Sent a messenger in pursuit of him, and on returning to the vessel, hove to for the night.

May 31st.—Was ashore early, and made arrangements with the chief of the district to trade for us; left property to the amount of 300 dollars in his hands; and

took our white overseer with us, intending to leave him on another island. Rairoa, which interpreted means long land, lies nearly east and west. The southern range of reefs is exceedingly low, and the patches of vegetation sparsely detached. The northern range is more continuous, a dark mass of green shrubs appearing above a line of dazzling white sand, with groves of cocoa-nut trees at intervals. The most weatherly entrance to the lagoon is about nine miles further to the eastward than the middle harbour, and the passage is clear and free from danger, being wider even than the middle one. There is good anchorage immediately after entering, in a bight on the western side, opposite a grove of cocoa-nut trees. There are many coral knolls in the lagoon, but for the most part they are covered with sufficient water for vessels of any burthen to pass over.

June 1st.—This morning we were at the weather or eastern end of Rairoa, and had an excellent opportunity for renewing our chronometrical observations. We corrected our rate by Point Venus, and the result of our observations gave the west point of Rairoa in longitude $147^{\circ} 58' 15''$ W. and the south-east point $147^{\circ} 13'$ W.; making the extreme length of the island not to exceed forty-six miles, which I believe to be pretty near the truth; much more so than Arrowsmith's chart is. The western extremity is also much broader than the eastern, although on the chart the very reverse is exhibited. But this may have been the fault of the artist, who may have engraved his plates from the original surveys or plans, instead of from their reflected images.

Our observations completed, we tacked and stood for the north-west part of the island of Aratua (Fourth Island). Again I coasted this island to its southern extreme: a bare shoal stretches out for several miles to the southward, and nearly the whole eastern side of the island consists of naked reefs. The chart shews the contrary, and the cause assigned above may account for the error.

June 2nd.—I had to “rouse out” early this morning, on our being abreast of the settlement on the west side of the island of Auura, or Third Island. We had not been misinformed; a Frenchman had been to the island, and by his representations had succeeded in obtaining from the natives the first important parcel of biche de mer, which, after two years’ perseverance and instructions from us, and, of course, not unattended with expense, they had collected. Twelve of the natives were implicated in this dishonest transaction, and I caused them to be brought to trial by their judges. Many hours were occupied in speechifying, and the ingrates betrayed considerable ingenuity in trying to evade the consequences of their conduct; but I always brought them back to the point from which they would continually keep straying; and at length, having stripped them of every plea or excuse, they acknowledged their guilt, but as something in extenuation, submitted that the Frenchman had beguiled them by his arguments, and their own poverty had made them forgetful of their faith to us. The judges, with the code of laws in hand, were about sentencing them to make each fifty fathoms of road, but were at a loss to

specify the compensation which we should receive. At this juncture I stepped forward, and begged to admit the extenuating circumstances; and requested the judges to forego the penalty on this occasion, but to admonish them as to keeping stricter faith in their future agreements with Europeans. The court commented for a few minutes on my clemency, and broke up, apparently much to the satisfaction of both the judges and the accused.

Aura is nearly oval shaped, and one of the prettiest of the lagoon islands; it possesses some beautiful groves of young cocoa-nut trees, although on its eastern side there are wide gaps of bare reef; the number of its inhabitants, including children, may amount to between 200 and 300. We left the white man we brought from Rairoa there, to keep a stricter guard over our property, and regained the schooner as the sun was yielding to the reign of night.

June 3rd. — Worked to windward during the night, and at six A.M. we were close to the settlement on the north-east side of Aura. Landed, and owing to the dishonourable conduct of the Frenchman, had divers obstacles to contend with. He had been put to no expense in sending vessels time after time to the islands, and in employing and paying white men to instruct the natives how to cook and cure the biche de mer, but availing himself of the circumstance that the natives had not been settled with for their collections, he tempted them by offering a larger price than we had agreed for; and now they wanted us to take short measure, which we would

not consent to. After rather an inflammatory discussion, they promised to act fairly and abide by their engagements; and leaving some property in their hands, with additional pots and pans, we took our departure. One of the natives, during the heat of the debate, sprang to his feet, and accused our agent of having acted falsely, and of being the cause of all the trouble; and contended that all the baskets of biche de mer procured amongst the islands were of the same size as those they now required payment for. I immediately seized a basket, and ordered it to be taken on board, that it might be compared with the baskets in the store at Tahiti in the presence of the judges; and I proposed that one of their own people should accompany me, that he might see with his own eyes, and hear with his own ears. This style of argument was totally unexpected; and as we were making our way to the boat, a hasty meeting was assembled, and presently a native, with a good-sized pig under his arm, came running after us, and offered the squeaker as an atonement for the lies they had told, if we would consent to let the matter drop. At first we declined all compromise; but they pleaded so earnestly, and bestowed such hearty anathemas on the tata aviri (lying man), that we allowed them to withdraw the basket; though we rejected the sacrificial swine, as all we required was fair play.

On leaving Auura we steered for Aratua, and made its only entrance to the lagoon on the north-east side at half-past three P. M. A small vessel

might enter this passage at slack water. We had to contend in the boat with a strong current setting out. The natives of the island had almost abandoned the hope of seeing us; and as no one had been there to beguile and mislead them, we speedily concluded our arrangements, by paying for all the sea-slug they had collected, and by leaving pots and pans for the more effectual curing of it. There were not above fifty inhabitants on the whole island. They subsist principally on fish diet, there being but few cocoa-nut trees, and no other fruit or vegetable growing in the place. They were all stout healthy-looking people, but more swarthy than the Tahitians. They were taking their evening meal when we landed, and, mercy on us! what quantities of fish they did stow away. From Aratua we shaped our course for Apatai (First Island). The sun had sunk when we made the island, and night had spread her sable pall; but as the situation of the harbour on the south-west side was well known to our agent, we steered boldly for it. Hove to, when the roar of the breakers announced we were sufficiently near, and lowered the boat. The entrance is exceedingly good, free from hidden dangers — or we should not have ventured in in the dark — wide, and with depth of water for vessels of any draught. We found only a few families located on the island, as its lagoon is notorious for its poisonous fish. No attempts had been made to cure biche de mer, as they said they had been waiting for pans. We left four amongst them; and as it was too dark for further observations, we made our congé, regaining the

vessel by half-past nine P.M., when the order given was to steer for Aritika.

June 4th.—The wind was “dead in our teeth,” and we had to make a long board to the southward, which brought us early this morning in sight of the island of Toau (Second, or Elizabeth Island). There are no inhabitants on it, and we did not stand in close enough for more particular observations. At nightfall Aritika was about eight miles to windward of us; but an excruciating headache disabled me from all exertion, and when it became quite obscure we hove to for daylight.

June 5th.—Aritika is about twenty miles in circumference, circular in its form, and has two entrances to its lagoon, one on the west-north-west side, and the other on the north-east. We pulled into the lee harbour against a current setting out at the rate of six knots. We found it impossible to stem it with the oars, so pulled across the mouth, and leaping on to the rocks, tracked the boat in. Between twenty and thirty tons of mother-of-pearl shell were stacked ready for shipment, but our divers had left the island; and after having pulled to the settlement, which is about three miles to the southward of the west-north-west passage, we discovered the native inhabitants had gone to the opposite side of the island. We left some iron pots, and a letter explanatory of our visit for the chief who has charge of our property. It was raining and blowing hard during the whole of our stay, but this did not prevent our inspecting the scene of Commodore Wilkes’s boring operations. Several pieces of iron tube re-

main, and some of the joints are perfect. Parts of the stage erected for working the boring implements are still standing, the Yankees having told the simple natives to take great care of every thing, for they had been boring for sand to take to the United States, and if it was approved, they meant to return for a cargo of it. The island wears but a scraggy appearance, there being long spaces where nothing but a skeleton reef of dusky red just grins above the water; but there are also a few patches of soil, more generous than is usually to be found amongst the Paumutus. At the settlement there was quite an extensive garden, in which we saw the pumpkin, pine-apple, ninito, banana, and other vegetables growing. Our bright lads made a raid upon the cocoa-nut trees, and we had half a boat-load of nuts in a twinkling: two of them belonged to the island, but wished us to convey them to Ana; and they told us they had a perfect right to help themselves.

June 6th. — At anchor in the island of *Faarava*, or *Wittgenstein Island*; “An anomalous kind of anchorage!” one would be apt to exclaim. Last night was a rude one, and the little schooner bounded and tossed like *Mazeppa’s* wild horse. It required some judgment to direct her amid such a thick cluster of islands, and I was glad to find our agent quite equal to the occasion. We were close in to the island of *Faite*, or *Myloradowitch Island*, at seven o’clock A.M., and after breakfast we went ashore in the boat. The entrance to the lagoon is on the west-north-west side, similar to the one we entered at *Aritika*; but the entrance is wider, and a vessel of

considerable burthen, by watching her opportunity, might be taken in and moored in safety. About seventy baskets of biche de mer had been collected for us, which we paid for, and placed under charge of the governor of the island, with some iron pots to extend the business: we also left a few articles of trade with him, that he might barter for any thing during my absence. There are about sixty natives proper belonging to the island, which seemed abundantly supplied with fowls and pigs. A fine grove of cocoa-nut trees exists on either side the entrance, but the chief settlement is on the south side. There is no mother-of-pearl shell in the lagoon—so the natives say—but sharks in great number. This put me on bargaining with them to catch them for their fins and tails. The natives themselves are exceedingly partial to the flesh of the shark, and by our supplying them with hooks and gear, and paying them for what would otherwise be refuse, it will be double gain to them. From Faite Harbour to the south-east entrance in the island of Faarava, the course is north-west by north, by compass, distance twelve miles. We made it at three o'clock P. M., and could not have hit a more opportune time, for it was slack water, and we had a fine favouring breeze. It was in this harbour that the American schooner Emerald was wrecked some years ago, in the attempt to beat out against wind and tide. The wonder would have been great if she had escaped wreck, notwithstanding the entrance being one of the finest and most spacious of any existing at these “half-drowned islands.” Faarava is full thirty miles in length, and

has here and there splendid clusters of young cocoa-nut trees growing on its detached patches; and this occasions me to remark, that the groves at all the islands are young, — a convincing proof that the various islands are only *now* recovering from the desecrating outbreak of the Chain Islanders.

June 7th. — Purchased our anchor at half-past eight A. M., and proceeded lower down the lagoon. We had an unobstructed passage for about twelve miles over a pure white sandy bottom, and an average depth of water of from twelve to fifteen fathoms. Brought to opposite a settlement yecept Tetou. Our factotum was absent on a fishing excursion: the people wanted the loan of our boat to send for him, but we could not spare it, neither did we relish the delay which a compliance with the request would have occasioned. Took ashore a quantity of property, some iron pots and shark hooks, and left an explanatory note for the chief, with a present for his own peculiar benefit. At three P. M. again got under weigh, with the intention of leaving the island; but as we were standing to the northward, the sun's ray's cast a shimmering reflection directly in our course, and prevented our distinguishing the coral knolls scattered in the lagoon. We narrowly escaped running foul of one, and taking the hint, dropped anchor for the night.

June 8th. — The wind came round from the northward; so instead of leaving the lagoon by its north-eastern passage, we weighed anchor, and at midday cleared the passage by which we entered, and bore away direct for Ana, where we landed next morning,

and were struck with the apathy of the natives. On all former visits, numbers would rush to our assistance, to save the boat from being injured on the rocks; now, not a soul came near us, and we received about as much notice as the native pigs wandering about. Europeans have become cheap with these demi-barbarians; "Cheap, sir! cheap! too cheap!" as Mr. Bumble, that worthy representative of parochial authority, would have remarked. Had an interview with the chiefs and principal men, announced my object in visiting the islands, and delivered what I considered a very eloquent lecture on the difference between *meum* and *tuum*, involving a slight allusion to the laws of nations, and containing a gentle hint for their future guidance, which I trust they will have the good sense to profit by. The wind continuing from the northward, I brought my *argumentum ad hominem* to a close, and by sundown we were on board and on the way for Hikueru.

June 13th.—Last night we were not far distant from the reefs of the Two Groups, which seems an odd name to have given them. There are two distinct lagoon islands; the northern one, named by the natives Marokau, and the southern one, Ravahere. About midday, after hard beating against a north-east wind, made the west side of Hikueru. The south-west, south, and south-east sides of this island are bare reefs, awash. We landed from the boat on the west side. About seventy tons of shell were collected; but some of our good friends had been there, doing us all the mischief they could. As far as I could judge, the island is about twelve

miles long, north and south, by eight or nine east and west, and it is of oval formation. The lagoon is studded with coral knolls, and our overseers report abundance of shell. Hikueru suffered greatly from the natives of Ana, who did not leave on it a single cocoa-nut tree standing. Our agent planted many hundreds some years ago, but they have been of slow growth, and do not yield prolificly. The patches of vegetation are few and far between.

June 14th. — Engaged from morn till dark in paying off the divers.

The Paumutu Isles are generally called coral islands, and I believe, following the fashion, I have called them so myself, but they most certainly are not so. Geologists assert, that the polypes to whom the manufacture of coral is assigned, cannot live in deep water; and the fact would appear so, for all the coralline formations, the work of insects, are upon a rocky basis, a few fathoms below the surface of the ocean. Such is the case at all the islands of the Paumutu group, and at the Georgian and Society Islands. At the latter islands the coral is of abundant growth within the encircling belts of reefs, where the soundings vary from two to forty fathoms; but outside the reefs, vessels may approach close to and obtain no soundings; and oftentimes, as we have been balanced upon the waves, waiting for the right one to carry us upon the reefs, I have noticed, as the seas recoiled and exposed their steep sides, no signs of coral, but a deep red rocky front, adapted to oppose enduring resistance to the wasting power of the water. And need is it that it should be so, if “constant

dropping will hollow the hardest rock." Some of the islands rise from the deep like a flight of stairs, having the upper steps or rocky terraces covered with coralline formations; hence the unsuspecting have drawn the conclusion that the whole has been the work of zoophytes; but assuredly no: and it will be remembered, that the mutineers of the *Bounty*, on trying to run the vessel ashore at Toobuai, entirely capsized one of these coralline excrescences, and the vessel passed on without sustaining any injury. On two occasions when sailing over these submarine groves, our vessel came in contact with the interlacing branches of the wonderful and beautiful production, *uprooting* some, and scattering others into a thousand fragments, yet scarcely deadening her way. If it is true that coral cannot live in deep water, it is also true that it cannot live entirely out of the water, as it dies if exposed above the surface. And at Hao, or Bow Island, I remarked in my last visit, that where, by some law of nature, the sea had encroached upon certain portions of the reefs, laying bare other parts, the coralline formations on the latter were all dead.

June 15th. — Becalmed the whole of this day off the island of Martuea (Furieux Island), the most dangerous lagoon island I have yet seen, the whole of its southern range, from east to west, being a partially drowned reef, with an occasional rock studding it here and there. Two clumps of trees are at the south-eastern extremity, but they are insignificantly small, and the only traces of vegetation to be seen. A curling surf plays in-

cessantly upon the reef, but in thick weather, or towards night, it would not be discernible; it is an ugly place to make, and several wrecks have happened here.

June 16th. — A light breeze favoured us at daylight this morning, and we stood along the eastern side of Marutea, coasting it to the northward. About north-east, there is a boat entrance, and we lowered and pulled in. The tide was setting out like a mill race, but by the dexterous use of the steering oar, we avoided the breakers roaring on either side of us, and landed in safety. A white sand spit on the north side of the entrance forms the mark by which you may know it; and retreating with the line of coast is a grove of trees, very few of them being the cocoa-nut tree. We only fell in with eight or ten natives, all the rest being engaged in diving for mother-of-pearl shell, to work out a penalty inflicted upon them by the French government of Tahiti, for the murder of a Mr. Riccardi and his crew, who were killed at the island of Raroia (Barclay de Tolly Island) twelve months ago, and the vessel they were in plundered and burnt. The natives who committed the sanguinary deed affirmed that they only revenged upon Riccardi the cold-blooded murder of some of their own countrymen; for that, about six years ago, Riccardi wantonly ran down one of their canoes, by which piece of cruelty five lives were lost, and he also killed one or two others by firing at them with muskets. The governor dispatched the steam frigate *Gassendi*, with troops, to apprehend Riccardi's

murderers. They had dispersed, it appears, immediately after they had inflicted their savage vengeance, and had fled to different islands; but the relentless *pahi anahi* (fire ship) pursued them, nor abandoned the pursuit till she had them all in irons under hatches. They were tried in Tahiti; and some were hung, others doomed to work for the remainder of their days in irons, and the rest sentenced to pay 200 tons of mother-of-pearl shell, with the pearls therefrom, to the owner of the little vessel, which is more than ten times her equivalent value. But what had the natives of Marutea to do with the fine you will ask? Why, as there was but little prospect of the unhappy remnant of Raroians being ever able to accomplish the fine, the natives of Marutea were brought in as accessories after the fact, because, as is the wont of the migratory Paumutuans, they happened in their wanderings to touch at Raroia subsequent to the massacre. In like manner, some of the natives of Hikueru were brought in guilty of a similar offence, and were condemned to pay, the men three tons of shell each, and the women one ton and a half each. It was considered necessary to impose a check upon the natives, who are called bloodthirsty savages, and all the opprobrious epithets that language will afford; but what is the difference between their conduct and that of the most civilised nations upon earth? They sought redress for injuries received, and what does France? Murder in retaliation? No! she only hangs a few, and condemns others to a living death, for the purpose of furnish-

ing a salutary restraint. And in the wars of civilised nations, look at the thousands of individuals, guiltless of all offence, remorselessly slaughtered, because they happen to speak a language differing from that of their butchers. Look at the letters of marque granted to vessels called Privateers, instead of *Licensed Pirates*, commissioning them to burn, slay, destroy, or capture the lives and property of inoffensive traders innocent of any other crime than the heinous one of exchanging the products of different countries; and yet, because men with dark skins revenge upon those with white the atrocious cruelties inflicted upon them, they are denounced as being little better than fiends incarnate. We have made wholesale murder a trade, and have clad the destroyers in scarlet and gold. The words revenge and thirst for plunder are repugnant to our civilised ears; but let us be just, and we will find that it is only the enormity of our aggressions that precludes parallel between us and those whom we, in our arrogance, choose to entitle savages. But I digress.

Marutea is a most wretched place; its lagoon yields no edible fish, for although they may be taken in abundance, they are all poisonous, and a few Europeans have sustained frightful consequences from incautiously partaking of them. I have mentioned that the southern range of the island is a reef awash; and, in circumnavigating the island to-day, we discovered the whole of the western side to be of similar character. The yellow sand gleaming through the water, betrays the nature and ex-

tent of the reef, and embedded in it are scattered fragments of dark rock, which show themselves in the white surf, and stand the representatives of trees and bushes. On the northern range of the island there are clumps of vegetation, but the pandanus is the only tree that yields food, with the exception of the cocoa-nut, which is very scarce. The poor natives declared they had nothing in reservation to eat, and they found it exceedingly difficult to supply the cravings of nature. Their principal diet is the fish from a species of clam shell, called by them pāuā. They had various stacks of shell collected on account of the fine, but said "they had an obstinate large quantity still to collect, which would occupy them many months:" Pharaoh's taskmasters could not have imposed more bitter travail. By repeated observations, we made the island to be seventeen miles long, east and west, by eight broad. Marutea signifies "poisonous fish;" and Lord Hood's Island has also been termed Marutea by the natives, from the fatal effects produced by the fish that were caught in its lagoon. I noticed the appearance of Lord Hood's Island, March 6th, 1843. It is not inhabited.

June 17th. — Mutitunga, or Adventure Island, in sight. At seven A.M. we pulled with the boat into a singular gap in the reef on the north-west side, which does not communicate with the lagoon of the island. A vessel of 120 tons has been warped into this chasm, and moored securely to the land on either side, as it winds tortuously; but there is not room for two vessels to lie in it at once. The

southern boundary of the lagoon is a bare reef; the northern is elevated six or seven feet above the sea's level, and possesses a few groves of cocoa-nut trees. The natives informed us, that in the month of December last, their island was inundated by a great rising of the sea, and all their houses were flooded between two and three feet deep. This phenomenon, they say, took place when it was a stark calm. We wished to engage all the natives of this island for a diving expedition, but many of them having called at Raroia, for the purpose of planting cocoa-nuts, shortly after the taking of Riccardi's vessel, they had fallen under the ban thereby occasioned, and had been condemned to furnish so many tons of shell. Four of them agreed to come with us, but the others preferred remaining to assist their countrymen in working out their penalty. The position of the chasm we made in latitude $17^{\circ} 5' S.$, and longitude $144^{\circ} 23' W.$ The island is but small, and the inhabitants few. We left four pans with them, to assist in curing biche de mer, and they requested permission to send two to the neighbouring island of Tanier (Chichagoff Island), which we were graciously pleased to accord. From Mutitunga we "wended our devious way" to a small island not noticed in any published chart, called by the natives Tipoto; by our calculation it is in latitude, $16^{\circ} 48' S.$, longitude $144^{\circ} 16' W.$ It is a lagoon island, and does not exceed four miles in circumference, but its moiety of earth is well covered with the foliage common to the Paumotu Isles. Breakers extend for half a mile

off its southern point. On its west side there is a rent or crevice, which may be entered by boats, and affords safe landing, but there is no passage leading into the lagoon. Eight or nine miles north-north-east by compass from Tipoto, is another small island, also unnoticed on the charts, known as Tuanake. This is about eight miles in circumference: it has a boat entrance to its lagoon on the south-west side. We pulled into it, and I traversed the settlement on the south side of the entrance. The natives belonging to the place were absent, and we learnt that it was rare that more than five or six remained there at a time. The "dry spot," where man can "rest his foot," is rather more elevated here than at the other islands we have lately visited; and the graceful boughs of some young cocoa-nut trees, blending with the bright green foliage that rises above the glistening white sands, almost cheated me into believing that it had some pretensions to be entitled a picturesque place. It could boast a few tara pits, from twelve to thirty feet square, which must have cost the natives severe labour. They had cleared away the debris, left probably from the time the islands first emerged from the ocean, and a superstratum of crystallised rock, to the depth of four feet, when they arrived at a moist dark black subsoil, in which they had got their tara planted. It is a species with diminutive roots, but prized from the little variety of vegetable diet they are enabled to procure. East by south from Tuanake, and distant six miles, is situate the small island of

Hiti; it is likewise omitted to be noticed on the charts. It possesses a lagoon, but no harbour nor inlet to it.

June 18th. — We stood off and on the harbour of Tuanake last night, and early this morning landed six divers, with one of our overseers, and provisions, giving them instructions to work the lagoon, as it had never yet been dived in for commercial purposes. We then directed our course for the island of Katin, or Sacken Island, which lies north by west about ten miles from Tuanake. We made its south point, and coasted its weather side, within a cable's length of the beach, to its northern extremity. It exhibits the appearance of a sloping green bank of thick impenetrable scrub: there is scarcely a break in the verdant barrier for nearly twelve miles; and it is as regular in its formation, as an English hedgerow, its even line being only occasionally interrupted by the head of some sprouting cocoa-nut trees. The entrance to the lagoon is situate north-east by north: a vessel of considerable burden might take it, by watching the favourable turn of tide, but I cannot speak much in favour of it as a ship passage. We entered in our boat, the tide serving, but encountered a tremendous rolling swell. Not more than a dozen people, including women and children, were living upon the island. They had made an effort to cure biche de mer, which had not been particularly successful; but we paid for all they had collected, and left a boat with them and two pans, upon the understanding that the men in fine weather were to dive for

shell, and the women and children were to collect biche de mer.

June 19th. — Off the island of Raraka. This island is unnoticed in any of our charts. We made its north by west point to be in latitude $16^{\circ} 3' S.$ and longitude $144^{\circ} 44' W.$ Its south-west and southern sides are formed by a broken reef, bare in some places, and in others the sea was breaching over it. From the south-east to the west-south-west side, the ridge of debris appears well wooded, and for several miles as we coasted along it had the same hedge-like appearance noticed of Katin. The lagoon is deep, so we are told, and the reef surrounding it describes almost a circle between forty and fifty miles in circumference. The passage to the lagoon is on the north-west by west side: a protruding rock divides the entrance, forming two channels; that to the northward is narrow, but that more to the southward is sufficiently spacious for ships of burthen. We visited the settlement in the boat. The only natives on the island consisted of four families, who did not compose a population, exceeding fourteen in all. We thought they looked very miserable. The head man had gone to the neighbouring island of Kauchi (Carlshoff Island): he is one-armed, having lost his left brachial member by a voracious shark, who seized him as he himself was diving for fish upon the reef—the biter bit. Encouraged the poverty-stricken outcasts to collect biche de mer, as the island abounds with it, gave them a few necessaries, and left two pans. Noticed several groves of cocoa-nut trees remarkably stunted

in growth, some of them being laden with branches of fruit within four feet from the ground.

I have had occasion to speak of islands noted for their poisonous fish; and here we saw instances of the terrible effects produced by them. A fine large dog had every joint in his body paralysed, and every muscle relaxed and powerless; it was a distressing spectacle to witness its attempts at locomotion. The natives said it had been in this way for some time, and would never recover, but could not be persuaded that it would be an act of mercy to put it out of its misery. A cat was also affected in a similar manner; its hind quarters were dead, and appeared as if they had been crushed beneath a roller. The natives at Faarava assured us that the fish taken at one end of their lagoon were edible and salutary, but twelve miles higher up they were deadly poisonous. "How can you tell when they are poisonous?" I asked. "By their appearance, and from long experience." The dog and cat had been made ill by eating some of the rejected fish that had not been put out of their reach.

From Raraka we steered north-west, and made the weather side of the island of Kauchi, which resembles Raraka in being better wooded than most of the Paumutu Isles, and also in its circular form. Its southern belt of reef is bare of trees or vegetation, but we noticed rising sand banks along its whole extent; and, if they are not swept away by some devastating flood, seeds may hereafter germinate upon them. The opening to the lagoon

is exactly on the south-west side of the island, wider than generally, and free from hidden dangers; but, like all the passages of the lagoon islands communicating with the sea, the current sets in or out, according to the state of tide, with great velocity. We were fortunate in reaching the harbour a little after slack water, when the current favoured our entrance in the boat; but we found it expedient to keep as close to the breakers as possible, to avoid the rushing strength of the stream. The native settlement is on the south-east side of the lagoon, about nine miles from the entrance; and as the wind was directly from that point, we had a laborious pull against a chopping sea, and did not reach it till long after the sun had driven his chariot beyond the visible horizon. Kauchi rejoices in the unwonted luxury of a garden, and we strolled through quite a plantation of ninitas, which were thriving luxuriantly, melons, pumpkins, pine-apples, &c.; and attempts were making to cultivate the banana. The bunches of fruit, however, were of the most Lilliputian order; and not having reached maturity, I cannot testify as to their carrying out the old adage of being "little but good." Ten natives formed the island's complement. We left them two pans for curing biche de mer, as they say there is plenty of it in their lagoons, and regained the vessel at ten P. M.

June 20th. — At six A. M. the eastern side of Toau was in sight. This island is about twenty-five miles long, and stretches north-west and south-east; and the reef embracing its lagoon is studded

with clumps or islets of trees. No natives reside on it, as they say its basin yields none but poisonous fish. We made the lee end on the north side to be in latitude $15^{\circ} 47'$ S., and longitude $146^{\circ} 4'$ W. It has two ship entrances to the lagoon, one on the north-west, and the other on the south-east side.

At three P. M. we were close to the boat passage on the north-east side of Auura, and by our observations it is in latitude $15^{\circ} 40'$ S., and longitude $146^{\circ} 39'$ W. Our behaviour on the last visit had produced its effect, the natives had traded on the terms originally stipulated for; and the native in charge of the goods had collected 120 baskets of biche de mer, and parties were away in pursuit of more. We caused an additional supply of property to be landed, and then stood for the lee side of the island. It was dark when we reached the boat ravine in the reef, but our coming had been noticed, and a beacon fire was kindled on the beach to guide us. Our overseer had 200 baskets of biche de mer on hand, and almost every native on the island had entered into agreement with him. We left a good supply of trade for their encouragement, and returned to the vessel.

June 21st.—We narrowly escaped an abrupt termination to our cruize in the Fairy, as we found ourselves at one A. M., almost embayed on a lee shore. We had sailed faster than our reckoning allowed, and with a south-east wind we were off the south-east side of Rairoa. Had it not been for the brilliancy of the “silvery lamp of night,” we should probably have lost

the little schooner. At meridian we were abreast the weather entrance to Ráiroa, which is situated north by east, and intended entering; but the current was setting out with such force that we continued our way to the middle harbour. Here also we found the tide still [ebbing with great violence, and had to wait till past three P. M. before we dared venture to take the passage. We took the eastern channel, and in one spot had less than two fathoms water. After we had dropped our anchor, the chief told us it was thirty years since a vessel had last entered their lagoon. The weather harbour has a sand-bank in mid-channel, causing the entrance to branch like the letter Y. Both branches are accessible; a frigate might take the more easterly one. Most of the natives were dispersed about, collecting biche de mer for us.

June 22nd.—Took in twelve tons of biche de mer, more or less, and at four P. M. cleared the lagoon, whilst it was yet slack water, sending back our boat for wood, &c. The night proved beautifully clear, enabling us to run along the coast to the southward; and early in the morning of

June 23rd we again made the island of Matea. Landed and paid the natives who had been cutting timber for us. We then, gun in hand, struck across the island, the vessel running down to the lee side to wait for us. Any one on landing would conceive it impossible to scale the summit of the island; for the rocky sides incline forward out of the perpendicular, and offer nothing for the hand or foot to rest upon. Whilst wondering how we were to ascend, our guide

conducted us by a lateral crevice, imperceptible till you are in it, and a tolerably constructed path led us to the summit. Rugged masses of scoria lie heaped about, and fragmentary particles are scattered over the whole surface of the island. The land dips and forms a complete hollow, as I had imagined; and had the mighty throes of the convulsed earth been a thought less severe when Matea issued from its fiery womb, and entered upon atmospherical existence, we should have had another "low island." The inland hollow would have formed its lagoon; its boundary ridge would have furnished the detached patches of reef, more or less elevated; the gullies or chasms in the cliffs would have been passages or entrances from the sea; and, as is the case with most of the low islands, the southern range would have been awash, or nearly so: for, as before noticed, the land to the south slopes gradually to the sea. There is no anchorage off the island, and consequently not a fragment of coralline formation to be seen. This appears to me a refutation of the idea, that the Paunutu Islands are the work of insects. Matea forms absolutely one of the group, and there are what I term *crater-lipped islands* still to leeward of it.

An excellent road for native workmanship has been carried across the rugged interior of Matea, and a fine grove of cocoa-nut trees has been planted on either side of it. The soil is rich beneath the lava; but nature is left to her own vagaries—I did not see one inch of cultivated land. The tamanu tree is tolerably thick, which is the timber they had been cutting for us; but it is too small to be of

commercial value. We shot some fine wood pigeons in our stroll, hundreds of which we heard cooing in every direction, and a pleasant excursion of four or five miles brought us to the summit of the cliffs at the north-west bight. Our descent was rather arduous, the broken sides of a ravine permitting us to make saltant steps occasionally, and the vitrified points of scoria furnishing us with an occasional hand-fast; and as I was literally "stemming the way with my taffril," happening to hesitate where next I should put my foot, my companion, who was above, taking a lesson from my proceedings, shouted out, "Where caution marks the guarded way," making me a practical illustration of that line in the duet of "All's Well."

June 24th.—Becalmed; but the mere flapping of the Fairy's sails serves to propel her through the water two knots an hour.

June 25th.—Entered the harbour of Papeeti in the boat, and learnt the astounding intelligence that *another revolution* had taken place in France, and that Louis Philippe, abandoning his throne, had sought refuge, with his family, in England; many of the municipal guard were killed: thus "Time in its whirligig brings about its revenge." Queen Pomare, thou art in part requited; but, unhappily, this will not restore thee thine independent sovereignty, thy slaughtered subjects, nor the groves of cocoa-nut and bread-fruit trees, for ever destroyed. The news only arrived yesterday; the natives are amazed, the governor perplexed, and the soldiery in a state of insane fervour. "Vive la République!" is their

frenzied cry, and songs of republican burthen are shouted in every direction. The French are of a verity the greatest gamblers on earth, they would risk any thing and every thing for the sake of excitement. The demigod Louis Philippe is now spurned to the dust, and the governor of Tahiti is thereby placed in a peculiarly embarrassing position. The "République" was saluted with twenty-one guns. This did not suffice to allay the fever-heated excitement of the soldiery; they protested against the cool reception which the governor gave the glorious announcement, and insisted that a salute of one hundred guns should be given. The governor replied that "he was not the commander of the troops, and they must act according to their pleasure; but he was the commander of the shipping in the port, and from them he would sanction no other salute than the one already fired." The officers and men belonging to the troops appeared both drunk and delirious. Water is not more unstable than the French character.

CHAP. VIII.

Not being allowed to land the Fairy's Cargo in Tahiti, proceed to Raiatea. — Touch at Huaheine. — Discovery of more Intrigue and Double-dealing causes a precipitate Voyage to Fanning's Island. — Caroline Island. — Christmas Island; with an Account of some recent Wrecks upon it. — Fanning's Island. — Washington Island. — Washington Island believed to be one with Prospect Island, and Fanning's Island identical with America Island. — Palmyra Island; its singular Conformation. — Return to Fanning's Island. — The Death of a Native. — Penrhyn's Island; its supposed Identity with Bennett's Island. — Attempt of the Natives to capture a Schooner. — Join the French Frigate *Sirène*, which proceeds to Ana to adjust Differences and restore Order. — A shrewd Device, which produces Conviction. — Anchor in Tahiti on Christmas Day.

WE were not allowed to land from the Fairy the produce we had brought from the Paumotu Islands, as they are considered a portion of Pomare's dominions; the privilege of coasting being reserved for vessels wearing the flag of France. This is not the protection Pomare sought when the French usurped the mastery of her dominions: it was in keeping to say only vessels wearing the flag of France shall be permitted to coast; but the protectorate having been restored with the freedom of the port, I don't see why this uncalled-for and exceedingly vexatious regulation should be enforced: France can derive no benefit from it, and it is exposing us to an annoying impost, involving expense

and loss of time. The Fairy wears the flag of Raiatea, and to Raiatea we must go, to discharge and reload. How long will nations continue to shackle commerce with these preposterous enforcements?

June 26th.—Rejoined the Fairy, and stood for Raiatea.

June 27th.—Being close to the harbour of Huahaine, pulled in to deliver in person some despatches for the missionary resident. The place is not what it was previous to the French invasion. The natives appear to have deserted it; and the stumps of what once were stately trees, the empty space where once stood houses, and other evidences of violence and desecration, impart to it a ruined melancholy aspect. In our walk from one extreme end of the settlement to the other, we only saw a solitary native here and there, and our sudden appearance occasioned neither surprise nor interest. Reached Raiatea the same afternoon, and worked our way to the harbour of Huaru.

We were not destined to make any long stay, for we received a hint that another party was bound to Fanning's Island (an uninhabited lagoon island north of the equator), to intrigue with a cocoa-nut oil establishment we had formed there. It took us all the 28th and 29th to discharge and get ready, and on the afternoon of *June 30th* we sailed to check-mate our adversary, who has been "ploughing with our heifer;" the master of one of the vessels in our employ having betrayed all our operations, with the object, like the unjust steward, of securing to himself another situation if he should lose his employ with us.

July 4th. — Late in the afternoon sighted Caroline Island, formerly uninhabited; but we carried several native families there with pigs, fowls, turkeys, &c., to form an establishment for rearing stock. The settlement we have established is on the south by west side of the island, and as it was too dark when we reached it to pay a visit of inspection, we lay to till morning.

July 5th. — Caroline Island is a lagoon island, but its links of land are better connected, and possess a richer soil, than most of the islands of the Paumutu group. The south side of the island is densely wooded, and possesses a glorious grove of cocoa-nut trees — our inducement for forming the establishment. A smaller and an only other grove exists on the south-south-west side; the other variety of trees are those common to the Paumutus, but I did not notice the pandanus. Compared with the lagoon islands of the Paumutus, the lagoon is small to the extent of the island, which, according to our estimation, is from thirteen to fifteen miles in circumference. Its centre we made to be in latitude $9^{\circ} 56'$ S., longitude, $150^{\circ} 14'$ W. Our stock at this time amounts to between 100 and 200 fine hogs, fowls, &c., in quantity; our stock-men and women looked thriving and healthy, and had made three additions to their number; the young ones fat and squalling. It has been our invariable plan to spread as many fruit and vegetable seeds as we could amongst the islands, and now, at Caroline Island, they have more pumpkins, melons, ninitas, &c. than they can consume. Settled with our stock-men to date, and with twelve recruits

for the oil establishment, bore away for Fanning's Island.

July 10th.—Made Christmas Island. This island has been the scene of some recent wrecks: the Mozart Bremen whaler, with 4000 barrels of oil and a considerable quantity of bone, homeward bound from the Sandwich Islands, ran ashore and became a complete wreck in the end of December last. The crew were taken off by another vessel that happened to be in company, an American whaler. Her captain, with the genuine shrewdness of a Yankee, not being sure of his ground, dropped astern, leaving the other one to feel the way for him. Scarcely had the wrecked crew effected their escape, when the Maria Helena merchantman, under the Chili flag, laden with a valuable cargo, ran ashore, and was literally crushed to atoms. The passengers and crew were saved, but one of the latter was subsequently drowned in the surf. The Maria Helena was formerly the Averick whaler (see entry March 19th, 1845); and after Captain H—— had succeeded in putting her in thorough repair, he obtained a British sailing letter of protection for her, and under the name of Recovery, because we had regained her from the deep, we sent her to Valparaiso for sale, and I was now doomed to be “in at the death,” last scene of all,—and a melancholy one it was. The Mozart was wrecked on the east by north point of the island, and the Maria Helena in a bight about five miles further to the westward and northward. The island is egregiously in error on the charts, which occasioned the wrecks; and it is

a most dangerous one to make, no part of it being ten feet above the level of the sea. Nothing but a naked grey ridge discloses itself to the eye, save an occasional patch of low stunted scrub, scarcely distinguishable; and in the gleaming, or in the gauze-like light shed by the moon, a vessel would be ashore ere land could be detected.

A heavy surf was breaking off the Mozart wreck, too dangerous for us to incur the risk of landing; but we waited our opportunity, and landed at the scene of the Maria Helena's destruction. Two well erected tents remained standing, and the beach for upwards of a mile was strewn with fragments of the wreck. Set our people to work to collect any thing worth carrying away, and directed our footsteps across the island to gain the Mozart wreck. At the place where we landed a barrier-ridge of loose coral shingle has been thrown up. On surmounting this, you descend a few feet, and come to a flat of a dead level, extending for miles, as far as the eye can see, without a swell or undulation, and with scarcely even a bush to relieve the dreariness of the torrid waste. The pumiceous soil is meagrely clothed with a thin withered-looking species of grass; and we fell in with some herbaceous plants, new to us, having a pungent aromatic odour, in which my companion fancied his nose detected medicinal virtues. I have already disclaimed any pretensions to a knowledge of botany; and though I did fancy, on crushing the leaves of some plants, that they gave forth an odour very like that one meets with in

a chemist's shop, I am obliged to deplore the loss science sustains from my inability to describe them technologically. In our tramp we disturbed swarms of sea-fowl, protecting their young, or sitting on their eggs, gannets, boobies, noddies, kittilsakes, man-of-war hawks, curlews, sea-mews, and a variety of others. The eggs were carelessly deposited on the soil, without shelter of any kind, and the female would hiss and cackle at us as we approached them, and would even allow us to push them from their charge without their abandoning it. One bird we noticed from its peculiar cry and habits, it perforates the crustaceous soil, and burrows like a rabbit. In size not so big as a common house-pigeon, it yet deposits an egg as large as a small hen's. The ground was so full of its perforations, that we were continually breaking through; but whenever we approached near the eggs, the bird would utter a melancholy note, and whirl round our heads, using manœuvres to entice us away similar to those practised by the lapwing in England. We noticed also a land-bird common to the Paumotu Islands, and which I never remarked elsewhere. The natives call it titi; it is an elegantly formed little bird, rather larger than the lark, but not so large as the thrush, regularly mottled with a reddish brown colour. The little creatures were exceedingly fearless; they would alight at our feet, and if we chased them, would only run from us, or at most make a flight of a few yards. They appeared incapable of any long sustained flight, and the wonder is how they

first became tenants of these waste spits of the ocean. Ethnologists have been at work to account for man's appearance amongst the islands of Polynesia; now here's a nut for ornithologists to crack: I am entirely at a loss to conjecture from what country the wind blew that brought them there.

The wreck of the Mozart was one commingled mass. The tents erected by her people were in good preservation, and bore evidence of subsequent occupation by the crew of the Maria Helena. Provisions and water had been saved in abundance, and about six tons of water still remained in good condition; but the oil and bone, &c. was overwhelmed in one inextricable mass of wreck, sand, and coral fragments: and the beach for miles was strewed with empty casks, broken spars, and other fragments of the unfortunate craft. There is no water to be obtained upon the island, and it must have proved a most merciful dispensation to the Maria Helena's people, that so much had been saved from the Mozart, as, judging from appearances, I do not think a drop of rain has fallen upon the island since the disastrous events took place. But sailors are proverbially a light-hearted race, little given to reflection; and having no immediate fear of perishing from hunger or thirst, the wrecked crew of the Maria Helena converted their misfortunes into a scene of mirth. A painted sign announced the encampment to be Mozart Village, and nearly all the tents bore their respective signs. There was the Mozart Hotel, the Hôtel de France, the Traveller's Inn, &c.: and on the Hôtel de France was

inscribed, "Billiards;" and a notice in three languages —

"English spoken here.

Un Français parle ici.

Oune Espanol hable aqui."

There were also other notices to the public. I remember two: one was, "Lost, stolen, or strayed, a Bottle of Snuff. Whoever will give information of the same shall be ansomely rewarded. Apply at the Traveler's Inn." The other was headed by the figure of a whale-boat; and underneath was written, "Wanted, Six Young Men to go Thanning's Island. Apply at the Traveller's Inn." They had got a rudely constructed flat-bottomed vessel of twelve or fourteen tons burthen nearly completed, with which it is supposed they meant to try and reach the Navigator's Islands, as its only chance, if ever they succeeded in getting it afloat, was in letting it drift before the wind; but I deem it a happy circumstance they were saved risking the experiment. The departure of the company appeared as if effected in a great hurry, everything being abandoned; plates, and knives, and forks, on the rude tables, and clothes in the sleeping places, just as they had been last used. A book we picked up explained this. It was a book of mathematical exercises, in the German language; and on the titlepage, was written "Johann Frederick Sartorius, Bremen;" but the next possessor, in the large straggling fist of one more acquainted with the marline spike than the pen, tells us that it is

“George Macready’s Book, 1848:” and then follows, “Got cast away on Christmas Island, January 5th, 1847:” the latter date being erroneously inscribed from the badness of the pen, probably. There are sundry other entries, occupying much paper—snatches of fo’castle songs, attempts at writing Spanish, &c.; and in turning the pages, we came to an attempt at log-keeping. As the entries are one of the seamen’s accounts of the wreck, I here transcribe them to my Journal, *verbatim et literatim*.

“January 5th, 1848.

“I was cast away at Christmas Island about three o’clock in the morning; all hands was employed about half an hour before that, killing porpoises. I myself was at the helm an hour previous to that, anticipating the pleasures at the end of the voyage, little thinking that in one hour more the good old ship Maria Helena was to leave her bones here on this desolate island, where there is nothing but sand, and nothing to subsist on but boobies, and no water. As soon as the ship struck, the gentlemen passengers and some of the crew took to the boats, while the rest was employed getting out the launch before we cut away the masts. After we got the launch out, the remainder of the crew commenced packing up their clothes and their shipmates: thus every thing was carried on in the most proper order and discipline. Although there was plenty of liquor on board, I never remember seeing any one out of order. The first boat went

on shore got capsized; but after some difficulty, got safe on shore. The surf was very high, but by good management, before the ship broke up, we saved almost all the water and provision; and after we got all the provision ashore that we could get, we commenced building tents, expecting to remain here some months. So ends these twenty-four hours.

“January 6th, 1848.

“This day commences with all hands busily employed saving the bone, thinking if ever we should get off the island, it might be of some service to us. There was a great deal of growling about the work among the crew, as the most of them had considerable wages coming to them; but after a little fair talk and promises, it was all over. The next operation was to put all hands on allowance of water, at half a gallon a day. We rigged some water-awnings, expecting every day to see it rain, as the clouds looked heavy, but no appearance of any. Some said it must rain, as we were so close to the line; but others said no, that there was a curse upon us. Mr. Christie, passenger, and the second mate, and three men, went off on an expedition round the island to look for water. So ends these twenty-four hours.”

Here the entries cease, Mr. Macready having apparently condensed in these two days all the events of interest that occurred to his memory; and

in imitation of the log-books which, perhaps for the first time, had become unfolded to his inquiring gaze, closes each day's laudable attempt in true Nantucket style — "So ends these twenty-four hours."

At the end of the volume we discovered the following memorandum, in the same unmistakable characters.

"Friday, March 16th, 1848.

"Long-looked-for came at last. As one of our bold seamen was loafing along the beach and seeing what he could plunder, he espied a sail about ten miles off standing in shore, which proved afterwards to be the French sloop-of-war *Sarcelle* coming to our relief: she had a supply of provision on board for us. There was also another schooner left Honolulu two days before, which arrived the next day after the ship, with more provision, and for the bone which we saved." * * *

The remainder of the entry is torn off. The bone alluded to by Mr. Macready had been carried off with boats, and every thing else that was available; but our party had succeeded in rescuing from the encumbering masses of wreck, sand, and broken casks, some blades of bone, which appeared in good condition, although considerably abraded. Went aboard, leaving a gang ashore for the night to see what they could rescue.

July 11th. — People engaged all day at the wreck. Sent off three boat-loads of odds and ends.

Took a cruize into the interior; but did not penetrate more than two miles, as there was no visible termination to the sterile level, and the intense heat provoked great thirst. Disturbed hundreds of man-of-war hawks, who were guarding their young; and so dauntless were they, that I had to defend my face with my stick. The birds of the ocean must have some place away from the haunts of man to rest from their wanderings o'er the deep, and to retire during the season of incubation, or they would soon become extinct: these dreary wastes would almost appear to have been designed expressly for them. One of our men who strayed away last night in pursuit of eggs and birds has not yet returned.

July 12th. — On attempting to land this morning, we were caught in the rollers, which dashed the boat on the rocks with furious velocity, smashing its bows to atoms. The surf curled over us, but we all escaped ashore uninjured. Happening to be standing in the stern-sheets when the concussion took place, I was thrown forward with great violence, and got my shins well barked against the aftermost thwart; but this was all the personal damage that was sustained. The natives, knowing the awkwardness of white men in the surf, called out for me; and one was at my side in an instant, who gave me his hand to steady me against the drawback. The sensation when the rollers caught us was highly exciting; steam could not have propelled us more swiftly to destruction: and the concussion gave such a shock to my jaws, that all

my upper teeth seemed driven into my skull. Fortunately, to provide against accident, we had another boat ashore, or we should have been in a nice predicament.

The lost native had come back to his companions, but his sufferings from thirst had rendered him idiotic. Unaccustomed to roam on any thing but the narrow ledges skirting the Paumutu Isles, when he lost sight of the sea, reason and reckoning forsook him, and he wandered about with a vacant mind, till chance brought him in sight of the tents again. Our other boat got swamped and stove in endeavouring to put off to the vessel. We patched up the holes with tin over greased flannel, and afterwards contrived to send on board several loads of cask-staves, heading, &c., all much worn with the triturating action of the sea and land. To stimulate our natives to exertion, we were obliged to work all day ourselves amidst the wreck and rubbish; and whenever we turned away for any purpose, down they were on their beam ends: they had exhausted themselves by "seeing what they could plunder in the night." Whilst thus engaged personally in the manual operation of "wrecking," my attention was frequently arrested by the proceedings of the man-of-war hawk, the dastardly glutton!—it ill deserves its name, piratical hawk would be a more appropriate nomenclature. I would observe the gannet with its thick straight bill, bent on supplying its young, poise a moment in the air, and with lightning speed, dart beneath the surface of the water. If successful, it would rise with a fish in its mandible. But I had not

been the only observer; scarcely had the gannet risen from its submersion, when it became in its turn the object of attack: the man-of-war hawks, who had been on the "look out," would pounce upon him by twos and threes; and if poor gannet had got a fish, they would stoop at him till he disgorged his prey, when it became theirs. How the "pirates" managed in the division of their spoil I cannot determine; but all day long they could be seen watching and pursuing every solitary gannet that came within their ken. About three o'clock, seizing a favourable chance, I leapt into the boat, as in the event of her being rendered useless, I could never swim off to the vessel.

July 13th. — Summoned our people early on board, and coasted the island on our way to Fanning's Island. There is a sunken reef running round the island for a cable or two's length from the shore, having on it water from a foot in depth to four or five fathoms; this will account for the ridges of coral debris heaped up by the action of the waves. Where there are breaks in the reef, and the water is steep too, nothing but the bare sand is visible. By various sets of sights, we determined Christmas Island to lie nearly in a south-east and north-west direction. The south-east end we made in lat. $1^{\circ} 43' N.$, long. $157^{\circ} 11' W.$; the north-west point in lat. $2^{\circ} 8' N.$, and long. $157^{\circ} 37' W.$; and the west point in long. $157^{\circ} 42' W.$ The wreck of the *Maria Helena* lies on the east-north-east side of the island in lat. $1^{\circ} 48' N.$, long. $157^{\circ} 16' W.$ The line of coast then forms an inward curve to the

north-east point, which is in lat. $2^{\circ} 2' N.$, long. $157^{\circ} 27' W.$ There are two or three scattered cocoa-nut trees on the island, and on the north-west point there is a small grove of them. Before reaching the north-west point, we observed a boat lying on the beach, and hove to for the purpose of reconnoitring. It appears to have been the boat abandoned by Mr. Christie in his fruitless search for water. It was badly stove and useless; so did not attempt to remove it. There is an opening in the island on the west side, where vessels may anchor, and an inlet of the sea extends for several miles, but it is so choked with patches of rock; and layers of dead coral, heaped slab upon slab, that it is difficult for a boat to find a channel between them, and without a compass you might continue pulling round and round without making any progress. There is no practicability of working at the wrecks from the lee side of Christmas Island. Convinced of this, we bade it adieu, and wished it "a happy new year."

July 15th. — Arrived at Fanning's Island, which we made to be in the position ascribed on the chart to America Island. It is between twenty and twenty-five miles in circumference, and the only entrance to its lagoon is on the south-west side, in lat. $3^{\circ} 50'$ north, long. $159^{\circ} 22' W.$ It partakes in all respects of the character of the Low Islands of the Paumotu or Dangerous Archipelago, its cincture of rock, sand, soil, and coral, sending forth all the arboriferous and vegetable productions common to the Paumotu Isles. The cocoa-nut tree especially flourishes in great luxuriance, and in addition to

other vegetation, the arrow-root thrives well on the north-west side of the island. The lagoon is studded with shoals and reefs. Mother-of-pearl shell is found in its bed in small quantities, but the natives say the bottom is composed of such fine impalpable sand, that the least thing agitates it, and causes it to impart to the water a milky hue, which effectually destroys all power of observation. Some months prior to our forming the oil establishment at Fanning's Island, a man of Crusoe habits had taken up his abode there with his family, and, isolated from the rest of the world, had devoted himself to the rearing of pigs, depending on the chance call of any whaler for a supply of those necessaries which his habits of civilisation had rendered indispensable. His location is on the starboard side of the entrance to the lagoon, and ours is on that immediately opposite; and as we made our appearance, the rival flags unfurled their folds. The modern Crusoe calls himself an American; but as I observed, "thy speech betrayeth thee." I pass over the reasons assigned for his wish to seclude himself from his countrymen, for whether they be true or false, a life of labour and self-imposed exile might serve to atone for the errors of his youth. His wife is a Kanaka woman of the Sandwich Islands, and he has a large family of children and grandchildren. I agreed to find permanent employ for the son-in-law, and promised to forward books, &c. for the education of the rising generation. The old man, in gratitude, told me of a wreck he had heard of further to leeward; an American whaler, with 2200 barrels of sperm oil, had been cast away

at Palmyra Island. Nine or ten months had elapsed since the catastrophe; but as the island in question is not in the direct route for ships homeward bound, if the old man is not confusing some account he may have heard of Christmas Island and the wreck there, a probability exists that the wreck he speaks of remains undisturbed, with the exception of the change wrought by the elements. The old man could have no object in entertaining me with a gratuitous falsehood; and balancing the chances, we came to the conclusion, that the venture to ascertain the truth was worth the risk of a trial. Applied for volunteers for the service. All our men were willing; but selecting thirteen, and having given ample instructions and admonitory precautions against designers, on *July 18th* we cleared the lagoon, and on *July 19th* sighted Washington Island. The chart was grossly in error; its position by us is latitude $4^{\circ} 42' N.$, longitude $160^{\circ} 16' W.$ It is about three miles long, and rather more than a mile in width; elevated from twelve to fifteen feet above the level of the sea; and its surface presents an unbroken mass of vegetation. A deep verdant foliage forms the basement to columns of cocoa-nut trees, which rear their tall shafts in such serried ranks, the eye could not penetrate them. We endeavoured from the masthead to ascertain if any lagoon existed, and believe not. Surf breaks close to the beach all round the island; dangerous landing for boats. Green water runs off the west point, in a north-west by north direction, for nearly two miles, but we saw no

breakers except those on the sandy beach. Sailed over part of the green water: bottom was clearly discernible—white sand and patches of coral. Made no attempt at landing, from the uninviting aspect of the surf. Birds seemed the sole tenants of the island; they flocked around us in great numbers, and the beach was swarming with them—a certain sign of the absence of that carnivorous animal, *man*. In the same parallel of latitude with Washington Island, but eighty minutes further to the westward, an island is laid down on the chart called “Prospect Island.” We sailed to discover it, but saw no vestige of it; and I believe in its identity with Washington Island: the vivid freshness of the little isle, to some delighted eye that for a long time had been accustomed to nothing but the burning refraction of the torrid ocean, may have gained for it the name of “Prospect.” A chance cruiser’s chronometrical observations cannot be depended on. There is no question that America Island and Fanning’s Island are one; two names, but one fact.

July 21st. — Palmyra Island was in sight this morning, but in consequence of a calm, it was late in the afternoon before we effected a landing. We spent the two following days in search of the vessel reported to have been cast away here, but no signs of it exist, nor does the island appear to have ever before been visited by the foot of man. It is, without exception, the most singular formation I have seen. We landed on the east side, the vessel having suddenly shoaled her water when about two miles from the breakers observed upon the land. We hove to in six

fathoms; bottom white sand and coral. A ridge of breakers extends half a mile from the south-east point of the island, and a similar one runs off the north-east point, which help to form a concave crescent, within which the water was placid; but the island itself elicited our astonishment. We landed without difficulty on a flat contained between the two curving points of breakers, which had on it barely sufficient depth of water for us to track the boat a quarter of a mile, when we reached an islet, with its luxuriant foliage growing apparently from the very surface of the water; and we then discovered that Palmyra Island is more properly an archipelago of islets. A rocky flat, from six to eight miles in circumference, is covered, with water from ankle to knee-deep, save where it is studded with islets placed indiscriminately. The islets rise only a few feet above the level of the water, and are composed of grey crystal rock, with a super-surface of rich black mould, yielding a rank growth of grass, vines, and trees common to the tropics, the cocoa-nut and pandanus being amongst them. Some of the islets appear exclusively appropriated to the cocoa-nut tree; on others, a strong parasitical vine, with broad deep green leaves, has overrun the pandanus and other trees, and enshrouded them in its own peculiar livery; and when at a distance, it is hard to persuade yourself you are not surveying the ruins of buildings. On one of the eastern islets a remarkable tree stood distinct from the others like an obelisk. So regularly had the outline been formed from the base to the summit, by the close investiture of the smoothly.

overlapping leaves of the vine, that we believed it to be a monument raised by the wrecked people, until by landing we convinced ourselves to the contrary. Birds and fish alike were unscared at the presence of man; and, fairly or unfairly, I pursued one fish in the shoal water till I run him aground. Sharks were numerous, and so voracious that they attacked both the boat and the steering oar as we were pulling ashore. Birds were innumerable: and it being the season of incubation, I never witnessed such a scene in my life. You could not move your foot without crushing eggs; and the cries of the birds as they arose just above your head, and darkened the air, were deafening, and more peculiar than any combination of sounds I ever listened to. Green water extends off the south side of the island between two and three miles, and a distinct line of breakers runs from the south-west point about three quarters of a mile. A vessel might anchor in the bight on the south by west side, but she would have to warp into a berth, as sunken patches of rock lie scattered about with very little water on them: they were observed from aloft, but the sea was so smooth and still that they were unnoticed from the deck. On the west and north sides, the appearance is more that of one of the Paumotu Isles; the surf breaks on a strip of white sand, above which springs the green foliage. That we might have nothing to reproach ourselves with, we sent out thirteen volunteers to scour the island in search of any vestige of the wreck; they returned next day to the vessel, having seen no sign of man or his works. They reported occasional

chasms of deep water on the shoal flat, and brought us off two green turtle; and by the tracks they conceived the latter were numerous. From a series of observations, we made the island to be in latitude $5^{\circ} 51' N.$, longitude $162^{\circ} 10' W.$; the chart places it 20' further to the westward.

July 29th. — Again “let go” our iron in Fanning’s Island harbour. Our old hands were getting obstreperous, as their time had expired; so we ordered them to collect their goods and chattels, and prepare for taking their departure, as we intended taking them to their homes on the day after to-morrow. The vagabonds broke into open rebellion, and many of them swore they would not leave; but as they had latterly been of considerable injury to us, and at no period of their engagement had wrought according to the spirit of their agreement, I was determined they should not stay, if I had to fist every mother’s son of them. But I had to threaten them with cessation of pay, and all the pains and penalties of the law, before they would make any demonstration of packing up.

July 30th. — One of the natives died to-day, after a short illness of three days. He had been an athletic hale young man up to the moment of his being seized with sickness, when he at once became prostrate and powerless — helpless as a newborn babe. I did not hear until this morning that he was ill, and as soon as I was informed I hastened to see him. Poor fellow! death was already stamped on his lineaments. He had complained of oppression in the chest, and of pain at the back of the

neck and across the shoulders; but when I saw him he was past complaining, and had lapsed into a state of coma. His eye was glazed and sightless, his tongue dried and shrivelled, and all muscular power had ceased to exist. In the hope to stimulate the flagging current of his life, I recommended that they should breathe a vein in his arm; an incision was made, and a few sooty drops of the ensanguined fluid came sluggishly forth. I directed one of his countrymen to support him in a sitting posture; the attempt to raise him seemed to cause him pain, and with difficulty he gasped out, "atira ahoa!" (that will do, friend!). I signed for them to ease him down again, and with my fingers on his pulse, and whilst ruminating what could be done for him, the last throb of life ebbed away; and though my eye was intently bent upon his face, I could not detect the moment of the spirit's escape from the clod now before me, nor did any mysterious token announce that *eternity* had freed itself from *time*. An old man seated at the feet of the corpse was the first to announce the fact, but some minutes elapsed ere I could give credence to it.

July 31st. — We had to wait till long after sundown before the tide would admit of our leaving the harbour. There are no hidden dangers to encounter, and we got safe out with our living freight and their luggage. We have between sixty and seventy natives on board, including children.

August 8th. — In latitude 9° S., and longitude $157^{\circ} 50'$ W., Penrhyn's Island bore about four miles to the westward of us. It was blowing fresh, and

there was a heavy sea, so that we did not care about running to leeward to make a passing survey. Aided by observations from the masthead, we made it out to be a low lagoon island, ten or twelve miles long, with many of its broken patches or encompassing islets, densely crowded with coconut trees. From the absence of all birds hovering about its neighbourhood, we conjecture it to be inhabited. Our agent is of opinion that it is the same island he sighted on a previous return voyage from Fanning's Island; but as he had no chronometer, he then surmised it to be "Bennett's Island," which on the chart is in the same parallel of latitude, but nearly two degrees further to the eastward. It will not surprise me if it turns out that there is but the one island. Our agent was the next thing to becalmed off the north-east end of the island, and meditated going ashore, when he saw some canoes making towards him, full of natives armed with spears, and noticed other canoes outlying him, apparently with the object of preventing his escape. As he had only seven hands on board, all told, and they were without fire-arms, or defensive weapons of any description, they were for a short time in the most immense peril. One canoe, with ten men in her, had almost gained the vessel, when a breeze providentially sprung up to their rescue. Baulked of their prey, the natives thundered out shouts of exasperation and fury, and made use of threatening and indecent gesticulations. One fellow stood up in the bows of his canoe, and endeavoured to hurl his spear; but the jerking motion prevented his aim.

Even then they did not abandon hopes of capture, as they continued to give chase for nearly two hours. We did not delay to prove if it was the same island, as I had been suffering from a terrible attack of cramp in the stomach; and the remedies I had adopted had left me so debilitated, I was anxious to lose no time in getting to Tahiti. We found a strong current setting to the westward, three or four degrees on either side the equator, but stronger on the south side; for example, we were steering on a wind in a smooth sea, leaving a straight wake, heading south-east by south, and making no better than a south by west course.

August 14th. — A fair wind at last.

August 16th. — Ran into Huaru, the western harbour of Raiatea. Reposed for two days, and then started for Tahiti, which we reached 23rd, against a heavy head sea, and the wind dead on end.

Many complaints having gone in to the governor of the misconduct of the natives of Ana and other natives of the Paumotu Isles, who were behaving in open violation of all law, the governor determined on sending the frigate *Sirène* to restore order and the "rule of right;" and I was requested to go in the frigate, to represent the grievances we had been subjected to. On December 13th I went on board, as the frigate was getting under weigh.

December 20th. — Off Ana. The natives were somewhat astounded at our advent, as they were ignorant of our proximity till they saw the boats

in which we were about effecting a landing. A general meeting was convened, and the next day the natives assembled with their chiefs and judges to answer complaints and to prefer them. We had brought with us two of the native Tahitian judges, Taamu and Paete, to take part in the deliberations. Taamu, as senior judge, opened the proceedings by announcing the object of their coming, and appointed Paete speaker for the occasion. Various trials were entered into and disposed of, and two of the ring-leaders of misrule, Paiora and Iē, who had been notorious in their subversion of order and contempt for the constituted laws, were sent on board the frigate, to be dealt with in Tahiti. I then caused some men to be tried for breaking their agreement with us, and for injuring our business by misrepresentations and wilful falsehoods, putting us to much trouble and expense. The accused parties boldly denied the truth of what I asserted; declared that no agreement ever existed; and the very judge before whom the conditions of the agreement were entered into deliberately perjured himself. Upon this I produced the agreement, drawn out in the native tongue, with the signatures of the parties appended. One and all, with the jolliest air imaginable, denied all knowledge of such agreement; and even one of the attesting witnesses, a chief of inferior rank, joined them in their denial.

I felt myself in a pretty *fix*, and was at a loss what course to pursue; but Paete, the speaker, concealing the agreement behind him, called to the

chief man of the accused party. "You are sure," inquired he, "that you never signed the agreement?"

"Never!" was the unflinching rejoinder.

"Well, here's a pencil and paper, come and write your name here."

Not suspecting the trap, the fellow seemed rather proud at this opportunity of displaying his acquirements in presence of the hundreds that were assembled, and wrote his name with *an air*. Paete brought forward the agreement and compared the signatures, and they corresponded so exactly, that a Daguerreotype copy could not have furnished a closer resemblance. It was as if the two signatures had been governed by one and the same movement. The shouts of derisive laughter that followed this conviction humbled my jolly gentlemen to the dust; they were completely crest-fallen, and looked as if it would be by no means an undesirable occurrence if the earth would open for a convenient space to admit of their taking unobtrusive leave of the company. I was consulted as to what punishment I wished inflicted. I caused a homily to be given them as a guide for their future conduct, and contented myself with merely deducting from their pay the absolute money I had been compelled to expend on account of their wilfulness. My forbearance called forth unqualified approbation; and the court broke up for that day. On the following morning another grand convocation ensued, when Paete expounded the laws that had been collected, revised, and printed in the native tongue by the French Government; and

whilst this Lycurgus was in the midst of an eloquent exposition, arms and legs keeping time to the modulations of his voice, I betook myself to the frigate. In an hour or two afterwards, the whole party again reassembled on board, and we bore up for Tahiti, which we reached in time for those residing ashore to partake of Christmas dinner with their friends.

CHAP. IX.

Purchase a Vessel, and is bound for China.—Call at Faarava to take in Cargo.—An Elopement.—Pursuit.—Capture.—Punishment.—The Gift of a Piece of Land, and with it the Patronymic of the Donor.—Clear the North-north-west Passage from the Lagoon.—Pass over the Position assigned by Commodore Wilkes to Walker Island, and see no Sign of it.—Hawaii.—Observations on the so-called South-east Trades.—Maui Island.—Ranai Island and Morokai.—Oahu Honolulu.—Its Harbour.—Effects of the Discovery of a Gold Region in California.—Ministers of King Kamehamaha.—The People's Regard for Lord George Paulet.—Appearance of the Natives.—Saturday the Gala-day.—Native Houses, &c.—The Gold Fever excites the Fever of Desertion in the Crew.—Send the Vessel outside the Harbour.—The Vessel struck by a Whale.—The Weather-wise out again in their Predictions.—Speak a Whaler bound to the Sea of Japan.—Reflections on the Policy of the Japanese, &c.—Sail between Grigan and Pagon Islands.—Norie's Chart not correct.—Sail through the Bashee Islands.—A Hint to Mariners.—Reminiscences of Home done into Verse.

“Now fare thee well, mine only love,
 Now fare thee well a while;
 For I will come again, my love,
 Though 'twere ten thousand mile.”

“The waters, with their world, were all before;
 Behind, the South Sea's many an island shore.”

IN order to convey our island-produce to the Chinese mart, being unable to charter a vessel, we were constrained to purchase the Chili barque Ann, which

arrived here with stores for government, putting her under the protectorate flag, with the name of *Mary*, in compliment to my wife.

January 11th.—This day I took leave of my wife and family for an indefinite period, and sailed for the *Paumutus*, intending after loading to proceed to the Sandwich Islands, and to be guided as to what port I should then steer for according to the information acquired.

January 18th.—Worked close up to the south extreme of the island of *Faarava*. The facilities of ingress and egress to its harbours by vessels of burthen, had tempted us to erect stores upon this island, and to constitute it our depôt for the receipt of the produce bartered for at the various islands of the group. When opposite the southern entrance, we lowered to examine the passage. The current was setting out, and as the day was far advanced, we carried a native of the island with us, and returned to the vessel to await for the dawn of that which it is paradoxically asserted never comes — 'to-morrow.'

January 19th.—The wind was favourable, and after a re-examination of the passage with the boat, flood-tide having commenced, we ventured in with the barque, to the great admiration of the natives, who had never seen so large a vessel floating in their lagoon before. Just as we had cleared the most dangerous part of the passage, a smart squall of wind and rain met us slap in the teeth: the vessel heeled to the blast, and we could not see her own length beyond her; the helm was put hard down, but still our native kept crying out "ouai moa, ouai moa!"

(rocks ahead, rocks ahead). It was impossible for us to distinguish any thing, and in this uncertainty we made one or two short tacks and "brought up" almost in the same spot where I first anchored in the Fairy.

January 20th. — The man in charge of our station not having made his appearance, we got under weigh for it; it is sixteen miles off. As we are in south latitude, I suppose it should be called *lower* down the lagoon, *i. e.* further to the northward. No hidden obstacle now interfered with our passage, as the sun was favourable for our distinguishing the coral knolls dispersed at intervals, after we had passed the twelfth mile; they are not frequent, and by keeping more to the centre of the lagoon than we did in the Fairy, may easily be avoided.

Whilst engaged taking in the cargo, it transpired that a native whom we had employed to convey a letter to our overseer, had made off with another man's wife. Pursuit was given, and a party of men spent several days in search of the fugitives; at length they were captured and brought to trial. This was the third time that the parties had committed a similar breach; and as they had nothing to say in their defence, the man was fined in the penalty of ten pigs, and the woman in forty fathoms of cloth. As neither of the parties sentenced possessed, individually, a tithe of the value of the fines they were mulcted in, the relatives of both were called on to make good the deficiency, and the adulterous woman was ordered to return to her husband. She positively refused to comply with the latter part of the

sentence ; and, owing to her contumacy, a tree was felled by her judge, and a rude pair of stocks quickly constructed, into which one of her legs was thrust, and she was told she would be kept there till she consented to submit to the lawful rule of her lord. This pleasing announcement she received by advising the judges, “that in such case they would have to keep her there till she was rotten, as she never would return to her husband.” Some thatch was raised over her to protect her from the sun and rain, and she really appeared quite contented with her situation, notwithstanding she had to undergo the jeers and taunts of her relatives, who, as the fine fell wholly upon them, wanted to know “why she did not yield up the clothes from her back?” The frail one was by no means in the young and skittish hey-day of her blood, and the partner of her folly was well advanced in life, so that I wondered what “riot in her veins” could have tempted her astray : but when I saw her husband, the wonder ceased ; for imbecility and malicious devilry were depicted in every line of his puckered face. I remonstrated against keeping the woman confined in her cruel position, and suggested that, as she and her husband could not agree, the best way would be to let the fines be paid, and then divorce them. But to this the husband would not consent ; and the judge intimated, that “white men had prescribed their laws, and why should I reproach them ?” and they handed me a printed copy of the code furnished by the missionaries. So the poor woman was kept in the stocks until the day I

paid off the natives who had been employed in shipping the cargo, &c. All this time the husband was staying in a house only a few yards from the stocks, waiting till he received the fines, which I suppose he got when the men were paid. He then started for the weather harbour, where he resided, and his wife was put into another canoe that followed shortly after, to be kept, I presume, till another opportunity offered to tempt the crafty old scoundrel to extort fines.

As the natives are a fickle uncertain race, apt to play tricks with those whom they fancy in their power, I asked them to sell me a piece of land, in order that we might erect substantial buildings to store any produce we might collect. A long series of debates followed my request, and night after night we could hear the orators discussing the question. One evening in particular, when I had gone ashore to bathe, they commenced the subject in my presence; to terminate further discussion, I told them they could do as they pleased, but if they would not lease or sell a piece of land,—land utterly unproductive and useless to them,—I would bring no more property to their island, but would seek some other. At the same time I pointed out that their island yielded no produce that they could barter for articles of clothing, or other things they required; and that our presence amongst them, with variety of property, much of which would certainly go to them in exchange for labour, ought to render them too glad to give us land on any terms; nevertheless, it rested entirely with themselves, and I should trouble my head no

more about the matter. In the morning I was told that a piece of land had been marked out for me, but no payment would be received for it. A man who had selected me as his taio, or friend, had made me a present of the land; and, in accordance with an early aboriginal custom, had also given me his name and assumed mine, so that I now rejoice in the appellation of Titeri. This is a stroke of diplomacy on the part of Titeri the veritable, much to be admired. If I had given him any stipulated amount of property, his relations of the twentieth remove would have come in like wolves for their share of the prey; and others who received no benefit would have borne him feelings of envy and jealousy: all this he made me sensible of, that I might govern my gifts to him so that his own immediate family should receive the chief benefit.

February 4th.—Having taken in all the cargo ready for us, at seven o'clock A.M. we lifted our anchor, and by eleven o'clock A.M. had cleared the north-north-west entrance to the lagoon. The tide had commenced running in, and although we had a five-knot breeze, we found difficulty in stemming it. On the route from our station, we passed two or three treacherous sunken knolls, barely perceptible, and only distinguishable by a pale green shimmering of the water; but with a careful look out, to those accustomed to lagoon navigation there is no hazard, as there is room to work vessels of any tonnage, and the north-north-west outlet is the most spacious and the best of all the passages I have seen amongst the islands of the Paumutu group.

February 19th.—This day, at two P. M. we were in latitude $3^{\circ} 56'$ N., and longitude $149^{\circ} 10'$ W. We passed over the position assigned to an island by Commodore Wilkes, of the “Younited States of Amerikey’s Exploring Expedition,”* and called in his chart “Walker Island.” If it was seen by him, it was not inappropriately named, as *Walker* it is to all intents and purposes; nor could we, from the foretop-gallant-yard, in any direction see sign or token of it.

February 28th.—“Never, whatever may be the progress of the sciences, will the *savant* who is conscientious and careful of his reputation, speculate on a prediction of the weather:” so says Monsieur Arago, no mean astronomer, and I have had ample proof in my experience, how idle such speculations are. We received reiterated assurances on leaving Tahiti, that we should have fine *south-east trades* to carry us to the Sandwich Islands, and were advised to keep to windward of the group, to escape baffling winds and calms. It was confidently predicted that we should make the passage in fourteen or fifteen days; but what has been the result? Ever since leaving Faarava we have been close hauled upon a wind, and in spite of every effort, we could not weather Hawaii, which is the largest and most weatherly situated of the islands. We made the south-east side of it this morning, and the prospect before us was very beautiful, not a cloud shaded its glories; it rises with a majestic sweep from the ocean, till its summit, at the height nearly of 14,000

* Genu-ine Yankee euphonism.

feet, is rounded into a crescent or crown of snow. This was the Great Mountain, Mowna-roa-loa, and over its eastern shoulder we could discern the snow-capped peaks of Mowna-keah the White Mountain. Not a tree is to be seen, the green sloping sides, forming a wide stretching graduated descent, like the verdant banks of a lawn, till lost in the sea. The south-western view is not so grand; it wears a bleak aspect, such as Blackheath would assume if suddenly elevated.

I don't believe in the existence of the south-east trades: my experience has shown me, that south of the equator within the tropic, we are more likely to have east by north to east-north-east winds, than easterly winds with southing in them,—that is, in the Pacific. At present, after having been twenty-four days from port, we are luxuriating in a calm.

March 1st.—We flapped lazily along the west and north-westerly sides of Hawaii, which are still more broken and sterile in appearance; mountainous peaks capped with snow displaying themselves occasionally, as thick clouds rolled away, and deep sombre-looking valleys, shut out by the shadow of the mountains from the light of the sun: not a tree could we *distinguish*. Subsequently, we passed the islands of Maui, Ranai, and Morokai. The first is bold, and appears to be two islands joined by an isthmus, like Tahiti; Ranai is small and clump-shaped; and Morokai is a long outstretching island, of no great width, bold and mountainous at its eastern extremity, but shelving in a westerly direction, till it appears to have exhausted its powers of tension.

March 2nd.—Towards evening we closed in with Oahu. Its harbour, called Honolulu, is on its south by west side. As we drew nearer, this island seemed to speak more plainly of volcanic combustion: hills and peaks are justled together; rocks and islets detached from the main; and vallies resembling the basins of craters,—and still not a tree to be seen. Diamond Head, on the eastern side of the harbour, is an excellent landmark to guide you to it. At a distance it appears like a detached point, but it joins the main by a curving neck; and on closer examination, you may imagine it to have been thrown up in a liquid state, but becoming rigid, its interior had bubbled over, and rolled in broad sheets to the sea, leaving scarped surfaces now covered with the moss of ages. On rounding this singular point, we obtained sight of the shipping in the harbour, and soon after the pilot came on board, and we dropped anchor in the roads. A flat reef runs out for a mile or two, in some parts nearly awash, and in others covered with water from two to five feet in depth. Through this reef there is a winding inlet, terminating in a basin, possessing from three to six fathoms water; and this is Honolulu Harbour. Without the reef there is anchorage in any thing, from seven to thirty fathoms, but the holding ground is not good; buoys are placed along the channel, but I would prefer trusting to the practical skill of the pilot. When the wind is scant, but of a leading nature, or in total calms, the pilot stations from thirty to forty men on the reef at the edge of the channel, and by aid of ropes they track vessels in. I

was rather surprised at the extent of the town, if disappointed at the commodious nature of its haven. It possesses many excellently built houses, and its streets cross each other at angles, forming irregular squares, — trapeziums, I believe, the learned would call them. At the back of the town a crater-like hill rears its head, termed, from its fancied resemblance, the Punch Bowl — a rare bowl for the devil to sup liquid fire from.

I saw two sickly groves of cocoa-nut trees; but there is an entire absence of the rich verdure and luxuriant foliage which renders the scenery of the islands south of the equator so fascinating. The land, too, is swampy in the valley, and I hear that rheumatic complaints are very general. The islands are just rallying from a dreadful visitation, which had decimated their population. The United States frigate, Independence, had carried the measles to them about three months prior to our arrival, which had swept the natives away in shoals, as the measles were succeeded by the whooping cough, and other incidental diseases. One of the missionary residents apprised me, that at the island of Morkai, which had suffered least from the sickness, one out of twelve of the inhabitants had perished; but at the other islands the visitation had been more dreadful; and from an approximate calculation, it was estimated that not less than 10,000 natives had been carried off by the baleful disorder. Our appearance amongst the Indian race is more direful in its consequences than the fabled shadow of the upas tree.

I can readily believe that, in fine weather, many

beautiful excursions may be made in Oahu, as it possesses all the elements of savage grandeur in sea and mountain, precipice and rocky fall; but the weather was unpropitious, and I dared not venture on any distant jaunt.

Judging from details that were furnished me, I imagine that for the last few years as much business has been transacted at Honolulu, as at any place of its size upon the globe; but latterly, within seven or eight months, a rush has been made to California, in consequence of the discovery of a gold region of unknown extent, and the islands in the Pacific are emptying themselves of their white population to flock thither. Rumour after rumour reached us in Tahiti, but we were unwilling to credit the reports. At length parties appeared, bringing with them their swags of the precious metal, having made their "eternal" as the Yankees called it, and bound to their respective homes to enjoy it. The sight created a "*gold fever*," and every one who could muster sufficient to pay his passage commenced packing up for the land of El Dorado. The tales in the Arabian Nights are put to shame, and poor Dick Whittington's speculation as to the streets of London being paved with gold, are more than realised. The immense sums of gold that are reported to have been taken are incredible, and still the cry is, that not one half the truth is known. Both whites and browns are flocking from the Sandwich Islands; and the impossibility of procuring labour at San Francisco for the ordinary purposes of life, is such, that day labourers are receiving ten dollars per day, when they will con-

descend to work; cooks, on board vessels plying up the river Sacramento, 150 dollars per month; teamsters 200 dollars per month, and their board; and every thing else is in the same outrageous proportion. The stores in Honolulu that were glutted with goods previous to this wonderful epoch are now emptied, and merchants are homeward bound with realised capital. The most extravagant prices, are asked; and even to the immaculate Hudson's Bay Company's store the contagion has spread, their servants demanding the same ratio of prices ruinous to visitors not coming from San Francisco. I remonstrated playfully with a pale flat-faced Highlander in charge of the store, against his putting on the *screw* so powerfully: "By Jove," said I, "it isn't the screw your applying, but the hydraulic press. Sir George Simpson has announced to the world, that the Company is content with reasonable profit over cost and charges; but here you're charging fifty per cent on the wholesale prices over what we ask retail in Tahiti; I think I must undeceive the world."

"Do your best, ma friend; ye may tak' it or leave it, I don't care a farthing," was the conciliatory rejoinder; and Donald thrust his hands deep into the pockets of that garment proverbially unworn on the heather of his native hills, and balanced himself on his toes and heels, with an air of unflinching determination and satisfied self-importance.

"There's one part of your polite intimation quite unnecessary," replied I, "for I suppose I may retain my money without requiring your permission to do so; and I will assuredly want your goods before I

pay the exorbitant price you ask for them:" and with this I turned away thinking of the old proverb, "Put a beggar on horseback," &c.

I was desirous of seeing King Kamehamaha; but of late he has been, from interested motives, surrounded by his advisers with such ridiculous state ceremonies, that I could not sacrifice my own self-respect by going through the necessary forms to obtain an interview. He has for minister of foreign relations, I am told, a British subject, who has renounced fealty to his own country, and sworn allegiance to the Kanaka king. On hearing this, memory recalled that passage in "Tom Cringle's Log" where Aaron Bang, I think it is, pointing to one of the noble trees in Jamaica withering in the embraces of a pernicious vine, makes the remark, "A Scotchman hugging a Creole;" and verily I believe that the sap of Kamehamaha's tree, will one day become exhausted by the parasites that feed upon it. For minister of finance, poor Kamehamaha has got a citizen of the United States, likewise a forsworn man, who quitted the compounding of drugs and the missionary cause for the keys of the treasury and affairs of state. He is at this moment under impeachment for malversation; but he has acquired such ascendancy over the king's mind, that it is believed he will escape from the charge. "In the multitude of counsellors there is safety," but the unhappy king appears to have fallen amongst thieves.

I had no opportunity of ascertaining what the inclinations of the chiefs were, but the feelings of

the mobocracy are strongly in favour of Lordi Shorge Pauliti.* They declare it was very good for Lordi Shorge to take the islands, and express their disgust at the subsequent conduct of Admiral Thomas: nor do I wonder at it, as the poor natives under the present administration, notwithstanding the poll-tax, land-tax, and other taxes, are compelled to work so many days in a month gratuitously, for their king and chiefs. This tax may be commuted by the parties paying one or two rials for each day he is called upon; but as the Irishman said, "Pigs and potatoes are plentiful in Ireland, and fowls might be had for sixpence a piece, but, faith! where were the sixpences to come from?"

The Sandwich Islanders cannot compare with the Tahitian race, in personal appearance or carriage; they have a downcast and dog-sort of look with them that well might become a land of serfs. Some of the better sort have been educated by the missionaries, but I could not learn that any of them had influence in the councils of their country. All posts of importance are held by the whites, whose dictum without doubt holds sway; and, ere many generations have elapsed, it is my opinion that the white race, like Aaron's devouring rod, will have swallowed up the aboriginal tribes.

Saturday is the natives' grand gala day, and every one that can sport a horse is sure to be mounted. The women ride astride, and with the gay colour of their peculiar dress present an exceedingly picturesque

* Lord George Paulet.

appearance. When about to indulge in equestrian exercise, they wear a wrapper, called a tihei, generally of some bright colour, fastened round their waists, outside their gowns, similar to the pareu of Tahiti, only it is double the length: after mounting the long drapery is twisted round their legs, and the ends flutter on either side the horse. Some of the girls wear many-coloured ponchos, and round straw hats, rakishly bestowed! on one side the head; and to see a bevy of these damsels fearlessly galloping along the densely crowded road is quite an exhilarating spectacle.

The native houses are of simple contrivance, adapted to the climate and country. The skeleton frame is composed of light rods lashed together, and sides and roofs are thatched in with a species of wiry grass procured from the marshy districts. At a distance they look like so many haystacks, for they exactly resemble them in form. I occupied one of these unceiled grass houses, and enjoyed my novel abode: it was from thirty to forty feet square, and divided into two compartments by a folding curtain; and was one of a lot called "Collingwood Row," from the officers of the Collingwood having engaged this quarter. There is not a question as to the feeling entertained towards the British by the people; and I cannot refrain noting a circumstance in illustration of it. I requested the native owner of the grass house, who spoke English, to procure me some trifles which came to six dollars, and as I had no money with me, told him I would repay him when I had an opportunity of going on board. As it

happened I did not go near the vessel for a day or two, and the man became anxious for his money. "What the devil do you take me for?" said I, pettishly; "do you know I am an Englishman?" The fellow beat a hasty retreat, and I heard him telling the others outside, in tones of great satisfaction, that I was "Ingerish! Ingerish!" Nor was I again troubled with any importunities, but, on the contrary, any thing I required was obtained for me without scruple.

I was noticing to one of the foreign residents the great scarcity of trees in Sandwich Island scenery; but he assured me, that, instead of Hawaii being the lawn-like grassy slope I had imagined it, there were immense, and nearly impenetrable, forests of heavy timber on its bosom, at the altitude of from 2000 to 5000 feet from the level of the sea. It was distance that "lent enchantment to the view." But, anyhow, timber is scarce enough, and dear enough, at Oahu. Notwithstanding these inaccessible forests, firewood for culinary purposes fetches as high as ten and twelve dollars a chord.

We had been compelled to bring the *Mary* into the harbour, and in consequence, three of our men deserted for the California "gold diggings;" and two thirds of the crew applied for their discharge. The consul gave us a hint to be off as soon as possible, frankly declaring that the temptation to the men was so great, that he had it not in his power to restrain them, or to prevent their deserting. The captain took the vessel outside at once, on the morning of March 10th, and I joined him in the afternoon by a shore boat.

March 11th. — This evening we were somewhat startled by a whale breaching from underneath the vessel. The unwieldy monster struck the rudder as he hove his leviathan bulk to the surface of the water, and communicated a shock throughout the floating fabric. It was fortunate for us that the monster did not meet us "head on," or we might have shared the fate of the *Essex*, an American whaler, which was breached at three times by a whale, and was literally crushed in by the irresistible might of the infuriate king of the deep. Two souls only escaped to tell the tale. It is supposed that it was a bull whale, who fancied he was attacking one of his own species. At the season when the male seeks the female, they are exceedingly fierce, and engage in desperate conflicts. Our friend "spouted" close under our stern, and made off in a deuce of a hurry, probably as much astonished as we were by the encounter; and had he met us at an angle, he would have carried away our rudder braces and pintles, and marred our journey for a while.

April 7th. — What weather we have had! We naturally concluded that, on leaving the Sandwich Islands, all chance of foul winds would cease, and that we should have nothing to do but to roll before favourable breezes; and such were the predictions of the weather-wise at Oahu. But nature appears to have put herself out of the way, lest I should have any doubts as to the fallibility of human knowledge. From Faarava to the Sandwich Islands, on either side the equator, we had an unintermitted

continuation of winds more or less northerly; and now, being in the latitude assigned to the north-east trades, we could expect no other. Vexatious enough, we have had to contend with a succession of southerly winds with westing in them, and in fourteen days did not accomplish a fair three days' run. We have been rather more favoured the last seven days, and to-day, in latitude $18^{\circ} 36'$ N., and longitude $156^{\circ} 40'$ E., we spoke the *Champion*, of Edgar Town, an American whaler, bound to the inland sea of Japan.

The Japanese have hitherto enforced the most prohibitory regulations with respect to intercourse with foreigners; and so jealous have they always proved to innovations of any character, that crews of junks unhappily carried out to sea, and rescued by the ships of other nations, have not dared to return to their country. The policy of the rulers of the empire is evidently to let their weakness prove their strength; preferring occasional sacrifices of their own people to the risk of unsettling the minds, or disturbing the habits of the country generally, by the introduction of fashions or ideas borrowed from foreigners, or countries where greater liberty exists. Much has been conjectured, but little is truly known, of the interior of the kingdom; but the time seems to be approaching when we are likely to learn more about it: Captain Colt tells me, that in the last whaling season several vessels made successful voyages in the Japan Sea and Gulf of Tartary, and more than 100 ships were bound there this season. In such a fleet it is probable that incidental misfortunes will

occur; and should ill-treatment be experienced at the hands of the Japanese by the crew of any wrecked or disabled vessel, it will probably lead to belligerent inquiry or interference. "Coming events cast their shadows before." Has the dread of foreign intercourse been an ominous foreboding that the restless pale faces were one day to subjugate their kingdom? And is the evil, which they have spared no precautionary measure to avert, on the point of being brought about?

April 12th. — At sun-down, we knew we were not far from the Ladrone, or Mariana Islands; but being ignorant of the nature of the islands, and of the passages between them, we hove to till daylight.

April 13th. — In latitude $18^{\circ} 30'$ N. we passed between Grijan and Pagon Islands, and saw the outline of Alamaguan to the southward of the last named. The islands are small, but bold, and may be seen at a considerable distance in clear weather. They are by no means accurately laid down in Norie's chart of the Pacific (our only guide); the nearest points of Grijan and Pagon Islands are actually between thirty and forty miles asunder, and the course we steered carried us nearly in the centre of the channel, if any thing, nearer to Grijan. There are no hidden dangers, and, by knowing your latitude within a handful of miles, a vessel may venture to run in the darkest night. We were too distant to make any observations of the soil: Grijan Island appearing a barren clump-like projection, boldest at its south-eastern extremity. The other two were conically peaked.

April 29th. — At seven A. M., in latitude $20^{\circ} 55' N.$, sailed through the Bashee Islands. We have had to fight our way this voyage against light winds, baffling winds, and calms. We wished to pass between Orange Island and Grafton, or Monmouth Island; but the wind headed us off; and, with a light wind, we took the passage between the second and third islands north of Orange Island. It is between ten and twelve miles wide, and clear of dangers. Eight of the islands were in sight. Orange Island is long, and flat-topped; Grafton and Batan are bold and lofty; the others are small, inaccessible, rugged-looking bluffs, of the same character as the Poor Knights of New Zealand, and may be distinctly recognised at a distance of thirty or forty miles. As we approached the Bashees, they gave me the idea of a wall having connected the island of Luzon with Formosa; the passages resembling gaps, broken by time, in the connecting barrier. We experienced a strong current setting to the north-west, which caused the water to dance again, as we entered the seas of the Celestial Empire. Judging from appearances, I should not hesitate to take the first passage that presented itself; nor would I recommend the mariner reduced to run to be too easily alarmed at the appearance of breakers. The current sets with such rapidity that I can readily believe, in hard blowy weather, it would, in the comparative narrow passages, give rise to the surmise of breakers. The sea was so tranquil when we left the Pacific Ocean, that, far as the eye could range, no breakers

could be detected, excepting those upon the shore. On getting forty miles to the westward of the Bashees, the wind veered to west by south, and we could not lay better than south. We were moving through the water two or two and a half knots; but the current kept us nearly stationary.

Sad to me was the hour
 When I started forth to roam,
 When I left my blooming flower,
 And my little bud at home.
 My flower droop'd — the tear
 Bedimm'd her loving eye;
 Our little bud, so dear,
 Lay sleeping placidly.
 Sad to me, &c.

Her arms around my waist,
 Like tendrils of the vine,
 So lovingly embrac'd;
 What parting grief was mine.
 I smooth'd her raven hair,
 Controll'd the rising flood,
 And to her tender care
 Bequeath'd our new-form'd bud.
 Sad to me, &c.

Still, still I could not part,
 My soul was loth to go;
 Still yearn'd to her my heart —
 The rising tear would flow.
 The sorrow of that hour
 Could ill repress the flood,
 That saw me from my flow'r
 Torn, and pretty little bud.
 Sad to me, &c.

CHAP. X.

Opens with a Lyrical Expression of Sentiments.— Contrary Weather continues.— Speak an English Barque.— Sight Pedro Branca.— Fishing-Junks.— Boarded by a Pilot.— Reaches Hong Kong.— The Town and Port.— Observations on Conloon.— Burial-places of the Natives.— A Trip to Macao and Canton.— Tiger Island.— River Population.— Canton.— The Boat-house.— The Women.— A Glance at one of the superior Class.— Two Surmises as to why the Chinese shave their Heads.— Costume of the People.— Inferences why the Natives of Polynesian Islands may derive their Origin from the Asiatic Continent.— Religious Disposition of the Chinese.— Conversation with a Chinese Artist.— The English Jargon of the Country.— Cumsing-moon, our highest Opium-receiving Station near Canton.— Remarks on the illicit Trade.— A Fracas at Macao.— The Governor in Fault.

I CLOSED my last entry with a simple ballad portraying reminiscences of home, and I will prelude this one by a lyrical expression of feelings now present.

Though separated from thee, love,
 To rove o'er boundless space,
 Thine aspect's ever near me, love,
 Thine image still I trace.
 The hurtling blast may hurry past,
 The sea in wrath may rise,
 The lurid ire of lightning's fire
 May flash and rend the skies;
 Still thou art ever near me, love,
 Thy last fond kiss is warm ;
 The heavens above will hear thee, love,
 And shield me in the storm.

And when I tread a foreign soil,
Let other fair ones smile,
In vain for me they spread the toil,
My true love to beguile.
My plight was given before high Heaven,
Who sanctified the oath,
And to us gave a living pledge
To seal the bond on both.
Though separated from thee, love,
To rove o'er boundless space,
Thine aspect's ever near me, love,
Thine image still I trace.

May 1st. — How singularly contradictory to every thing we have heard or read of the route *to* China has this passage proved: we barely managed to get clear of the Bashees, when the wind, what there was of it, introduced itself to our teeth. Now it is a clock calm, “and not a breath disturbs the deep serene.” We have drifted considerably to the northward. Yesterday the south point of the island of Formosa was in sight: its outline was high and broken, but the dim shroud of distance invested it, and to our observation it was but as a nebular tracing in the air.

May 5th. — We have lazily flapped along, averaging two knots since my last date, and the sea has been so tranquil that a soup-plate sent adrift would have scarcely filled. Last night we saw several junks standing to the southward, and this morning we spoke the English ship *Chieftain*, bound to Amoy, last from Hong Kong, the port I had resolved on going to. Shortly after parting company, we fell in with a flect of fishing-boats, and

at noon we rose Pedro Branca, which, as its name implies, is a white rock. It may be approached without danger, the water being deep in every direction. Its position has been determined, from a series of observations, to be lat. $22^{\circ} 19' 30''$ N., long. $115^{\circ} 7' 45''$ E.: it is a small rock, but may be seen at a distance of ten or twelve miles. On first sighting it from the eastward, it might be mistaken for a ship under full canvas, but on getting it to bear due north, it appeared rent in two. In passing the fishing-junks, I was struck with the general resemblance they bore, with their mat sails, to the canoes used by the natives of Polynesia. I have always held the belief that the islands have been peopled from the Asiatic continent; and it is equally my belief that the native races of North and South America are indebted to the same origin, for there is nothing in their appearance to indicate the Ethiopian blood.

The junks fish in pairs, extending their nets between them. We could not ascertain the sorts of "prey they were ensnaring." The waters were not at all troubled, and we could not tell by the cursory glance we had at the nets, whether the fish were taken in the meshes, or how. The main-is dimly visible, hilly, broken, and mountainous.

May 6th.—Amid a cluster of islets and islands promiscuously scattered about, rugged, barren, rocky, and with not a vestige of a tree to be seen, when about twenty miles from Hong Kong, we were boarded by a man from a sampan, who produced credentials from various shipmasters, testifying to his abilities

as a pilot. After some chaffering, we gave him two pieces of salt beef, and agreed to give him thirteen dollars on his piloting us in safety to Hong Kong. The sampan, or pilot boat, then proceeded further afield, on the "look out" to distribute other pilots. We took the Ly-ee-moon passage, in one part sufficiently narrow, winding between various bluff barren isles. The harbour of Hong Kong lies to the north of the island, between it and the main, being merely an arm of the sea encompassed by islets. I believe it is the best, if not the only harbour in this part of China. But what shall I say of Hong Kong? What a place it is!—an acclivitous rock, about twenty-eight miles in circumference, and with naturally scarcely a level spot big enough to erect a dozen houses on. The waters were covered with European shipping, junks, sampans, boats, and tanka boats. Upon landing, I was positively grieved to see what British capital and enterprise had done: streets had been hewn out of the solid rock; magnificent buildings had been erected; watercourses and drains, flagged and walled up with wrought granite, conducted from the stupendous steep; and over some of them fine buildings had taken their stand. Millions of dollars, in my opinion, have been uselessly squandered, as the place can never become any thing but a receiving depôt, and a very unhealthy one. The sun strikes upon the white rock, reflecting such glare and heat, as causes, despite the admirable drains and watercourses, miasmatical evaporation, which produces congestive fever. Few dare venture abroad without an umbrella; and the foreign residents con-

fine themselves principally to their houses, which are certainly lofty and spacious enough, and provided with wide verandahs, screens, &c., to enable them to take a little exercise. Newgate, but for its name, would be a more pleasant place of residence. The Chinese quarter of Hong Kong is crowded and filthy, and the natives that occupy it are squalid and ugly. The whole race wear their heads shaved, with the exception of the crown, from which depends a tail, reaching almost to their ankles, reminding one of the chivalrous scalp lock of the Red Indians. Some huts I saw were built and thatched after the fashion of the New Zealanders. I imagine that Couloon, on the main opposite, would have been a far better site for a capital; but they tell me it is unhealthy. Can it be more so than Hong Kong? At all events, it does possess land offering capabilities for extending a city, and during the south-west monsoon, which is so pestiferous with its heat, it is open to any breezes coming from the sea; but not a breath of air can visit Hong Kong, the precipitous nature and stupendous altitude of the rock shutting out every breath. The best anchorage is on the Couloon side, and when a typhoon is dreaded, scores of sampans and tanka boats may be seen making over to it for greater security. Perhaps ships can lie a little closer to the town of Hong Kong; but if this is an advantage, is it not more than counterbalanced by the oppressive heat one is compelled to endure? But why do I talk: all I can say won't alter matters. When Hong Kong was given up to the British, a monomaniacal land, or rather building,

frenzy seized the merchants, and they contended one with the other who should offer the most extravagant ground rent to the government; and patches a hundred feet square have been leased at a yearly rental varying from 100*l.* to 400*l.* sterling. The expensive buildings erected on these allotments bind the proprietors to this enormous land tax; and I should not be surprised, if the commercial crisis lately passed had been influenced by this injudicious building outlay.

In strolling over the Couloon side, I noticed hundreds of little mounds of earth, irregularly dotted about, which I was told were the last resting-places of the common people. They have no particular places of interment, the custom being to bury their dead wherever they can purchase a piece of land for that purpose. The higher classes have been known to keep their dead for years, because they could not obtain a spot conformable to their wishes, or were waiting for a propitious day and hour to consign the dust to its final rest, — as bad as the black fellows of New South Wales. The body is finally burnt, and it is the ashes only that receive burial. Those that can afford it, enclose the ashes in a sepulchre of mason-work, of peculiar figure. The earth being dug a foot or two in depth, the bottom is flagged with stone or hard cement, and a coping of stone or cement-work is set upon it, sweeping round it like a horseshoe, the ends terminating in a sort of scroll. A small square hole, closing with a door, is left in the tomb for the reception of pious offerings to the manes. The religion of the country enjoins that the graves

should be visited periodically, and the poorer classes turn a sod upon the little mounds and sprinkle them with shavings of tissue paper.

May 9th. — Leaving the vessel, I went on board a steamer bound to Macao and Canton. Our course was through the same description of rugged islets, irregularly studding the water. The Macao roads are too open and exposed, and vessels from shoal water are compelled to anchor four or five miles from the landing-place. There are what is termed inner harbours, but they can only be taken at the top of high water, and must, I should think, be monstrously inconvenient for commercial purposes. As a place of residence, Macao is far more salubrious than Hong Kong, being open to the sea-breezes. The Praya Grande is a curving terrace of tolerably good buildings facing the sea; but, considering the number of years the Portuguese have had possession of Macao, they have been exceedingly supine or indifferent. The town is rambling and gloomy, with narrow streets, unmeaning squares, and lumbering cathedrals and convents. Had the same energetic measures exercised at Hong Kong been transferred hither, it would have been a pretty spot, though insignificantly small. The present governor of Macao appears to be a man of more action, and seems disposed to consult the health and convenience of the neighbourhood. His acts, however, do not altogether please the Chinese. In the construction of a carriage-road, certainly much needed, which winds at the base of a rocky mound, where thousands and tens of thousands of little hillocks indicate the

repose of ancestral ashes, he had to encroach on this sacred territory. The Chinese were exceedingly wroth at the violation; but the governor was resolute. "Remove your dead" was the order of the day, "and a dollar will be allowed you to pay for some other place of sepulture." It is singular the extent to which the superstitious feelings of the rich will carry them, as regards the auspicious moment for burying their dead out of their sight. Augurers and soothsayers are consulted, and many a tedious month may roll away before all circumstances will happily unite in conjunction to admit of the ashes reposing with certainty in peace with the blessed. In passing along the newly constructed road, my attention was drawn to the desecrated mound. It was literally streaming with fragments of paper, deposited there by those who had been recently to Chin-Chin, to perform the pious ceremony of greeting the remains of their ancestors. From Macao the steamer wended its way to Canton River. There were settlements on many of the islands we passed; but I saw no signs of the mighty population with which it is reported the Chinese Empire is inundated. We met junks and fishing-boats at every turn, but the evidence of an overwhelming land population was wanting. At the mouth of the river, called by the Portuguese the Boca Tigris, from the fancied resemblance of an island commanding the entrance to the head of a tiger, are the Bogue Forts, mounting many guns on either side the river, and very nearly on a level with the water. But they are utterly worthless as defences, as the foe might land in any number on

the easily accessible country before you approach the river, and, ascending the heights overlooking the forts, might shell out the defenders with perfect impunity. With the same want of tactics, the Chinese have planned similar forts at different stations up the river, all open to the same objection of being useless unless an invader could be found to take up designedly a convenient station for the reception of their fire. Tiger Island is an insulated mass of primitive rock, rising in a bold curve resembling the brow and mouth of a tiger. Now if the Chinese understood their business, they might here cut a fortress impregnable as Gibraltar; and if Great Britain was desirous of preserving uninterrupted commerce, either from the intrigues of other nations, or from the fickleness of the Chinese themselves, she should demand in any future outbreak the cession of this key of the river; and I'll engage, if she obtained it, she would effectually put a stop to all unfair exactions or impediments. The banks of the river are low, and at high tide subject to complete irrigation, which is favourable to the cultivation of rice. The country beyond is undulating, and crowned with many a wooded knoll. We had passing vistas of groves and shady dells, and the whole aspect of the country was richly verdant; but where were the densely crowded towns? From the number of boats and other vessels plying on the river, it strikes me that the population is more upon the water than upon the land. Whampoa is the highest reach for sailing vessels of burthen, and is about twelve miles from Canton. From this point the navigation of the

river becomes impeded: countless vessels throng the water, until, as you near the city, you thread your way through a serried mass of floating structures, from the ponderous war junk to the dancing tanka boat. The sight must be seen to be fully appreciated. It is asserted that there are 80,000 vessels of all classes clustered together, with a population not less than half a million. The sights and sounds beggar description; the astonished stranger is bewildered with amazement; and nothing filled me with greater admiration than the consummate dexterity with which every class of vessel was handled: the huge unwieldy junks, clouded with their mat sails, would shoot up into the wind, turn in half their own length, and remain stationary, as if by magic; and positively the sampans and other boats appear instinct with life, so wonderfully do they escape collision. The tanka boats are the smallest class, and are generally managed by two women, one to scull, the other to pull. They are about twelve feet long, broad beamed, and with a rounded floor. Two thirds of the vessel forward is decked over, beneath which, the family keep their stores, or, on emergency, could probably repose: the other one third is arranged for the accommodation of passengers. The whole boat is provided with tilted covers, in three or four parts rising about four feet from the gunwales, which slide to and fro, like the top of a ship's companion, so that in wet weather they can be drawn over the entire boat. The sampan is double the size of the tanka boat, and with greater pretensions to elegance and comfort. They are generally pro-

pelled by four oars, besides the aid of the sculler or helmsman. Men and women alike ply at the oar, and they are born, live, and die in their boats. The nursing of their children does not interfere with the women's laborious occupation, they place their infants on their backs, and secure them there by the aid of a square piece of cloth with bands sewn to the four corners. Tying the lower extremity round their waists, they draw the upper over their child, securing the bands to their shoulders, and in this way they pull, scull, or engage in any other work that may be necessary. To provide for the safety of children past nursing, or the age of suckling, they fasten a piece of bamboo, carefully stopped at both ends, to their backs, in knapsack fashion, so that if they chance to fall overboard, they have the prospect of floating till picked up. I am told that but few accidents occur, although the boats are swarming with infantine life. The flower boats, or boats of pleasure, somewhat resemble our Lord Mayor's barge, only they are much larger and are profusely decorated with carved work, gilding, and painting. The rowers, instead of row-locks, have loops fastened to their oars, which they pass over notched pieces of wood inserted in the gunwales, so that they can lengthen or shorten the sweep of the oar by raising or lowering the loop. The war junks and trading junks differ only in their magnitude, and the expenditure of ornamental work, carving, and painting upon them. On reaching the factories at Canton, you can scarcely see the water for the moving flotilla that covers it; and after you land, you are

equally surprised to find that in Canton so called by us, the ground is as completely excluded from the view by its mass of buildings. There are literally no streets; narrow passages — passages so narrow that a man with extended arms might touch the walls on either side — intersect the groaning mass; and on taking a bird's-eye view from one of the lofty rooftops, your gaze rests upon nothing but a confused concourse of buildings, joined together like the cells of bees. The Chinese appear fond of clustering in this way, as in other small villages I noticed on the river, and on some of the small islets, the houses were united in the same cell-like fashion, although, as far as I could judge, want of space could by no means be assigned as a cause for so crowded a style of building. Probably they are an exceedingly social and dependent race, each man being dependent on his neighbour for some of his many requirements; and thus they live in such jammed up proximity. Like the ants and bees, they are engaged in unceasing toil; the living tide of human life is perpetual in its stream through all the passages, more particularly reminding one of the ant; and their extreme dependence one upon the other, with the knowledge that in union there is strength, may have taught them to huddle together for mutual protection and support. Never did I see such varieties of food as are publicly exposed for sale: the combination of unknown quantities here collected would puzzle a mathematician. Many of the dishes had an appetising air, but my curiosity did not tempt me to try any of them.

Canton occupies about eight square miles, but

beyond this wonderfully populous spot, the country is open, stretching away in varied landscape till the fading hills are lost in distance. The residences of the English and other foreigners are confined chiefly to two small squares; and from their exceedingly limited boundaries they have been necessitated to extract sufficient room to enjoy the privilege of walking free from molestation, as they are absolutely prohibited from entering the suburbs, or penetrating the interior, for the enjoyment of free air and exercise. The enclosures they have appropriated for pedestrian movements have received the high-sounding appellations of the English and American gardens; the flag staff of the consuls of both nations being erected in the centre. Money has done what it could to make them pleasant lounges; but, after all, a prisoner in the Fleet or Queen's Bench could enjoy more exercise. He has his game of racket; but all that the prisoners at Canton can do in the pedestrian way is to cross and recross one another in the small but costly patches misnamed gardens. The only other exercise they can participate in is boating; and the necessity that has induced it has created as pretty an assemblage of sailing boats, pulling boats, wherries, gigs, and funnies, as is probably to be met with any where. The boat-house is one of the sights of Canton. I went for one or two short excursions up the river; and it was grievous to look back at the humming hive I had just quitted, and turn to the glorious country where scarcely a man or

his habitation was to be seen far as the eye could reach — the whole prospect, redolent with the beauties of nature — and to know that the prejudices of these long-tailed Celestials had denied us the privilege of delighting in them. They are a human illustration of the “dog in the manger —” they either can’t or won’t enjoy the fine scenery about Canton themselves, neither will they allow us, who can appreciate it, to do so. I saw but two or three of the better class of females, as not only the jealous care of their guardians, but their own infirmities preclude their going abroad. The painful confinement their feet are subjected to when infants forbids the possibility of walking without assistance, and the Chinese have learnt to admire their feeble tottering gait. To my eye it was particularly disgusting, and reminded me of Peter Pindar’s description of the Friar “hobbling along” with peas in his shoes. The women’s feet are about the size and shape of a goat’s hoof, and their ankles bulge above them like a diseased joint above a horse’s pastern. It was in an excursion on the river that I chanced to meet a really beautiful girl, as far as face was concerned, in one of their covered pleasure boats, but open at the sides. Our vessels glided slowly past each other, and I had a fair opportunity for scanning the beauty. A rich carmine suffused her cheeks, like the blush of a rose leaf; her skin, albeit partaking of the olive tint, was refreshingly clear; her hair, which was exceedingly luxuriant, and dark as polished ebony, was dressed in a peculiar but tasteful style; and, in the glance of supreme

indifference which she carelessly cast upon the passing foreigners, she might have vied with some of our own regal and surpassing lovely dames, when they chanced to unveil their beauties to the crowd. Her features were exquisitely moulded; and her eyes, slightly partaking of the obliquitous curve characteristic of the Tartar race, were surmounted by arched brows beautifully defined. The haughty glance with which she favoured us barbarians did not detract from the merit of her charms, and I felt — “tell it not in *Tahiti*” — an impulsive desire to appease her prejudices by pressing my lips to hers, in a kiss of fraternal love — the “kiss of peace.” There is no great difference in the costume of the men and women; the chief distinction is, that the women wear their beautiful tresses at pleasure, whereas the men, by an imperial edict, are compelled to keep their heads shorn, with the exception of a small patch upon the crown, from which they cultivate tails, worn as a badge of submission they say; but I should rather think it was a stroke of policy, to find employment for an immense number of hands. “Idleness is the root of all evil,” says an English proverb: the Chinese rulers may imagine this, as well as we; and not wishing to have Lazzaroni, like drones, to feed upon the commonwealth, and avail themselves of any chance to incite disturbances, may have devised head-shaving as one method of perpetuating employment. They may have another motive, as the long tails form an excellent means

of securing criminals. I was mightily tickled the other day at meeting a party of pirates marching to confinement all tied together by the tails. The general dress of the lower orders, man and woman, is a loose sort of shirt, falling down to the knees, and very wide trowsers or drawers, which, owing to their peculiar cut, bag behind in unseemly fashion. The shirts are without collars, and button on one side the neck, which is left bare; the shirt opens down the side, and is secured by loops and buttons. A broad-brimmed hat, rising to a conical peak in the centre, with a circumference partaking more of the character of an umbrella, shields them from the wet and sun; and thick-soled shoes, of many layers of felt stitched together, complete their costume. It is the custom for every European arriving in China to engage a native attendant, or "boy." These flunkies imitate the better classes; they never wear the broad-brimmed hat, but carry a fan or umbrella to shield themselves from the sun: and when they are dressed for the day, they pull over the wide-legged drawers stockings made of stout nankeen, or some such material, reaching to the knee, and fastened just below it by a white or fancy-coloured ribbon. The soles of these stockings are wadded, and the stocking itself is so stiff, that it will almost stand like a Wellington boot. From their want of elasticity, they impart a most ungainly appearance to the legs, which rise like misshapen pillars from the shoes. The latter are generally of satin or velvet, the soles being thicker at the

ball of the foot, than at the heel. The whole garb is calculated to impress one with the idea of a deliberate-moving race, for it positively precludes any great exhibition of activity. But with the coolies, or common labourers, who go more frequently without shoes than with them, there is no lack of strength or activity. They carry burdens the same way as the natives of Polynesia, slung at each end of poles; and I have seen them carrying ponderous weights. In colour and symmetrical roundness of limb, many of the coolies exactly resemble the Polynesian races; and they have a game which I only saw elsewhere practised amongst the natives of the Paumotu Islands. One party challenges another, and throws out his fingers, from one to ten, calling out the number as he proceeds rapidly to exhibit the fingers indicated, in prescribed order. If the challenged party fails to throw out the proper number of fingers in due form, he is fined and compelled to drink; but with the Paumutians, as they have nothing but water as a beverage, they forfeit some trifle to each other. I am more than ever persuaded that the islanders of Polynesia may claim their origin from the Asiatic continent. On one occasion, as two girls in a tanka boat were pulling me ashore, somewhat vexing me, I gave vent to ejaculations in the Kanaka language, and called one of them "mate po" (blind-eye). Both of them appeared to understand me, for they burst into laughter, and the one who had the blind eye turned it from me; and ever after, when I chanced to meet her, she would laugh, and keep her blind

side from me. I tried to engage them in conversation; but though they might have understood a few words, I only elicited a series of shouts and giggles.

The Chinese, from my observation, are a strictly religious race: their houses and their boats are freely decorated with passages from their sacred writings; even the humblest tanka boat will carry a joss-house, or house of prayer, in which they burn incense to the deity; and it is common to witness the people of a boat, when about to take their departure for some distant port, casting lighted paper on the water, or letting off fire-works, by way of "chin-chining," or propitiating the good spirit.

I sat to a native artist at Canton, named Lamqua, that he might take my likeness, and during the sittings, discoursed with him about the religion of his country. He remarked that the English were very bigoted; that we came to their country, not as if we were men, but as if we were gods. We laughed at and contemned all their institutions, and told them that ours was the only true religion, and that unless they did as we directed, they would all go "below."

"Wouldn't you be justified in thinking we were fools, if we sent missionaries to your country and talked to you in the same way? Must every one be a fool because he does not think as the English do?"

"What is your creed of the existence of the world?" inquired I.

"Oh!" he replied, "our fashion talk is, that the

world has been countless of ages in existence: it requires so many thousands of years to acquire such a form; and so many to acquire such another form; and so fashion:" their notion of the creation coinciding with the deductions arrived at by modern geologists.

Lamqua had got three wives; and though he approved of our monogamous system, and of the respectful treatment we evince towards our wives, he could not understand how one wife could manage our affairs during our absence. I told him "we did not expect them to manage our affairs, we married them for the sake of their society, and for the pleasure of endeavouring, by our exertions, to make them happy, and not with the idea of rendering them servants or slaves."

"That's very proper," he rejoined, "you treat your wives as if they were angels; but so is not the fashion of my country, a man may have as many wives as he chooses to buy. But this was the difference: his first wife was selected by his parents, and was a family arrangement, and as such he was bound to support her, nor could he sell her or put her away; but any subsequent wives, obtained by purchase, he could resell at pleasure, the same as any other marketable produce."

"But that's very cruel; suppose any of them proved mothers?"

To all objectional remarks, however, Lamqua only shrugged his shoulders, and replied, "It is the fashion of my country."

He has two children, and I asked him if he sub-

jected his daughter to the cruel punishment of confining her feet?

“For the first three or four months,” he said “he had submitted to the custom of the country, but he could not bear to see the affliction of his child, and he was convinced of the absurdity of the practice.”

But he was no great admirer of the English ladies' feet, or of their manner of walking: he contended “that it was too coarse; they walk too strong, all the same as a man; they want that graceful tremulous movement of our ladies.”

I tried hard to induce him to take me with him into the country, and introduce me to his family; but he assured me it was impossible; I should be stoned to death by the common people: the well-ordered part of the community would never molest me, but there was no protecting me against the rabble. I made similar requests to other Chinamen, and received the same answer.

It is astonishing what numbers of Chinese speak a peculiar kind of English jargon; and it is necessary for all foreigners doing business with them to obtain a knowledge of it. To an Englishman visiting China for the first time, it is exceedingly ludicrous to hear his countrymen and others jabbering away in the vernacular of his country, singularly transmogrified and broken, as freely as if it had been the style they had been accustomed to from infancy.

Hong Kong is on the east of the entrance to Canton River. Macao is a small peninsula on the opposite side, but farther to the southward, and

seventeen or eighteen miles to the northward of Macao, there is an inlet on the coast, sheltered by a small islet, and the bay thus formed is called Cumsingmoon. This is the highest opium-receiving station we have near Canton. Here receiving ships lie moored; and from this point, by aid or connivance of the mandarins, the opium is smuggled into the country. The principal opium introduced into China comes from Bengal and Bombay. That from Bengal is a *government monopoly*, and public sales take place once a month to the highest bidders. It is brought across by steamers and vessels, yecept, *par excellence*, "opium clippers;" and it is worthy of note, that England equipped her fleets, lavished her treasure, and poured out the blood of the Chinese like water, because their *government* endeavoured, with the strong hand, to put down the illicit commerce.

The fewness of the foreign residents in China is absolutely startling, and nothing but the fearful superiority of their weapons of destruction, and the utter ignorance of the Chinese as to all warlike operations, could prevent their being annihilated. The poor Chinese are justified in excluding us as much as they can from the interior. The paucity of our number is so glaring that you are lost in admiration at our late proceedings; and feelings of the deepest sympathy are involuntarily excited towards the countless race of industrious, but non-combating Chinese.

Old residents tell me I am mistaken in supposing the banks of the river to be thinly peopled; that were

I to go two or three miles inland, I would find villages like bee-hives, and as densely crowded with denizens.

Already the Chinese are forgetting the frightful lesson that was written in their blood; and from the folly and vexatious nature of their measures, will probably bring down further chastisement. If, unhappily, such should result, I would advise our ministers to insist upon getting possession of Tiger Island: for the commerce of China could then be protected *against the folly of her own people, or the designs of any other.*

June 8th.— A sailing regatta came off at Macao to-day, and having been present, I make this entry, to notice a singular fracas that took place.

Three or four English, and two American men-of-war, were lying in the roads; and as I was standing on the lower fort watching the race, several boats were seen pulling ashore from the English men-of-war, having armed marines in them. My attention was directed to this hostile appearance, and I pronounced it to be the band coming ashore with their musical instruments.

“ Devilish queer musical instruments ! ” was the rejoinder; “ they are muskets. ”

A spy-glass was handed to me, and then I saw they were muskets.

“ Well, ” said I, “ I suppose it is a guard of honour landing out of compliment to the governor; ” and I thought no more about it.

In about five minutes’ time the boats were seen leaving; and a Portuguese soldier commenced gesticulating with great vehemence. We could not un-

derstand him; but his excitement became so intense, that his long mustachios and beard curled and twisted as he laboured to express his indignation. Soldiers were seen gathering on the Praya Grand, and the militia were hastening to the scene, belting on swords, and buckling on cartouch boxes. Wondering what it could all mean, I also hurried down. It wasn't long in transpiring. The governor, on the day previous, had caused the arrest of an English clergyman, because he did not take off his hat on the passing of some popish ceremony (the hoisting of the host I believe); and he was kept in "durance vile" the whole of the night. Captain Keppel, of H. M. S. Meander, was informed of this; and he also learnt that the imprisoned gentleman had only just landed for the first time at Macao, and that he was in ignorance of the Portuguese language, and the customs of Catholic countries: but that immediately on his ascertaining the cause of his imprisonment, he had written to the governor apprising him of these circumstances, regretting the error into which his ignorance had betrayed him, and giving his assurances that no complaints of a similar nature should ever again be preferred against him. One would have supposed that an apology and explanation so ample would have sufficed for his immediate liberation; unfortunately, it did not prove so.

Early this morning, Captain Keppel waited upon the governor, and demanded the release of the reverend gentleman; at the same time expressing his unmitigated surprise that any governor of a civilised

territory, in the nineteenth century, could be found to subject to duress and ill-treatment those who did not pay observance to passing religious pageants. The governor appeared to forget that he was not addressing timorous Chinese, whose religious tenets and graves he could violate with impunity—not from any dread they had of him, *but of the English allies*—and replied, that the person was in the hands of the civil authorities; but as a matter of courtesy, if Captain Keppel requested it, he would cause him to be set at liberty.

Captain Keppel would consent to no such invidious measure, and demanded his freedom as a right. “Then he must take his chance with the civil authorities.” Further argument was thrown away, and Captain Keppel left the governor’s presence, with the determination to liberate the clergyman by force. Before, however, resorting to any violent means, he addressed the governor formally in writing, demanding the reverend gentleman’s release. No notice being taken of the letter, a party of marines was landed, who dashed straight to the place where the prisoner was confined, and liberated him in a twinkling. The officer in charge of the party, seeing some guns in the rear which could be turned upon them in their retreat, sent some hands to guard them. The soldier on duty unhappily presented his musket to deter them, and was instantly shot dead. I say unhappily, because the poor devil’s musket was not loaded, and but for his loyal empty display, no mortal casualty would have occurred. The whole affair did not occupy ten minutes, from the landing

of the marines till the boats were on their way again to their various vessels, with the liberated prisoner in company. Some of the boats quietly proceeded to the station where they were to take part in a pulling race shortly to ensue. The consternation was great: all children were ordered off the terrace, the guns were ordered to be loaded, and free vent was given to execrations on the cowardly unmanly conduct of Captain Keppel, who could thus take such an undue advantage of the governor's absence. So perfectly secure felt the governor, that nothing would be attempted on the part of Captain Keppel, that he had taken no precautionary measures of prevention; but shortly after the withdrawal of Captain Keppel, he himself entered his barge, and went on board one of the American vessels: nor do I believe he received the written protest and demand until the prisoner was set at liberty. Captain Keppel did not consider it necessary to make the governor privy to his determination, as the governor, being more valorous than cautious, might have opposed resistance, and occasioned much bloodshed, which was no part of Captain Keppel's desire; but liberate the man at all hazards, *he would*, and teach the governor "that what is sauce for the goose is sauce for the gander." The governor, like Dogberry, may "write himself down an ass:" perhaps for the future he will be able to distinguish between a *power* that could crush him, and a people that were humbled at the feet of *that power*. Much vapouring and gasconade followed his return to the shore, but nothing was done; "great cry and little wool." I was going to Whamboa the next

morning, to join a vessel bound for Manilla, as I wished to visit that place; but I told my "boy," "that if there was any chance of a row, I should stop where I was."

"O, no fear, sir, Portygee man, too much, all the same China man, no savee make fight."

He was quite correct, and the next morning I joined the steamer.

June 15th.—My trip to Whampoa was time thrown away, in a measure, as the vessel had to touch at Macao, and it was not until this date that we made a clear start for Manilla. The effervescence at Macao had only partially subsided. The governor, in order to exhibit the strongest sense of his indignation, issued notices, "inviting people to attend the funeral of the soldier so foully assassinated by order of Captain Keppel." I don't know how the public spirit responded to this brave display; but if it in any way tended to relieve the overflowing choler of the excited governor, it may have saved him from a fit of the jaundice; and the nostrum was as simple as harmless.

CHAP. XI.

Visit Manilla.—The Bay.—Beasts of Burthen.—Costume.—Inferiority of the Indian Race to the Natives of Islands south of the Equator.—Country around Manilla.—A Trip to the Village Mariquina.—Fire-flies.—Fear of Banditti.—Exports from Manilla.—The great Cigar Manufactory.—Pina.—A Bolster Wife.—Return to China.—The Chinese want only Leaders and Training to be excellent Soldiers.—British Occupation of Tiger Island in case of further Disturbances with China.—Pirates; their Method of Attack.—Not altogether judicious to stray far from the Factories at Canton.—Frogs used as Food.—Long Finger-nails.—Artists.—Taste for Monstrosities.—Force of Training over Instinct.—Specimen of Chinese English.—The Compredore.

WITH my usual luck, we were attended with light baffling winds. Manilla is only an ordinary five days' run from Macao, but we were twelve in accomplishing it, and it was June 27th before we entered its expansive bay. Ever since my arrival in the East we have had a constant succession of light winds. I was led to believe that in this month we were sure of rough tempestuous weather. The north-east monsoon changes to the south-west at the end of April or beginning of May; I was warned against entering the China seas at the time of change. Whatever may have been the experience

of years gone by, the months of August, September, and October are now those that are the most dreaded. Last year, in these months, fearful havoc was committed amongst the shipping by the visitation of hurricanes or typhoons; and I was told that the loss of life sustained by the Chinese was awful. I can readily give credence to the report. They say that Canton River swarmed with bodies of the unfortunate drowned.

My chief object in visiting the Philippine Islands is, to ascertain what market they offer for the South Sea Islands. The Chinese are so wedded to their own customs, that it is next to an impossibility to introduce any novelty amongst them: gray calicoes, white shirtings, camlets, rica, rattans, betel-nut, and pepper, seem to be the chief legitimate articles of import for the Chinese mart. Rice is admitted duty free, and rules at from 1\$25 to 2\$25 per pecul. Biche de mer, though only consumed in China, is better understood in Manilla; parties there know better how to sort it for the various provinces, and I find, when too late, that I had better have made the paradoxical voyage, than proceeded direct to the ports of consumption.

The bay of Manilla is on the south-south-west side of the island Luzon, or Luconia. The coast is bold, and may be seen at a distance of twenty leagues. The entrance to the harbour is about eleven miles in width, and is unequally divided by Isle Corregidor; the passage on the north-west side being about two miles in width, that on the south-east about eight. The formation of the bay

resembles that of a shot-flask, the neck of the flask answering for the entrance; it is about thirty miles in diameter in its broadest part, and the city of Manilla is on its eastern side. A river which disembogues itself into the bay, and up which ships of burthen may be taken at high water, divides the city proper from the suburbs. From the great extent of the bay, a heavy sea hurls its thunder on the beach during the prevalence of the south-west monsoon, but in the north-east, the wind being from the land, it sleeps as "tranquil as an unweaned child." A shoal, called St. Nicholas, with less than three fathoms water upon it, lies on the south-east side of the bay; and the boarding officer gave us the information that the government had stationed a buoy upon it, with a warning bell attached.

"How's that?" said the captain; "we saw and heard nothing of it, although we were within hearing distance."

"No," he replied; "because it had been washed away in a heavy gale some year or two ago, and had not been since replaced."

"You're a smart set of fellows!" thought I.

The river is confined within certain limits by piers of massive masonry, and the city is strongly fortified, but it is a gloomy, kill-joy looking place. There is a fine esplanade within the city walls, where it is customary for the fashionables to take their evening drives; but so jealous are the authorities, that no foreigners are allowed to remain within the city after a certain hour at night.

The first thing that struck my attention, after walking ashore in the morning (we landed late in the evening) was the extraordinary animals employed generally as beasts of burthen — a sort of demi-amphibious buffalo, all of one uniform pale inky colour, and with hides that are nearly hairless. They are slow-moving ponderous brutes, with large solid horns, exceedingly powerful, but cannot exist long without a wallow in the mire. The cartilage of their nostrils is pierced, and a rope, knotted at one extremity, is passed through — and this is the torturing guiding and controlling rein if they happen to prove obstreperous.

I was also struck with the costume of the Indians and mestizos, or half-castes. The women wear a roll of cloth swathed tightly round their bodies from their waists, called by them “tappis;” it falls to the ankle. The gay colours of the encircling roll display their fondness for show, and prevent your supposing them mummies in their cerements taking a cruize. Meeting the tappis, there is a close-fitting jacket of some light material, and round the neck they will occasionally throw a kerchief, that might vie with the tulip in brilliancy and contrast of colour; or they will sport a handsomely worked collar or mantilla. They wear their long black hair brushed backward from the forehead, and the ends are collected and fastened in a knot or roll at the top of the head. Their naked feet are thrust into tiny slippers, which just admit four toes, the little toe remaining outside as a sort of hold-fast. I cannot say much for their beauty:

some of the Mestizo girls were passable, and I believe they are generally pretty till they attain the age of twenty, or get married, after which period they grow coarse, and spread into the most unmerciful figures. Waists they have none, but their forms appear to shoot out, fan-like, from their arm-pits broad and flat. The Indians are a high-boned, hollow-cheeked, cadaverous, ugly-looking race; but the men, both Indians and half-castes, are great dandies in their way. Their trowsers are generally of some gaudy striped print or gingham; and outside they wear their shirts, made of pina (a light and costly fabric manufactured from the fibre of the pine-apple leaf), elaborately wrought by the hand or in the loom, with figures and stripes. Sometimes the stripes are of satin thread; bright orange, scarlet, crimson, and blue, being the favourite colours. Confound the exposed fashion they have of wearing their shirts, say I, for mine, on being returned from the washerwoman's, had their tails so stiffly starched, they could have stood of themselves, and I had great ado in tucking them out of sight. A high-crowned straw hat completes their garb. But the picture would not be perfect unless a game cock was placed under one of their arms. Their gambling passion for the cock-pit almost exceeds credence; there is scarcely an Indian without his bird: and the maddening excitement which carries them away oftentimes strips them of every thing they possess in the world, even to the very clothes upon their backs. There are but few creole Spaniards, or those of pure Castilian blood, compared

with the Indian and mixed races. In trips of six or seven miles in various directions that I made around Manilla, the village might be called strictly Indian, as there is nothing to dispel the illusion but a cathedral or monastic building, and a solitary stone or brick house or two. The houses of the Indians are framed like those of the Sandwich Islanders; but the sides and roof are covered in with the leaves of the pandanus instead of grass. They are built in rows on either side the roads, and are all raised on blocks three or four feet from the ground. They are neither built nor kept so neat and cleanly as the houses of the Polynesian Islanders I am acquainted with south of the equator; nor can the natives of the Philippine Isles, as a race, bear any comparison in a physical point of view with the islanders alluded to.

The country around Manilla, extending fourteen or fifteen miles from the beach, is almost a dead level, low, and swampy; and I am told, that to a greater or less extent this is the character of the country immediately girding the bay. Undulating land then commences, till it swells into mountainous elevations, rising five and six thousand feet high. The heat of the climate at this season is intense; it is almost impossible to walk abroad during the day, and every one that can afford it sports his vehicle and pair; and perhaps for so small a community, it cannot be surpassed on the globe for its exhibition of carriages. Merchants and others engaged in commerce, if they only want to proceed a distance of 300 or 400 yards, trundle out in their vehicles;

and it is no unnecessary precaution, as you may see the heat steaming from the river and paddy fields. If there is no good without its attendant evil, so likewise is there no evil without its attendant good: the marshy grounds which generate miasmata so baleful to European constitutions, also yield superlative crops of rice, which forms the food of thousands.

The country is intersected in every direction with beautifully embowered lanes, raised above the level of the paddy fields. The graceful bamboo, which here attains an exuberant growth, is one of the most picturesque and elegant objects in the landscape. The great variety of other foliage, with the glowing fruits and flowers, and the refreshing greenness of the paddy fields, render an excursion in carriage or on horseback exceedingly delightful after the torrid heats of the day; yet were you to deviate any distance from the pathways and roads, you would probably plump up to the middle in mud and water. I was much pleased with a trip to Mariquina, a suburban village about nine miles from Manilla. It is a pretty retreat, within an easy distance from the city; and it is customary for the foreign residents whose circumstances will admit of it, to engage, during the fine weather season, the houses here owned by the creole masters of the country, who at this period scarcely dare venture to dwell so far from the capital, for fear of banditti. During the rainy season the roads are nearly impassable; and two or three years back, the whole district of Mariquina was under water, from waist to breast deep,

which may account for the Indian custom of elevating their houses on blocks. That it protects their stores from rats is also another reason assigned. We strolled about the village, and as evening closed in, for the first time I beheld that extraordinarily luminous insect, the fire-fly, emitting sparks of light more brilliant than the scintillating rays of the brightest diamond. On the darkness increasing, I shook the boll of a tree and brought down a shower of fire, more intensely vivid than sparks from a furnace. In daylight and repose the insect is about the size, and of the dull colour of the weevil. I caught some of the little creatures in my hand, but it did not cause them to cease emitting their luminous halo.

A family of interesting mestizo girls lived within a few yards of my kind entertainer's abode, and we amused ourselves till past eleven P. M. listening to their singing. They were exempt from the horrid habit of chewing the betel-nut, the common practice of the natives of the country, which deepens the lips into a brown red, and the teeth into a brown black, causing the mouth to resemble a decayed sepulchre. Scarcely had we retired for the night, when the whole family, girls, mother and all, came rushing to our house for refuge. A party of nine or ten banditti had entered the village; and as the family had been plundered by a similar party only a few months previously, they clung to us for protection. There were five of us English present; and as we had pistols and creeses at hand, we loaded the former and prepared for battle. A room was devoted to the ladies; and having made our dispositions in case of an attack, we again turned

in. It is probable that the rogues became conscious of our presence (as it was whispered that one of the servants of the establishment maintained secret correspondence with the mountain banditti), and taking the alarm, made off, leaving us to enjoy the night in quietude. Few of the Spaniards will venture to travel unattended in this direction, and their houses were being leased by foreigners at ridiculously low rates. What has become of the gallantry and daring of the once most enterprising nation of the world? Luconia is not a newly conquered province; and yet, within two hours' walk of the strongly fortified capital, the villagers cannot defend themselves from the wanton outrage of a handful of armed ruffians, nor can the government extend to them security and protection. From the numerical superiority of the Indian and half-caste races, the utmost precautions are taken that they do not become possessed of fire-arms or offensive weapons; hence a few armed ruffians may at any time enter a village and sack it with impunity.

The principal exports from Manilla are sugar, tobacco, hemp, coffee, rice, cigars, cocoa-nut oil, and indigo; but, strange to say, there is no cultivation on a scientific or extensive scale. Produce is brought to market by dribblets, in a slovenly manner, and varying in quantity from 10 to 100 peculs; each petty cultivator of a small patch consigning his produce to Manilla in one of the provincial boats, when it is bought up by the exporting merchants. It is reported that the Philippine Islands are wonderfully fertile; but their resources remain nearly unde-

veloped. By her narrow selfish policy, old Spain lost her magnificent colonies in South America, and it is a wonder that this, almost the only abiding of her colonial possessions, has not thrown off her yoke ; but I apprehend the climate is too enervating to produce amongst the creoles men of sufficient energy to plan and carry out a revolution.

I am told that the white Manilla hemp is obtained from the macerated fibres of the stalk of a fruitless plantain, peculiar only to certain districts in the island of Luconia. My informant had never seen the plant, nor witnessed the mode of preparation ; but from the large quantities both of hemp and cordage that yearly meet with exportation, it must be of an exceedingly abundant growth.

Sugar prepared in the rudest form is brought to market in earthen jars, containing from a pecul to a pecul and a half each. The buyers turn the moist mass into other jars, resembling inverted bee-hives, with holes through their bottoms, to drain off the molasses. The mass is then clayed over with an unctuous blue sort of marl, which causes the molasses to precipitate more quickly ; and the value of the sugar is according to the number of times it has been submitted to this claying process. Finally, the sugar is spread out on mats in the sun for one day, and it is then ready for exportation.

The manufacture of tobacco is exclusively a government monopoly ; and they have an establishment for the manufacture of cigars in which between 8000 and 9000 women are employed. My wonder was excited as to how it was possible to control such

an immense number of females; but it ceased on my obtaining permission to visit the establishment. There are six rooms, and from 1200 to 1500 women in each, all squatted on the ground, with little benches before them to aid them in their operations. The din and noise is deafening; some are picking and sorting the tobacco, others hammering out the leaves with round stones and pasting them together, for which purpose they have the shell of a cocoa-nut, with a little paste in it, close at hand. The cigar-maker having selected a leaf from the heap before her, and added to it or taken from it as the case may require, takes a half turn with the edge, and crumpling into it some of the tobacco shreds, with a dexterous roll of the hand the cigar is made, and secured by a little paste. It is thrown into her lap, and she proceeds with the manufacture of another. Subsequently the cigars are clipped at both ends to the size required, by a little wooden measure, the clippings serving to fill the bodies of other cigars. At intervals may be seen huge portly dames, whose duty it is to keep a vigilant eye that none are slack in the performance of their work. These overseers appear to have been selected for their ponderosity of person, and masculine sternness of expression: their weight alone would crush any half-dozen of the operatives. The severe glances of these dames, and the incessant din created by the unceasing hammering, precludes all chance of any indulgence in that loquacity, justly or unjustly, ascribed as an attribute natural to the fair sex, so that there is no chance of plotting or caballing. To be heard, it would be

necessary to have the lungs of a Stentor, and private conversation is out of the question. In ante-rooms, adjoining the main ones, where the manufacturing is going on, other females are employed putting up the cigars in bundles of ten each, and packing them on their ends in circular pyramids, that a current of air may pass through and effect a partial drying, before they are finally stowed away in boxes for sale. Such an assemblage of women it was never my lot to behold before; and they have the reputation of being the unloveliest assortment of unfeathered bipeds that ever eye reposed on. Sales of the cigars are effected monthly, at established prices; and if the supply is unequal to the demand, they are allotted in proportion to the requisitions made.

Cocoa-nut oil is also brought to market in earthen jars, which contain from ten to twelve gallons each. There is no large establishment for its manufacture, and that produced is from the manual labour of individuals, who bring or send from ten to twenty jars to market at a time. The way it is prepared differs little from the process used by the South Sea Islanders.

The rice of the Philippine Islands appeared to me dark and coarse-grained; but owing to the high price this grain has maintained in China this year, large quantities of it have been exported.

Of indigo I cannot speak from personal observation; a severe fit of illness, which was nearly carrying me off, having curtailed the short time allowed me for inspection and inquiry. All the information I obtained respecting it, was in a note from a friend,

who writes, — “Indigo is produced in considerable quantities. Its quality is inferior to that of Bengal, and it is very carelessly prepared and packed, the same case frequently containing several different qualities.”

Besides the above enumerated articles of commerce, straw hats of various quality and material are largely exported. I have alluded to the fabric called pina, made from the fibres of the pine-apple leaf. My illness prevented an intended visit to an establishment where it was manufactured, but I was taken to see the embroiderers at work upon it. The finer qualities excel in transparent delicacy of thread the finest cambric I ever saw, but I cannot say I was favourably impressed with it, owing to its dingy colour; it resembles that of faded calico, or else it is of a murky bluish tint; but I was assured that by exposure to the sun, it becomes of snowy whiteness. It is exceedingly costly, and probably from that reason does not find much favour as an article of export, being looked upon more as an article of curiosity than an object of utility. Designs drawn upon paper are placed beneath the pina intended for embroidering, and the outlines are traced upon it with pencil. It is then stretched out about a foot from the floor, and parallel to it, the workmen and women (for both sexes are employed) sit all round, with their legs bent under them, as closely as they can ply the needle; and as I witnessed the slow laborious process, I was not astonished that a fully embroidered handkerchief, twenty-four inches square, should cost forty dollars. The artificers are kept at

work from seven o'clock in the morning till five o'clock in the evening, and are only allowed thirty minutes out of the ten hours for relaxation and refreshment. Both sides of the handkerchief, or whatever the article may be, are embroidered alike, and the workmanship is exquisite; so much so, that some of the scarfs, &c., submitted to my admiring notice, appeared like transparent tablatures, with figures in relief of beautifully sculptured alabaster.

In Manilla, as in China, the heat of the climate induces very indolent habits; and, on a fresh arrival, it is quite ludicrous to see the number of servants in an establishment. At meal-times a circulation of air is kept up by the movement of a punkha suspended overhead. The punkha is a framework, from twelve to fourteen feet long, by six or seven in depth, covered with calico, and having at the lower extremity a deep valance, like that surrounding the lower sides of a bedstead. A pulley leads from the punkha to the hall, or servants' room, and at a signal it is worked to and fro, when the waving flounce sets a cool current of air in motion. Gentlemen as well as ladies resort to fans, and no one thinks of stirring abroad without an umbrella.

I was at a loss to comprehend the meaning of one of the customs in Manilla; and I dare say any one chancing to read this, and unacquainted with the practice, will be equally at fault. A nicely dressed bolster, all flounced and furbelowed, is put to bed with you. Why it was stowed between my sheets I could not imagine: it can't be out of compliment,

because I am a married man, and accustomed to sleep double; but what the deuce is it for? The oppressive heat of the night soon showed me its use. Almost every one wears pigamas, or loose sleeping-trowsers; and by throwing the leg over this hard bolster you obtain a degree of coolness, as the clothes are prevented sweltering upon you. I was not a little amused with the coquettish appearance of my bolster wife the first time I had the honour of making her acquaintance. I suppose that it is a habit introduced by the Spaniards, for the señoritas are extremely fond of ornament, and display great taste in decorating their beds.

July 15th. — Being sufficiently convalescent to venture abroad, I this day bade adieu to my kind and generous host, and took passage on board a barque bound to Hong Kong. We did not get under weigh till the morning of July 16th, and it was the day following that we cleared the bay and obtained an offing; but instead of being favoured with the wind on which we depended in the heart of the south-west monsoon, we had nothing but light variable winds from the eastward, northerly; and I was again led to the reflection, that my experience went to disprove all statements and theories about the winds.

July 24th. — Arrived at Hong Kong in time to save the mail for England.

I have been now so many years from my native land, that in my nocturnal rambles in China it was with mingled feelings of surprise and admiration that I noticed her industrious citizens working

with untiring assiduity far into the hours of the night, forgetful of the claims my own countrymen had to a portion of this admiration. In our estimation, the Chinese labour cheaply; a good artizan not receiving more than from fifteen to twenty pence of our money per day. A dollar is equivalent to 1200 cash; and for 100 cash per day, equal to fourpence of our money, a labouring man may fare and lodge well. It is superfluous to repeat that the Chinese are ignorant of European tactics, and are not a warlike people; but their coolies, or day-labourers, are a stalwart well-built race, clean-limbed, stout, and muscular, capable of continued exertion in supporting and conveying immense burthens; and apart from their physical capabilities, I have been assured by long residents in the country, that they evince a supreme indifference to self-existence, and that every one of them, for the sake of a hundred dollars to bequeath to his family, would willingly resign himself to execution; firmly believing that his soul would only be transferred to another state of being, where he would enjoy a happier state of existence. If this is not the right material to place upon the battle-field I don't know where it is to be found. They only require leaders and experience; and with the pertinacity of Duguld Dalgetty, who contended for the erection of a sconce on Drumsnab, I insist, that if we wish to preserve uninterrupted commerce in China, we ought to take possession of Tiger Island, provide it with a garrison, and keep it stored with provisions for twelve months; and then it would always be within

the walls, the "wooden walls" of Old England. I was somewhat surprised to see some of our own warriors, officers both in the army and navy, lolling at their length in sedan-chairs, and supported from place to place on the naked shoulders of the brawny "raw material" to which I have made allusion. I always thought that *the most* important part of an officer's duty was to habituate himself to any clime, that he might never be found wanting in the hour of need; and I was not a little scandalised at observing such effeminacy. Imagine a troop of men being carried to the field of battle in sedan-chairs!

Although the Chinese are not a fighting nation, yet their coasts are lined with piratical junks innumerable, always on the look-out to pick up the defenceless and unwary. Several instances of piracy occurred whilst we were lying in the harbour. Like brother Jonathan, they calculate chances, and I believe are never known to make an attack if they are likely to meet with a stout resistance; shrewdly concluding that dead men can profit nothing; and, to lessen the chances of such a casualty as death, they throw into the vessels they are about to board fulminating balls or shells, which on explosion emit such a suffocating stench and smoke, that the party attacked can scarcely see or respire, and, incapable of offering resistance, fall an easy prey to the overwhelming numbers that precipitate themselves upon the deck. Nothing but hard knocks would be gained by attacking an equal force, and they prefer putting risk out of the question. They

are exceedingly cruel in these onslaughts, generally butchering, in cold blood, all their captives; upon the principle, I presume, "that dead men tell no tales." I was present at the trial of some pirates that had been taken, and I saw about twenty other couples in an outer room, awaiting their trials. They were linked together by the ankles, and were handcuffed, but I never saw faces evincing greater freedom from anxiety or care. The fellows in the outer room were laughing and talking with as much jollity, as though no rope was dangling over their heads, waiting to stretch their necks; they were bandying jokes with their gaolers (lascars), who were jesting in the same vein.

In my last visit to Canton, I went to the city gates, and traversed in various directions the narrow passages intersecting the conglomerated mass of building. I had a Chinese conductor with me; but I found that the further I strayed from the foreign factories, the more open I became to insult, and the risk of being plundered. I felt many a covert punch bestowed upon me, as I pushed my way through the crowded thoroughfares; and now and then, I would get saluted with the title of *Fanquai**, uttered in tones of strong contempt. My guide took me to see several manufactories; but as soon as we entered the buildings, the doors were surrounded by the rabble, gaping to see the *fanquai*; and I detected another object they had in view, not

* *Fanquai* admits of two significations. In one sense it merely implies a foreigner; but in another, and if uttered with harshness, it means a devil.

quite so harmless, which was none other than to jostle me as I came out and attempt to pick my pockets. One daring fellow stepped up to me, and, with his nose almost touching mine, took a deliberate survey of my apparel, and was coolly putting forth his hands to unhook the chain that confined my watch. This was "coming it rather too strong." I glanced my eye at the guide, who was evidently alarmed and embarrassed; and seeing no chance of assistance or protection, I drew one foot back to aid the impetus of the blow I meditated planting between the fellow's two eyes. This demonstration of non-approval of his wish to appropriate some little token of remembrance, and my friend's unwillingness to receive the souvenir I was ready to accord him, caused his retreat; but it was made slowly, and with a growl, and a look of any thing but satisfaction, at my insensibility to the honour he would so readily have conferred upon me. But I shook my fist at him in a way not to be mistaken; and with a few hearty expletives, the reverse of blessings, signed with an authoritative air for the rest to clear the way, and guarding my watch-pocket with one fist, and with the other fist in readiness to attack or defend, I passed through the rabble unmolested. My conductor was much frightened, and from that moment got another person to bear us company. The Chinese have certainly no partiality for us; they say we are the cause of too much "bobbery pigeon;"* and at almost every shop I visited, they tried to persuade me

* Troublesome business.

into confessing that I was an American. Our Transatlantic friends are nicely reaping the benefit of our exertions.

Allusion has been made to the great variety of food, fruits, and vegetables exposed in their markets. But I was almost made sick by a very unexpected display. A chapman, with two large buckets suspended at either end of a bamboo, was coming along crying his wares. When a buyer offered, down went his buckets; and I saw that one was half full of frogs, similar to the field frogs in England, only darker in colour; and the other, half full of water. After a little bargaining, the salesman seized several of the unfortunate frogs, and, with his long thumb nail, making a transverse split in their skins at the lower part of their bellies, in less time than it has taken me to write it, he had turned them inside out; and there they were, with their globular eyes protruding through their flayed heads, struggling horribly with their raw legs in the bucket of water. The purchaser, noting the expression of my face, asked if we had nothing of the kind in our country. :

“O yes,” said I, “we have plenty, but we don’t use them as food.” He smiled compassionately, as if pitying our ignorance; and I turned away to avoid the chance of throwing up my breakfast. Without doubt, our crimping cod, and skinning live eels, are practices equally repulsive; but I had never seen a skinned frog before, and the sight was horrid.

It is a mark of gentility amongst the Chinese to wear long finger-nails; and, as we were walking

along, I noticed a soothsayer pursuing his cabalistical researches into destiny before a deeply-interested company of moon-struck flats, whose finger-nails were at least three inches long. They appeared of the substance of horn, and, from their great length, had taken a spiral curve. All men engaged in the polite arts wear their nails unusually long; and, from the apparently awkward manner in which artists employed in portrait or landscape painting hold their pencils, I was amazed at the exquisite finish they are enabled to impart to their drawings, particularly in water colours upon ivory, which requires the utmost nicety of touch. Chinese artists are skilful copyists, but no designers; they understand nothing of perspective, if left to themselves, and their paintings are spiritless and void of expression; but give them any thing to copy, and they will imitate with great fidelity. The people have a great passion for monstrosities. The most outlandish figures and contortions are painted in elaborate colours on their walls and buildings; and in many of the graven images they expose for sale, they could not be accused of breaking the second commandment; for they are neither "the likeness of any thing that is in the heavens above, or in the earth beneath, or in the waters under the earth." This passion for the grotesque is carried out in their houses, their junks, and even in their temples; nor are their gardens free from this peculiar taste: they train flowers and shrubs to represent the most monstrous forms; and they possess amongst themselves the secret art of dwarfing flower and

fruit trees to the minutest extent. I have seen rose-trees not six inches high, bushy and in full bearing, the roses not larger than a silver threepenny piece; and the bamboo, which, in its natural state, shoots upwards of thirty or forty feet in height, reduced to a growth not exceeding as many inches. They have forced monstrosities in the opposite extreme; and it appears to be the idiosyncrasy of the nation to delight in perverting nature. One of the most amusing and laughable instances of the force of training over instinct, may be seen on the river, a little above Whampoa. Squadrons of ducks, belonging to various boatmen, will start off to their owners from the muddy banks, their feeding grounds, at given signals; and such a struggling and squattering takes place, without any apparent inducement, as to which shall get first on board, that you are quite at a loss. The reason is accounted for: the last comer gets saluted with sundry raps on the head, by way of inculcating more alertness for the future; and this is the invariable practice, no matter how little in fault lag-last may be.

The foreign factories are on the right-hand side of the river; on the opposite are warehouses for merchandize; and two or three miles higher up, on the side with the warehouses, are the grounds of the horticulturists, where you may stroll at pleasure amidst a great variety of flowers, shrubs, and fantastic contortions of nature. Each garden is furnished with an artificial basin of water, which is covered with the lotus or water-lily. This flower and the

bamboo, with its graceful foliage, are the greatest favourites in all Chinese works of art, when they depart from their usual monstrous style of designing.

Any one understanding the English language would soon have no difficulty in making himself understood in those parts of China open to commercial intercourse, as nearly all the Chinese can speak a limited amount of transmogrified English, sufficient for all ordinary purposes; but it is necessary for the interlocutor to put his questions in the same broken gibberish, or he might as well talk in the unknown tongue. To give a specimen of the Chinese-English colloquial style: I ask a limner if he can take my likeness.

“ My wantchee you paintee my facee ? ”

“ Can do ! ”

“ Can paintchee welly proper ? ”

“ Can secure ! ”

“ My too muchee 'fraid no can secure proper. ”

“ Can do ! suppose you no like my have finish, no can pay. ”

All the “ boys, ” ready at a moment's notice to serve you in the capacity of flunkies, are skilled in this dialect. You give them from six to ten dollars a month, with which they board and find themselves. Wherever you go they follow; and if you put up at a friend's house, they make arrangements with the compredore of the establishment. The compredore is one of the most useful individuals to foreigners in China. He is your cash-keeper, your house-provider, your price-current, and, as regards all Chinese intelligence, your quid nunc; he disburses all household

expences, and is responsible for every thing. The "boys" are cleanly and well-dressed after the fashion of their country, creditable-looking fellows enough, but are never likely to injure themselves by over exertion, as, the moment you ask them to do anything they object to, or esteem derogatory, they cry, "My no savee," and call the coolie or house-porter.

CHAP. XII.

Bound for San Francisco. — Pass through the Strait of Formosa, and cross Tunghai or the Eastern Sea. — The Sea of Japan. — Headed off by the Wind. — The Asses' Ears and an unnoticed Rock. — Heavy Gale. — A cluster of Islands badly laid down. — A Tree coated with Barnacles. — The Sun crosses the Equinox and brings change of Weather. — Shooting Stars. — A Song. — Another Forest Giant adrift. — Fogs. — The Land. — Shoal Water. — Port San Francisco. — No mistake about the Auriferous Region. — Attendants of the Gold Digger. — Supposed extent of the Auriferous Region. — Population. — Extravagant prices. — Gamblers. — The "Hounds." — The Fever of Immigration. — Disparity in the value of Services. — The principal recipients of the Gold. — Sansalito. — An Indian Sweating House. — The Field thrown open to Adventurers. — House Rent. — Price of Land. — Cities. — Sacramento City. — Suttor's Fort. — Enterprise of Captain Suttor. — First discovery of the Gold. — The Gambling Mania. — An Alfresco Mart. — Suttor's Town. — The Labour imposed upon the Brute Creation and consequent great Mortality. — A suggestion given and how received. — Whirling excitement of the Times. — Copies of two Dinner Bills. — The Weather of San Francisco. — Ship-owners will have to take warning. — Eagerness with which people endeavour to leave the Country. — Desertion, and the impossibility of preventing it. — Comparison instituted between British North America and the United States. — "Huzza for Otaheite!"

"Pass we the long, unvarying course, the track
 Oft trod, that never leaves a trace behind;
 Pass we the calm, the gale, the change, the tack,
 And each well-known caprice of wave and wind."

BYRON.

“If there is a place on earth deserving the name of ‘Hell,’ California has pre-eminent claims for it.”— *Extract from a Letter of one who had visited the Diggings.*

August 15th. — Having sustained an annoying detention for the last fortnight, to-day we cleared the Ly-ee-moon passage, to face the “world of waters” between Hong Kong and San Francisco, California: yes, I am bound for the El Dorado, where, notwithstanding all its gold, I expect to find much misery and destitution. I go, merely as a carrier, as I do not see my way sufficiently clear to speculate upon chances.

The wind admitting, we passed through the Strait of Formosa, and, keeping nearer to the main land, sighted several barren broken islets. Not being able to head better than north-north-east, and north by east, we sailed through Tunghai, or the Eastern Sea, and entered the Strait of Corea, leading into the Japan Sea, which latter we thought of crossing, and again leaving by the Strait of Matsmai, when we should be in favourable latitude for westerly breezes, and with a clear sea before us.

August 25th, we were to the northward and eastward of Quelport, a bold, lofty island, at the southern extremity of the peninsula of Corea, and were in the very gut of the strait, when the wind chopped round, and came directly from the point to which our course conducted.

August 26th. — An anxious night of close beating brought us not far distant from a cluster of barren

rocky islets, only marked on the chart as "the Asses' Ears." These are two asinine auricular-looking peaks, which may have obtained the name for the group. But about twenty-two miles west-north-west from them, there are some dangerous small rocks above water, not noticed on the chart. Shortly after losing sight of them, we encountered so heavy a gale, that we were compelled to lower our top-gallant masts and yards upon deck. Our fore-top-mast stay-sail was blown to ribbons, and we had to furl everything and lay to under a main try-sail.

August 29th.—Last night the gale moderated, but we were afraid to set canvass, as we cannot depend upon our chart, and many islands lie grouped in our route. At day-light high land was discernible, and we immediately commenced crowding all sail to effect a clear entrance into the Pacific.

Steered through a cluster of islets. On the chart two only were delineated to the southward of us, denominated Pinnacle Island and Ronosima; but five distinct bold pinnacle islets were in view. To the northward of us we had Isle Julie and Volcano Isle; and further to the eastward the towering summit of Jakumosima was seen peering above the clouds. The islands are very inaccurately mapped. Breakers seemed to stretch a considerable distance west by north from the west side of the most eastern of the Pinnacle Islands; and several small, sharp-pointed, isolated rocks, not noticed on the chart, lie about four miles east from its eastern extremity. The passage between these two groups is about forty

miles in width, and clear. Towards evening, as we lay nearly becalmed, we could see dense volumes of white smoke issuing from the crater of Volcano Island.

August 30th.—My old foe, the east wind, would not allow us to weather Tanogasima, a long and an unusually flat island, situate north-east from Jakumosima. From this date, to *September 6th*, we were contending with head-winds; when we again caught a snoring breeze. We were not far distant from land, by calculation, as day declined. The moon “had not yet filled her horns;” and though her lustre was somewhat dimmed by the vapory clouds and driving scud, we determined on running, as the other islands had all proved high and bold; and we passed the islands Futsisio and Onangosimo without seeing either.

September 18th.—It is either a surfeit or a famine with us; too much wind or too little, or, by way of variety, a “dead muzzler.” How singularly and perseveringly at variance with all the information received from others our own experience continues to prove! “At this season of the year run through the Strait of Formosa, and get as quickly as possible into high latitude, and you may ensure strong north-westerly winds.” Such were our instructions. For five days after my last entry, we had south-east and east-south-east breezes; and for the last five days, although in lat. 38° N., it has been all but a dead calm; and we have not gained much from our 160th degree of east longitude, thirty-four days out; and when the

deuce we are to reach California, it is hard to say. Fate is cruelly adverse, and has been so ever since I quitted Tahiti in January last. "Oh, that I had wings like a dove!" as the psalmist says. A light breeze has sprung up, but there seems "no heart" in it.

September 19th.—By deductions from observations to-day, we were in lat. $38^{\circ} 18'$ N., and long. $162^{\circ} 13'$ E., and more than 800 miles from the nearest land, when we fell in with the huge trunk of a tree coated with barnacles. In smooth water it might have readily been taken, at a distance, for the edge of a reef, which may help to account for the nonexisting shoals and reefs dotted upon the general charts. As we were *actually moving* at the rate of three or four knots, I would not venture to disregard so favourable a circumstance by lowering a boat to indulge our curiosity; but now, half-past five, P. M., I regret to indite that we are once more in the doldrums. The ship is walloping lazily like a pig in the mire, and the sails are thrashing their souls out. Surely, for a continuance, no man ever had such luck—gales or calms: this appears my lot, either being equally injurious; the flapping of the sails in a calm causing as much damage as the straining of the vessel in a storm. What can I do? This!—afford another instance of the feebleness of man, and the uncertainty of human knowledge. What do we pretend to know?

September 23rd.—The last ten days have been little better than a calm, with a scorching atmos-

phere; the thermometer rarely below 88° . To-day the sun crossed the equinox and commenced south declination; about the time of change a breeze suddenly introduced itself from the northward, and feelingly made acquaintance with the tips of our noses and ears. The thermometer fell at once 23° ; the barometer remains stationary at 30.1° .

September 30th. — What in vulgar parlance are called “shooting stars” were very brilliant to-night. I have never heard any satisfactory explanation given of the phenomena. A supposition prevails in some parts of England that any wish uttered when a star is falling will be gratified. I thought of it this evening. *Ecce signum!*

The husband doom'd by fate to rove
 O'er rolling seas to scenes afar,
 With thoughts intent upon his love,
 Oft strove to stay each “falling star.”
 On nights serene he'd watch the skies,
 To mark the meteors in the air,
 The deep love seated in his eyes,
 Glowing like any planet there.

And when an inward voice would cry,
 “From superstitious eld refrain,”
 His lip would smile, but still his eye
 Would seek the meteoric train;
 And ever as the shooting light
 Would glance across the vault above,
 'Twould blaze, then vanish from his sight,
 Ere he could form his words of love.

“Forbear! forbear thy vain fond gaze!
Canst thou arrest the lightning’s flight?”
Again he sees the meteor’s blaze,
Again ’tis vanish’d from his sight.
But now before his steadfast eyes
A brilliant point breaks into life,
And now with rapturous joy he cries,
“All joy to my beloved wife!”

October 6th. — Came across another giant of the forest adrift on the ocean. We were in latitude $41^{\circ} 26'$ N., longitude $153^{\circ} 36'$ W.; the nearest land being more than a thousand miles distant. From the shattered branches spreading at one extremity, and the length and straightness of the stem, we took it for a pine. It was also coated with barnacles.

October 18th. — On the chart to the eastward of the coast of Japan, from latitude 40° to 50° N., it is remarked “thick fogs hereabout.” There may be; I am not prepared to dispute the fact; nor do I wish to prove it, as we are more than surfeited where we are. For the last nine days we have never had a clear horizon; the sky overhead is cloudless, but the sea is invested with a vapour as white and impervious as that issuing from a steam boiler. By calculation we are in the latitude of San Francisco, and within twenty miles of its longitude. We have had glimpses of the land in the last three days that we have been lying like a log; but now, for all that we can see, the land might be a thousand miles from us. A man on board who resided in San Francisco for two years, gives us the gratifying assurance that we are experiencing the

best of California weather. The calm and fog are absolute.

October 19th. — Whales, porpoises, and a variety of the cetaceous order, with other inhabitants of the watery empire, had been disporting around us. Penguins, shags, pelicans, curlews, sea-gulls, and other tenants of the air had been circling above us, and for hours we had listened to the deep hum of the beating waves upon the coast. When, on the evening of my last diurnal note, as the sun, with a red staring disc, like the inflamed face of a drunken strumpet, was slowly sinking below the western horizon, a light breeze rustled over the waters and shook the curtain of fog that enveloped us; and as its folds rolled slowly upward, it revealed what we presume to be the abrupt headlands to the northward of Port San Francisco; but as we have been for so many days without a correct observation of any of the heavenly bodies, we cannot speak positively. We were not four miles from the shore; and night, with its raven wing, having already commenced to over-shadow us, to avoid danger we were compelled to stand from that which we were so anxiously striving to make; and now we are more *mistified* than ever, vapours more dense encompassing us, shutting out all sights and sounds, and enfettering the ocean with its dark stillness, it is so sullenly calm.

October 20th. — This morning the fog began to roll away in fleecy-looking clouds, and the veil of mist again uplifting itself once more, disclosed the land at no great distance. At ten A. M. by double

altitudes, we ascertained our latitude to be exactly that assigned to the entrance of port San Francisco; but we saw nothing of the Farillones rocks, dotted on the chart as being about twenty three miles in a west-south-westerly direction from the harbour. There being every prospect of the weather continuing fine for the remainder of the day, to make "assurance doubly sure," we resolved to await the result of meridian altitude before standing in for the coast. At noon we received confirmation of our previous observations, and without further delay we made for the port. Suddenly we shoaled our water, and found ourselves on the bank running off the north headland of the entrance. Seven, five, and three fathoms were the soundings, called out by the leadsmen in rapid succession. We tacked to the westward again, and happily got into deeper water. Whilst feeling our way with the lead, we noticed a schooner lying at anchor outside the entrance, and in a short time we took the mid-channel. The narrowest part of the entrance is not a mile in width; the headlands on either side are abrupt, scarped-looking rocks; an old fort frowning from the summit of the southern one. A small white islet, called by us Bird Island, marked on the chart Los Alcatraze, is an excellent guide after rounding the fort headland. By keeping to the southward of Bird Island, a treacherous sunken rock, called Blossom rock, is avoided, and you come in sight of the anchorage. And what a scene opened upon us: at the least there were 300 vessels jammed together like trees in a forest; and, at the distance

we first sighted them, they conveyed the idea of one of the Low Islands of the dangerous Archipelago, crowned with its serried ranks of cocoa-nut trees. The harbour of San Francisco is from five to fifteen miles in width, and extends lengthwise, under different names, to nearly eighty miles. The city is on its south side, and from the peculiar undulating formation of the land, is destined at some future day to be a most magnificent one. Taking up our station amidst the fleet, we moored according to the directions of the harbour master.

On landing, I was surprised at the extent of the city. Eight months prior to our arrival, I had heard that there were not above twenty or thirty houses scattered about: now, however, wooden houses and tents spread over an area of miles. *Men* of all nations, and countries, and tongues, are assembled together at a spot, which two years ago was only known by name to the rest of the world: when I say men, I mean literally the masculine gender, as there is not one woman present to 500 men; consequently, the bull-like-herding of society may be imagined. Scarcely any attempt is made at preserving the decencies of exterior appearance: it is rare to meet a countenance in acquaintance with the razor; and the comforts of domestic life are utterly unknown. *Gold*, the grand arcanum which has allured so many strangers of different nations and tongues to one focus, is plentiful beyond all calculation; and it is the generally received opinion, that its various sources are very far from being yet discovered. The gold brought from the dry and the wet diggings,

it is conjectured, are merely alluvial deposits, washed during the rainy season from a more distant mountainous district ; and the lumps of quartz continually introduced, worn by the abrading action of water, veined and starred with gold, would seem to support the hypothesis. Whenever the gold-seekers hit upon the dry course of a torrent that has changed its direction, they are eminently successful in their labours ; others, again, sustain much loss of time and labour by damming up the beds of water-courses and diverting their channels, under the impression of finding gold, yet meeting with none, from the probability that the eruptive courses are of modern date. I have conversed with many who have been "to see the elephant," as going to the mines is called, and from one and all learn the great hardship that must be undergone by those in pursuit of the "pernicious metal." The heat they say is pestiferous to a degree beyond anything they could have previously conceived, and, so deleterious, that hundreds have perished unheeded and unrecorded. Some parts are not so baleful as others ; but at most, the heavily burthened atmosphere subdues both the body and spirit of man. No tents can resist the penetrating influence of the poisonous night-dews, and fever and ague, scurvy and a leprous breaking out of the body, are some of the ills attendant on the labours of the gold-digger. The extent of the gold region is barely surmised, but that its area involves many hundred square miles there cannot be a doubt. From the Bay of San Francisco, the Sacramento River branches in various directions, all conducting to the gold

placers extending for hundreds of miles. The main stream is called the Sacramento, and it branches off northerly into the Feather River, Juba River, Bear Creek, North Fork, Middle Fork, South Fork, &c.; and in a south-easterly direction the stream is called San Joaquin River, which again branches into Cosumnes River, Dry Creek, Mokelomies River, Calaveras River, Stanislaus River, Toulomie River, Mercedes River, &c.; all so many water routes to the "diggings." But it would not surprise me if it was hereafter proved that a belt running through the whole of Upper and Lower California, Central America, and Peru was equally rich with what we have hitherto been in the habit of designating the precious metals. The immense quantities of gold and silver, transmitted to Europe by the early Spanish Adventurers to these countries will be borne in mind. Pure lumps of virgin gold were extorted from the wretched Incas, by their rapacious invaders; and probably the persevering spirit of the Anglo-Saxon race is alone wanting to develop the true sources of so much mineral wealth.

There can be no exaggeration of the gold in Upper California; for every one acquainted with the diggings seems to concur in the opinion that it is inexhaustible; and, the means of its attainment being ever at hand to those capable of enduring hardship and privation, a reckless desire for it and a spirit of gambling have been induced, which probably the world never before saw equalled. In the city of San Francisco it is estimated that there are 30,000 inhabitants, and at the diggings and other newly sprung-

up cities, the population has been variously estimated at from 50,000 to 150,000. But some say this latter estimate is outrageously exaggerated; and my experience does not enable me to decide the question. In some districts the labourers at the diggings are so numerous that each man's allowance of soil to work upon is limited to a space six feet square; and with no law or government, save certain summary measures rigorously enforced amongst themselves for the slightest infraction of peace or honesty, the utmost order and tranquillity prevails. A man may leave his watch suspended to the bough of a tree, or any other valuable exposed in any open tent, and there it will remain till its owner seeks it. The necessity of adopting some measures for the protection of individual rights, so far from the field of judicial interference, was so apparent, that it was voted by acclamation that any infringement should be visited with instant death; and upon any robbery being committed, a jury from the nearest workmen is impanelled, and, according to its finding, the accused is acquitted or led out and shot. Nothing fit for the food of man is indigenious to the auriferous regions; consequently the necessaries of life have to be transported thither by the adventurer; and the expenses upon this would startle the most incredulous. A barrel of flour, worth at San Francisco 30\$, would fetch at the mines 200\$! a dollar a pound being the common price for it: and all other things are in proportion.

Accustomed to these monstrous prices, when the miner comes down with his "pile" he looks at the

extravagant rates in San Francisco as remarkably reasonable; and as there are no females to guide or influence his conduct, he in too many instances throws away his "dust," the result of his labours and privations, with the coolest indifference: and these gentry have a pride, as being the owners of considerable wealth, in appearing at all times and in all places in the rugged costume worn at and only adapted for the mines. But there is another class of men not so regardless of *that* which the miners are so prodigal of, and these may be called the curses of the country—professional gamblers dispersed throughout, who spare no pains nor expense to allure their victims. The number of "Hells" is frightful, and each one is provided with a bar for the sale of wines, spirits, and intoxicating cordials, and bands of music are in attendance to excite the passions and drown the conscience. Some of the gamblers pay as high as 1000\$ and 2000\$ a month for their stands; and one wooden building of no great extent lets at the enormous rental of 120,000\$ per annum. This is no exaggeration; neither is there any when I say that day and night the gambling houses are thronged, and at nights almost to suffocation. As for walking in or out of any of these establishments, the feat is utterly out of the question: you have to sidle and squeeze your way through the crowd as you best may; and, astonishing as the fact may seem, it is nevertheless true, that, notwithstanding all the stimulants provocative of excitement, disturbances rarely ensue; and it is wonderful to see drunken men who have lost large sums of money carefully endeavouring

to avoid collision with others as they make their exit from the tables. This may partly be explained and accounted for. At the termination of the war with Mexico, a considerable body of disbanded volunteers, the sweepings of the jails and penitentiaries, the heroes of Monterey—such is glory!—were let loose upon California. Banded together under the self-assumed nomenclature of "hounds," they set all law and order at defiance, and for a time perpetrated the most wanton excesses with impunity. At length the measure of the better-ordered portion of the community's forbearance was full, full to overflowing, and organizing themselves into a body of "guards," they pursued the "hounds" with unsparing rigour: some they lynched, some they shot, and others were sent to the United States to take their trial; and the residue finding that success no longer seconded their lawless efforts, have probably merged into quiet citizens.

Reports of the "Hounds" proceedings, checked for awhile the impulse of immigration from the older states; but the improved aspect of affairs with the large sums of gold monthly transmitted across the Isthmus has raised the "fever" to a more exacerbated height than at any former period. By the last mail it was reported that 30,000 applicants were turned away from the New York Packet office, from inability to accommodate them with passages; and it is greatly to be feared that this land of gold will become a land of the most fearful destitution. Of the many who have perished at the mines nothing is heard, but of the many who return laden with treasure,

“rumour,” with her hundred tongues, catches up the announcement, and spreads the report far and near. To every man well furnished by nature with muscle, bone, and a strong constitution, the means of repairing the caprices of fortune are at all times at hand in this singularly favoured country; consequently labour and handicraft work is at an immense premium, whilst the services of those skilled in the humanities are at a comparative discount. A cook is worth from 150\$ to 200\$ per month, a day labourer 5\$ a day, a mechanic 15\$, and a common sailor from 70\$ to 120\$ per month; whilst a man of bookish knowledge and cunning in accounts is scarcely of the same value as a waiter at an hotel. No one thinks of rearing stock, or cultivating the soil, and the country is entirely dependent on foreign supplies. It is to be apprehended that the auriferous contagion will spread not only to neighbouring districts, but even to distant colonies; and it is with all seriousness I write, that I look forward to the time when I expect to hear that New Zealand and the Australian colonies of Great Britain have been abandoned by their most useful class of settlers, in the eager desire of the latter to secure for themselves with all speed a modicum of that metal which has so long ruled the destinies of the world. But “it is not all gold that glitters,” and sickness and misery are not confined to the mining districts: they reign twin sisters over a considerable proportion of the populace in San Francisco. I have noticed houseless wretches shivering with the ague, wearing out life on their trunks, a blanket in addition to their body-clothing

being their only protection from the elements. I have seen others, again, reposing on the bare ground, with the sky as a canopy, manfully struggling with their fate till they could secure the opportunity of reaching the "el dorado," the "land of promise," "to do or die." No man seems to seek for sympathy from his fellow: it would almost appear, that, in the absence of woman, man sternly resigns himself to his destiny, as if intuitively persuaded that it were vain to seek for succour or compassion from his own sex. In some glances which I encountered, much suffering was painfully depicted; but no expression indicative of a wish to excite commiseration. The thirst for gold sadly tends to warping the bias of man's nature: I have heard from several that at the mines it is literally "every man for himself," and to be taken ill is the next thing to a summons from death. Many on being seized succumb with scarcely a struggle; others, with iron constitutions, successfully contend against both privations and disease; but there are others, again, who only obtain relief by resorting to other scenes and climes. The gamblers and medical men appear to be those who are reaping the richest harvest from the exertions of the miners. I have conversed with those who have paid an ounce of gold for an ounce of Epsom salts; and poor wretches, received under miserable shelters called hospitals, have been compelled to pay 100\$ per week for their accommodation. Two or three I fell in with, who had wrought hard and suffered many privations in the acquirement of 3000\$ and 4000\$ worth of gold, were glad to escape from the fangs of the

disciples of Galen, with the loss of two thirds of their perilously-earned treasure.

On the opposite side of the bay, in a north-westerly direction from the city of San Francisco, distant six or seven miles, is a place called San Salito. I paid it a visit, and, owing to the *gentle breezes* so prevalent in the bay, was confined to a ship lying off there for eight days, without a chance of quitting it. There is nothing of particular interest in San Salito: a saw-mill worked by steam-power has recently been erected close to a miserable watering place, and this, with a kind of farmstead owned by an Englishman, married to a Spanish creole of the country, and many years a resident in it, are the only erections of civilized man. A deserted sweating-house of the aboriginal natives was pointed out to me, and its uses described. A circle ten or twelve feet in diameter is hollowed in the ground to the depth of a foot or two: the outer edge of the circle is surrounded with poles from twenty to twenty-five feet in length, which slope inwardly and meet in a point: these poles are covered in with sod and earth, a small aperture only being left for admission of the patient. A fire is kindled in the interior; and, swathed in his blanket, the patient remains to take his sweat, according to the time prescribed by the medicine man. I am told that this is the principal means resorted to by the Indians to expel any inveterate sickness; but the race is nearly extinct in the neighbourhood of San Francisco, and I could obtain no further information relative to them or their habits.

A Dutch vessel of war arrived from China during

my detention at San Salito, and brought papers announcing the murder of the governor of Macao by the Chinese. I was not surprised to hear it. It was plain that his conduct had made him detested, particularly the act involving the ruthless violation of ancestral ashes, which brought upon him "curses not loud, but deep." The prompt celerity with which his attempt to "ride rough shod" over British subjects met defeat, no doubt accelerated the doom that was in store for him. But sooner or later the blow was sure to have fallen. That he was a brave man no one will deny, and having been such, it is to be deplored that he fell by the hands of assassins. But what is valour without discretion—a bootless virtue. A man is but a man, and every day the world is becoming more sensible of the truism. The days of knight-errantry are gone, and any such attempts as those of the poor governor's are strongly illustrative of the fable of the "frog and the ox." Probably his unhappy death may furnish a salutary lesson to other delegates from petty powers, and teach them that where they have not the force to carry out the "fortiter in re," it is better to jog along quietly and preserve the "suaviter in modo."

Shortly after the conquest of California, the city of San Francisco was planned; and streets, crossing each other at right angles, were mapped on a shoal extending 400 or 500 yards into the sea. The *water privileges* thus thrown open to the good citizens of California found ready buyers at 16\$ and 18\$ the lot; but since then the mighty influx of immigrants

has so incalculably raised the price of land, that I much doubt whether I shall obtain credence for particulars that transpired before my own eyes.

In the "Declaration of Rights," section 17, it is provided — That foreigners who are, or who may hereafter become, bonâ fide residents of this State, shall enjoy the same rights in respect to the possession, enjoyment, and inheritance of property, as native-born citizens." This appears to me a liberal and a wise provision; but it has opened the most extraordinary field for adventurers that has ever been seen or heard of in the annals of the world. Be it remembered that the gold of the country is inexhaustible, or assumed to be so, and be it known that gold dust is the general circulating medium received at 16\$ the ounce troy weight: speculators or schemers, or land sharks, or whatever other term they are known by, who had scarcely a dollar to bless themselves with on their first arriving in the country, becoming convinced of the fact that the *mines were banks not likely soon to break*, and foreseeing, moreover, the mighty mass of population that must eventually find its way to this wonderful region, commenced gambling in real estate, by degrees at first, and assisted by credit. Supported by the influx of new comers, glad for a season to get housed any where, houses have been rattled up and sales of land effected unexampled before this era. The gamblers have aided this state of things by the enormous rentals they are willing to pay for their stations, and which per consequence, keep up the

rental of every description of property at rates hitherto unheard of. For *any sort of room*, ten feet by twelve, forty and fifty dollars per month is the lowest sum asked and paid. A small wooden cottage, consisting of two rooms and a kitchen, will let readily at 200\$ per month; and any kind of a store, with one or two rooms off it, leases at from 1500\$ to 2000\$ per month. The merchants in San Francisco wished to erect a building for an exchange, and a land-holder having a spot of land deemed eligible for its site, application was made to him for it: he declined selling, but offered to lease it at the modest ground rent of 14,000\$ per annum. And what may the reader imagine was the extent of this piece of land? *Why, it did not exceed eighty feet by sixty.* I was present when the merchant deputed to make the inquiry put the question, and heard the response. At first I thought the matter was a jest, and treated it as such: but subsequently the merchants not agreeing to pay this enormous ground rent, the same piece of land has been leased at a rental of 29,000\$ per annum. But that "there is method in the people's madness" is shown by the way in which the lease is prepared, as it contains a clause regulating the rental every six months, subjecting it to addition or subtraction, according to the rise or fall of property; and arbitrators are to be appointed half-yearly to fix the rental for each ensuing six months.

The merchant who inquired the price of the land on which it was contemplated to erect an exchange, shortly after made a bonâ-fide purchase of one of the

18\$ water privileges, for which he paid 20,000\$; and as he and I were taking a walk, we made a descent into a sandy hollow, bordering on the sea, where much wretchedness and sickness were found under canvass tents, but which has received in mockery the name of the "happy valley;" and coming to a wooden shanty, occupied by some Sandwich Island Kanakas, my companion inquired whose lease and lot they were occupying.

"Mine," said one of the men.

"Then why don't you sell it, and go to your own country, where you never suffer from cold and sickness as you are now doing? Why, I dare say, you could get a thousand dollars for it!" urged my companion.

"It's worth more than that, sir," replied the man, in very good English. "I was offered 5000\$ for it, and refused it."

This was a clincher, and we renewed our jaunt, which we continued till we reached the mission of Saint Dolores; and heresquatters were locating themselves in every direction, it being part of the general constitution of the United States *that any unoccupied government lands* may be taken possession of by her citizens, and in this country the privilege extends to foreigners, who may claim pre-emption rights and obtain fee-simples of property thus acquired by paying the government upset price of land. This privilege extends only to a certain proportion of land for each individual, and the land must be occupied and improved.

Successful speculators in San Francisco have gone further afield, and projectors have planned towns and cities on ranchos or tracts of land, in the hope of obtaining similar results. At the confluence of the Rivers Sacramento and San Joaquin, "New York City of the Pacific" has been laid out. Besides this, on the route to the city of Sacramento, there are San Raphael, Benicia, Martinez, Montezuma, Suisoon, Webster, and Sutterville, no less than eight cities, within a distance of forty miles; but with the exception of New York and Benicia, which have a sprinkling of wooden houses, the others, at present, only rejoice in the name.

The city of Sacramento may be estimated as eighty or ninety miles from San Francisco. The land is more elevated here than at parts lower down the river, and spreads away into a vast plain far as the eye can gaze. The city has been laid out with some regard to its future destinies; fine wide streets are left for public traffic, and many of the giants of the forest remain unscathed by the axe, imparting a sylvan appearance and grace to the roads, without in any way interfering with the busiest wayfarers or traffic that can throng the scene. The place is covered with houses and tents, which have arisen as if by the touch of a magic wand. What a few months ago was primeval forest land, bears now the worn traces of a traffic that has annihilated all such primitive vestiges, with the exception of the trees above alluded to, judiciously spared to promote both elegance and comfort; for I am told that in the

summer season the climate is intemperately hot, and the country deluged with showers of impalpable dust swept from the plains, by the then prevalent strong winds. The banks of the Sacramento are, generally speaking, low and marshy; and I have heard that the city itself is occasionally subject to being flooded. I think it exceedingly probable, although I could detect no indications of such an event being of recent occurrence. Lower down the river there is no want of the most conclusive evidence on this point, the bushes and trees furnishing irrefragable testimony thereof.

Ships of 200 and 300 tons burthen, and many smaller craft, lie moored to the banks off the city. Whether they will ever get away again is problematical. Having accomplished the voyage thus far, it is not unlikely that their sacrifice can be submitted to. Not a vessel in San Francisco possesses its complement of men. Mine all quitted as soon as it suited their convenience, and we were compelled to hire others at 5\$ a day. From Sacramento City is one of the greatest thoroughfares to the "diggings," which may account for its unexampled rise; and landholders, both there and at San Francisco, have found themselves, without any effort or exercise of judgment, suddenly the possessors of princely incomes, merely by the rental of lands formerly of no value, and which, in the wildest dreamings of imagination, could never have been contemplated as likely to yield more than a bare existence, if even they were capable of doing that.

About two miles from Sacramento City, in an

easterly direction, is Suttor's Fort, a quondam trading post, established some years ago by a Swiss gentleman, known as Captain Suttor. Tired with the busy hum of civilised life, this gentleman sought retirement in the wilds of California, and, like the agents of the Hudson's Bay Company, devoted his time to traffic with the Indians, and the endeavour to improve the country. He had (so it is asserted) hundreds of Indians in his employ, and became a little king amongst his dependants, who looked to him for food and clothing. The fort is an oblong square of adobe walls, with bastions at the four corners; compartments run round the interior of the walls, and in the centre of the square stands a two-storied house of greater pretensions, and which, probably, was Suttor's residence. It is now converted into a public house. Captain Suttor's exertions were not confined to very narrow limits, for whilst he was engaged in constructing a dam for the purpose of irrigation at a place upwards of forty miles from the fort, his people, in cutting a mill race to drive a saw, ripping the timber necessary for the construction of the dam, chanced to hit upon the wonderful discovery of the great fecundity of the gold in the country. From that moment, "Othello's occupation was gone:" the news spread like wildfire. Thousands rushed to the scene, and Captain Suttor has become more notorious, and is more forced into society of the roughest and most uncongenial nature that ever fate could have exposed him to in any—the most densely crowded—city in Europe. I pity his position, as he is looked upon as a sort of *rara*

avis, and every successful man in the country considers himself at liberty to intrude upon him with his rough courtesy and congratulations: by rough courtesy I mean—"What'll you take to drink, Captain Suttor?" and the extent to which this is conducted in Sacramento City is a "caution." "Hells," open to the light of day, and with doors that are closed against the public but for a few hours' intermission, are as crowded here as they are in San Francisco, and night and day the poisoned chalice is presented to the lips of the unreflecting who are in search of pleasure and excitement. The steamboats plying on the river are not free from these abominations, as they have their dice and card tables; and my blood has fairly tingled in my veins, as I have watched the sturdy, rough, and toil-worn miners, sacrifice their earnings on the altars of these hawk-eyed sharpers, who were playing 2500 chances against the miner's one: all China against a China orange: and too often is it the case, that, like a well-sucked orange, the man who stakes his means "upon the hazard of a die" has to roll away from the gambler's table. The whole country is pervaded with the baneful spirit of gaming; but it must be seen to be fully understood. Men from the mines may at all times be seen, hazarding lump of gold against lump, and staking "dust" against dollars; and the perfect indifference with which they witness the fruit of their labour swept from them is not the least remarkable part of the affair. At present, as may naturally be supposed, government is impotent to interfere in crushing this crying evil: nor do I see,

in case of determined opposition, how the government can suppress it. "This is a *free country*," is the continued vaunt, and if the "*enlightened citizens*," are pleased to immolate themselves before men—compared with whom burglars and highwaymen are less culpable, as regards the injury inflicted upon society—who is there to prevent them?

In one of the principal streets in Sacramento, they have a horse market and general auction mart, held daily, *al fresco*, beneath the spreading branches of a gigantic tree; and it is not a little amusing to listen to eight or nine venders calling out the merits of their goods, cattle, and horses, at the same time. All day long they are at it. One, mounted on a horse for sale, will dash into the throng, with, "Here you are, gentlemen, this is the true Yankee breed, a regular ring-tail roarer, warranted sound, wind and limb, or no sale, and only sixty dollars offered for him! tsh! come up!"—"One hundred and fifty! One hundred and fifty! Only one hundred and fifty dollars bid for this splendid team and yoke of oxen," cries another.—"What do you say?" asks a third. "You want blue blankets because they don't show the dirt; you're the wrong chap for these diggings, my fine fellow, if you care for a little dirt; it's the quality of the article, and not its colour, that constitutes its value; and only twelve dollars bid for this splendid pair of blankets." Other cries in other voices are going on, when in again dashes the horseman—"Seventy dollars for the ring-tail; eighty! eighty-five! eighty-five! Don't let him be sacrificed: look at him, he's got any amount of work

in him : see here !” and away once more darts the “true Yankee breed,” with its rider shouting out its qualifications and the last bid. And so they keep at it from dawn till dark.

Suttor’s town, or Suttorville, two or three miles lower down on the banks of the river will soon be merged in Sacramento City. It possesses few buildings as yet ; but the sound of the saw, the hammer, and the axe, never ceases, till the obscurity of night causes a suspension of labour ; and such is the driving, tearing, onward-forcing movement, that no mercy is shown to the brute creation. Hundreds upon hundreds of horses, mules, and oxen, lie sweltering on the plains, literally wrought to death with over work and want of food ; and what surprised me was, that, though at every fifty paces you will stumble on bloated, decaying carcasses, sometimes lying six and seven in the fellowship of death, they yet emitted no offensive effluvia ; which, I presume, speaks for the great purity of the atmosphere. Notwithstanding this, fever and ague are exceedingly prevalent, from the low and marshy nature of the country. I have heard three or four different parties assert that they have pulled over what is now Sacramento City in a boat. To furnish an idea of the reckless-tearing, “go a-head,” spirit of the times, I happened to mention to a settler the advisability of raising the banks of the river to where it branches off to the north, middle, and south forks : for the distance is not great, and many lives, probably, and much property might be saved by such a precautionary measure. The answer was,

“What if the city is inundated: it will soon rise like a phoenix from its ashes; and if thousands were to perish, there are plenty more to fill their places.” The fact is, in the scramble for wealth, every one is struggling who shall get most in the shortest space of time. No one thinks of raising permanent works; no one thinks of remaining in the country longer than he can avoid; and the idea of waiting returns from the cultivation of the soil is out of the question. The excitement throughout California is so great, that one’s head is in a continual whirl. No time is allowed for sober reflection: the cry is ever, “On! On!” You are swept into the whirling vortex, and it requires no little strength of purpose to resist the temptations held out for speculation.

Land in Sacramento city fetches nearly as high a price as it does in San Francisco, and it is continually changing hands at improved rates. Predictions have gone abroad month by month, for the last eighteen months, that there will be a sudden and a mighty crash; but the growing aspect of affairs belies the vaticinations, notwithstanding the immense sums of gold that are shipped monthly from the country, and the absorption caused by the gamblers and hotel keepers, who I cannot but suspect are playing a “rosy game.” New hotels and restaurants are being opened every day: they last a few weeks, and are then closed, and the buildings announced for sale or lease. The custom they all receive is immense; so is also the expense they are put to: but their receipts are the “ready,” and

8,000\$ or 10,000\$ shipped off by the steamer at a time would scarcely be noticed. Bagatelle as 10,000\$ may appear in California, this sum, invested in the older states, would enable a man to live in much comfort. Whether I am ungenerous in my conjectures let others determine; but one or two shameful failures, falling beneath my notice, render me dubious of the fair play going on.

I partook of two dinners with some friends at one of the hotels in San Francisco, and, as a matter of curiosity, I here insert copies of the bills presented and paid on those occasions: —

(Copy).

Messrs. ————— and Friends,

	To EXCELSIOR,	Dr.
1849, Nov. 26, for 11 dinners.		
8 Snt. Julien Soup	-	\$ 12 0
3 Mock Turtle	-	- 1 50
Fish for eleven	-	- 15 00
15lbs. roast beef	-	- 15 0
10 Corned	-	- 10 0
2 Heads Cabbage	-	- 13 0
Vegetables with Fish	-	- 4 50
Potatoes	-	- 6 0
20 Snipe	-	- 20 0
(No such thing; they were a species of blackbird, to be seen in any number hopping about offal).		
Jelly	-	- 3 0
Peaches, plums, almonds, raisins, and 3 pies		24 50
2 Bottles sherry	-	- 8 0
2 Antigua rum	-	- 8 0
2 Ale	-	- 4 0
2 Claret	-	- 4 0

1	Hock	-	-	-	\$	4	0	
2	Champagne	-	-	-	-	10	0	
7	Oranges	-	-	-	-	14	0	
	Tea (a tea-spoonful to put in punch)	-	-	-	-	1	0	
	Room 5 hours, 2 allowed	-	-	-	-	15	0	
							<hr/>	
							\$	191 25
							<hr/>	

(Copy),

Mr. _____, To EXCELSIOR, Dr.

1849, Dec. 3d, To dinner ordered in private room \$ 229 75

Items.

9 Plates Green Turtle Soup (made of pig's head)	-	18	0
3 Botts. Champagne	-	15	0
2 Claret 4\$ 4 Botts. Sherry 16\$	-	20	0
1 Porter 2\$ 2 Botts. Sherry 8\$	-	10	0
8lbs. fish 24\$ 8lbs. Potatoes 8\$	-	32	0
8lbs. Corned Beef 8\$ 1½ Cabbage 9·75	-	17	75
Chops with Potatoes (about a desert plateful)	-	20	0
1 Fillet Beef larded (about 4lbs.)	-	20	0
1 Tongue	-	6	0
8lbs. Tomatoes	-	16	0
13 Snipe and Toast	-	25	0
Salmi of Hare (the half of <i>something</i> the size of a rat, a party in an adjoining room being favoured with the other half, and charged a similar price)	-	15	0
Room occupied 5 hours, 2 allowed	-	15	0
			<hr/>
			\$ 229 75
			<hr/>

This may be called eating with a vengeance; but preposterous as the charges are, they are not so extravagant as some of the charges at the daily bill of fare were; and yet the proprietors of the establishment, without having paid one cent of rent,

made a midnight flitting, as unable to support the expenses of the place.

Society, as understood by that term, is unknown in California: the men congregate in eating-houses; and at the sound of gongs, shoals may be seen rushing to the strife of the knife and fork. There are houses of entertainment like the one alluded to above, where parties at all hours may call for what they require; but the food is generally sodden and clammy, and the expense ruinous to those not participating in California profits; and that John Bull and Uncle Sam will have to groan for the advancement of California there is no mistake. The market is about as uncertain as any to be found; and the fearful prices of goods by retail, does not influence wholesale purchasers, who on most things will scarcely defray cost and charges. Ships are abandoned by "all hands;" and thousands and tens of thousands of dollars' worth of property lie exposed to the elements, from the inability to find store room.

During nine weeks that we spent in San Francisco we had not over ten or eleven days clear weather: dense fogs, down-pouring rains, and hard bleak winds, forming the chief summer of our experience. The damage resulting to the crowded mass of shipping may be imagined; several vessels were driven ashore and became complete wrecks; others lost their bowsprits, topmasts, and light spars. One ship I noticed with two of her lower masts gone, and seven hands were killed by the falling wreck; and again, by dragging and falling foul of

each other, some vessels were nearly cut down to the water's edge. We had several vessels foul of us, but managed to clear with only the loss of two anchors and cables, the smashing to atoms of a long boat and a beautiful gig, and the destruction of a portion of our bulwarks, sheathing and ornamental work. In other respects, no material injury was sustained. Such mischief occurring now, what is to be the case in another month or two, it will be hard to tell; when I am assured that the winds are likely to blow with much greater constancy and vehemence. Vessels are now jammed up in such close propinquity, that one has scarcely room to swing clear of the other; and as eight or nine came pouring in every week, while but few comparatively get away, *ship-owners will have to take warning*. To my feelings the climate is execrable; an occasional fine day will relieve the gloomy monotony; but the immense traffic so suddenly introduced on unprepared roads, renders the enjoyment of it almost impracticable. The streets are from ankle to knee deep with unctuous mud; and you cannot possibly travel without india rubber overalls, or fishermen's boots. A friend of mine sold a horse for 70\$, and paid 64\$ for a pair of boots, that at home would have cost 6\$ or 8\$. I advised him never to admit that he was walking when he had donned these costly brogans; but to insist that he was taking an airing on horse-back; but whilst laughing and "poking fun" at him, I was suddenly reduced to the same extremity. From continued saturation and drying by the fire, not a pair of boots belonging to me could I draw on

my feet; and, greatly to my mortification, I also was compelled to "shell out" 64\$ for a pair of India rubber boots, which in England might have been obtained for a pound sterling. For a light pair of shoes of the value of six shillings, I had to pay 12\$; for getting clothes washed the charge is 6\$ a dozen; and if you desire to go 200 or 300 yards in a boat, the waterman's fare is 2\$. The summer season is looked upon as the worst in the year, as it then blows, without intermission, a keen, cutting, marrow-searching blast, which bears on its wings clouds of suffocating dust; and the tenements generally throughout the country are of such a temporary construction, that comfort cannot be obtained within them.

A steamer starts the first of every month from San Francisco for Panama; and so soon as it is notified that passengers' tickets will be issued, the office is thronged with applicants, and you may see them in rows thirty and forty deep, waiting their chance to obtain tickets: many are disappointed for want of accommodation; and tickets have been sold second-hand at a hundred per cent premium. I mention this fact to show how little the desire is to remain in the country longer than can possibly be avoided. It will be said that time will rectify all this. I almost doubt it if the gold "holds out," of which I do not entertain a question; and in that case men of brute strength and hardy constitutions, though innocent of every other qualification, are likely to acquire more gold than the subtlest genius that ever entered the

country. Nor can I foresee the time when payment for the services of the labouring class will be reduced to the scale customary with the various grades in other countries.

No merchant is justified in consigning his vessel to San Francisco, unless he is prepared to have her abandoned; not a seaman will stay by her, and in his calculations of profit and loss, he should bear this in mind. No carrying business that I am acquainted with can support the monstrous wages demanded by seamen from this port. As I am bound to Tahiti — no great distance from here — we have succeeded in engaging hands at 80\$ for the “run:” the continued rains and wretched weather having reduced them to somewhat reasonable terms. But I do not believe that any wages would induce them to make the voyage to the United States on the Atlantic side or to England. We shipped several crews, agreeing to give them 5\$ a day whilst they worked in harbour, and 80\$ for the “run;” but, when it “jumped with their humour,” they would demand payment for the days they had been working, and walk ashore. Nor have the authorities any power to enforce obedience to agreements. Ship-owners and masters are required to pay the utmost fraction; but the sailor may laugh at written obligations and work his pleasure. The fifteen coolies I brought from China, and who were under a bond for two years with the party who engaged them, were no sooner ashore than they resisted their contract, and each turned his own separate way. Nor would the authorities interfere. It is asserted that the authorities will give you

assistance; yes, but it will cost 50\$ for every man that is apprehended, and then you are no better off. No punishment is inflicted on the deserter, and you undergo the risk of a second desertion, and are placed much in the same predicament as the man, who "might lead his horse to water, but could not make him drink;" besides, I believe there are upwards of 3000 deserters in the country, and who are there to arrest them, and who to guard them?

Maugre all these ultra extravagances, adventurers to California have transcended anything hitherto performed on the rough and ready go-ahead principle, putting the crowning proof to the trite old adage, that "'tis money makes the mare to go." A glance at the map will show that the territory of British North America is more extensive than that owned by the United States, but the movement of the people beneath the two governments is not the same. It is true that the climate of British North America is more rigid, and the country may not yield such quick or such prolific returns. But this is not alone the cause of the difference. Our colonial legislation is "behind the time:" it does not suit the striding spirit of the age; and before any radical change can be effected in any branch of colonial policy, the home government must be first consulted, and whilst ministers are pro-ing and con-ing, looking at this side of the question and that, ere they can attain a view of it in all its bearings, Uncle Sam arrives at conclusions on broad principles, and "walks straight ahead," availing himself of hints thrown out by others. In what consists the great charm of elo-

quence? "Action! action!" replied Demosthenes, and the Yankees appear to appreciate the style. They are a "fast people" and a shrewd, but "they vaunt, Sir! Lord, how they vaunt!" Their fewness in number, in comparison with the magnitude of their country, has helped to render them practical economists, and keenly alive to the useless expenditure of time and labour. To illustrate my meaning; the army is in want of a thousand muskets—a contractor is immediately found who will agree to manufacture them, stock, lock, and barrel, so that any part of one will answer for the whole thousand. This, which we should be apt to term "mother wit well exercised," the Yankees dignify with the appellation of "invention:" similar judicious applications of mechanical art obtain like sounding titles. Give them their due; but, as one of their Ethiopian melodies expresses it, "stop that knocking;" in other words, "let them cease bragging." They need not its empty support, and it only detracts from their just deservings.

Unembarrassed by a diversity of possessions beyond seas, the government of the United States is better adapted for a people spreading over a vast continent, than any delegated government from a distant field, and from men ignorant of local requirements. Our colonial governors, for the most part, naval or military men, sent out to improve their fortunes, in reward for former services, or, as is more generally the case, from influential connection with the "powers that be," remain for a period varying from three to five years; and, just as the scales are

beginning to fall from their eyes, and they are becoming conscious that neither martial law, quarter-deck-law, nor the municipal regulations of a county town in England, are those best adapted for towns and cities taking the places of forests, and still encroaching on the wilds and wolds of nature, they are recalled to make way for some other probationer. Many of our colonies complain of this, and seek for the privilege enjoyed by the Yankees, that of regulating their own domestic policy. A son when he reaches manhood does not wish to be held in check by maternal leading-strings; and a colony on acquiring the power to support itself without assistance from the mother country, ought to be allowed to enter into those arrangements which should free it from maternal trammels. If the colony had not cleared its expenses, but still stood indebted to Great Britain, the debt might be wiped off by instalments, and amicable relations continue on reciprocal terms; but not by any trade restrictions for the exclusive advantage of Britain; for I confess that I am opposed to everything in the shape of protection, and think that trade, like water, ought to be allowed to find its level, even with new colonies opened at our expense. Why should men whose energies have tempted them to countries and scenes far distant be denied the opportunity of enjoying at the cheapest mart the benefit of the most improved commerce? If the sales of land and fiscal regulations &c. will not support the expense of establishing new colonies, and at the same time enable us to compete in trade with other countries, and the inquiry

should be, what is to become of our *prolétaires*? our pauper population? what is to become of our convicted felons? I would reply, that no great monument of antiquity was ever erected by free men; the compulsory labour of slaves, criminals, serfs, and vassals, accounts for the massive structures and ponderous works of earlier times. I am not sufficiently versed in the statistics of crime to know the expense that our nation is yearly subjected to in the transportation and maintenance of felons; but I imagine that the muscle and bone services of men, who, by their crimes, had placed themselves without the pale of the law, might be turned to an useful and an atoning account, by causing them to surround Great Britain with defences, independent of its "wooden walls," that should defy the attempts of an invader. She is the nucleus and the wonder of the world, and well worthy of all the jealous care and watchful protection that science, arts and labour can bestow upon her; and most fervent are my prayers that she will not neglect "the piping times of peace" to prepare for any issue, that we may never cease to illustrate the proud boast of the most glorious writer the world ever saw: —

"This England never did, nor never shall,
Lie at the proud foot of a conqueror;
But when she first did help to wound herself.

* * * *

Come the three corners of the world in arms,
And we shall shock them; nought shall make us rue
If England to itself do rest but true."

Amen! and God avert that any matricidal hand should be raised against her! But I have no fear, so long as the liberty of the press is preserved inviolate, and we dare expose to the world our foibles and our weaknesses. It is when a country, besotted with prosperity, and deluded with ideas of its own greatness, reposes in fancied security, and lost to the "signs of the times," that fears of atrophy may be justly entertained. So long as we have the same manly and vigorous class of writers, who act like physicians to the state, and point out the slightest indications of disease, I do not apprehend much danger to the constitution. "Prevention," however, "is better than cure." It is easy to destroy life, but the secret for restoring it yet remains to be discovered; and I would rather hear of invasions averted than of the most heroic repulsions the world has ever listened to. We have no right to make war at pleasure, but we are enjoined by every precept to prevent it if possible; and a chain of defences at all accessible points on our coast would render invasion impracticable.

Each State of the American Union supports itself, and is governed in its internal policy by its own community, and every citizen is entitled to a voice in nominating the legislators for his country. This tickles the humour of the "free and enlightened mob," who love to listen to their own "sweet voices," and who believe as much in the efficacy of their votes as they do in the potency of a glass of grog. *Vide* the life of "Colonel David Crocket," and go to the next electioneering contest in San Francisco.

Hitherto, what has gained for the Yankees pre-

eminent claims to the title of being a "go-ahead" race, is that the reins of government have been but lightly felt, each state exercising its own pleasure in saddling itself with expenses for improvements, &c. : and they have had a boundless field before them, with illimitable resources. But they have dipped their hands in blood, and their success in arms against the unskilled Mexicans, ignorant of modern tactics, has well nigh intoxicated them, and I have heard grandiloquent speeches, and seen in print from the Atlantic States the snug complacency with which they look forward at no very distant date to taking Great Britain under their protection. There is a proverb "that ill weeds grow apace," and a saying "that a too rapid growth is dangerous to the constitution." Is there no fear that some of the joints of the Union may prove rickety. Will the men on the Pacific side of the Rocky Mountains for aye submit to have their commerce shackled by men on the Atlantic side? I don't believe they will; and the Eastern States may yet have to deplore the westward tide of immigration.

Englishmen on going abroad, accustomed as they have been to the gradual development of things at home, advancing step by step, and rarely venturing the next move till tolerably certain of its results, are extremely chary at entering into speculations beyond their means, and it *almost* requires a second generation to qualify this excess of moderation. Yankees, on the contrary, esteem themselves equal to the wealthiest in the country, and, though without a dollar, if they can find any one to trust them, will dash into specu-

lations to the full amount they can obtain credit for; and, if permitted to "go-ahead," will involve themselves in such labyrinthian confusion, that there is ultimately scarcely any possibility of unravelling the perplexed web. Individuals suffer, but the country improves, and nations, possessing an illimitable extent of rich productive territory, will sustain no vital harm from the schemes of such tearing projectors.

"All men are by nature *free* and independent and have certain inalienable rights, among which are those of enjoying and defending life and liberty, acquiring, possessing and protecting property, and procuring and obtaining safety and happiness."

This being freely admitted and set forth, no man wishes to be inferior to his neighbour, and except in some of the older and more densely peopled, and in some of the *slave* states, I have heard that it is pretty much "all master and no man." In California this is most indubitably the case, and it is worthy a voyage thither, if only to see in the crowded "Hells" of "this great and growing country, over which the American eagle has spread its wing," what a sample of "free and enlightened citizens" really is.

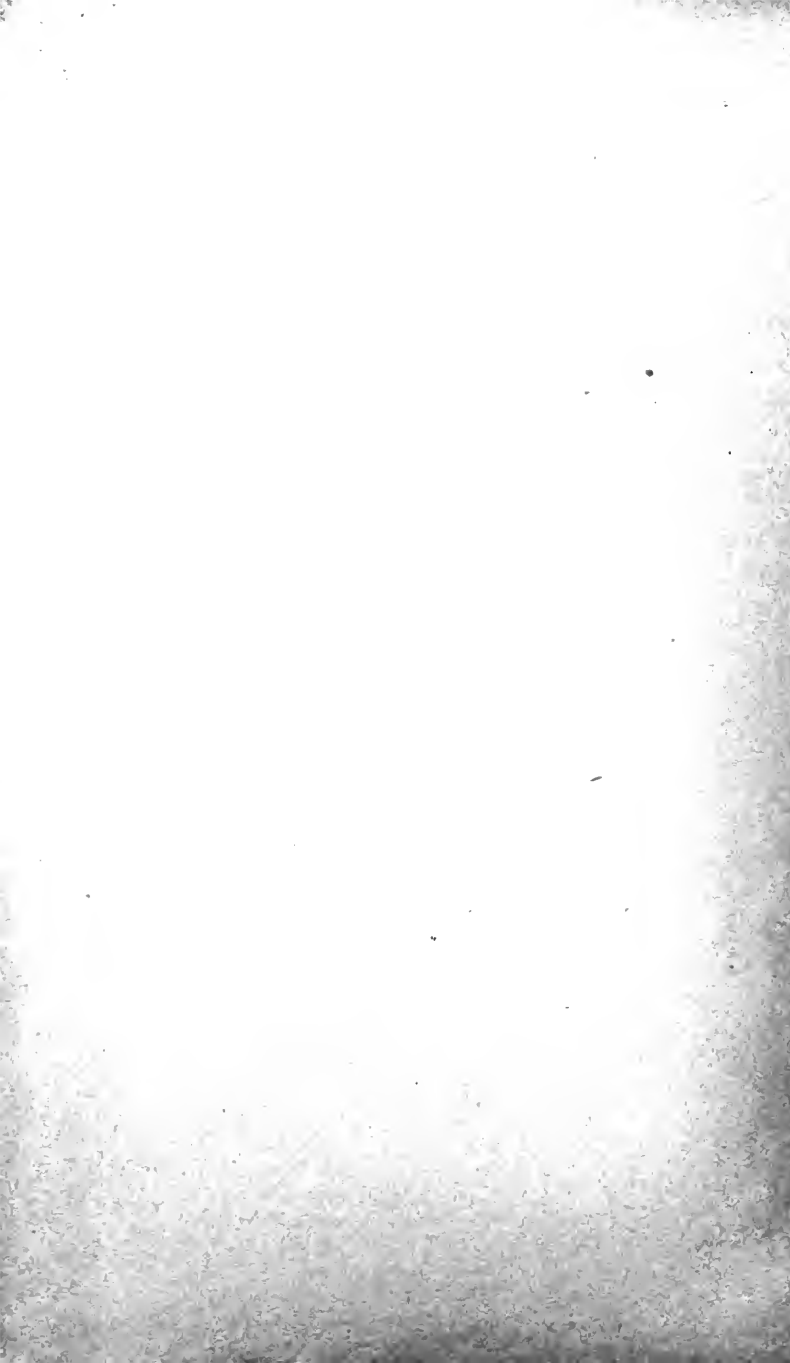
On the first of next month many of my personal friends are homeward bound, and great is my desire again to visit the land of my birth; but other ties and feelings draw me another way, and there is one tiny pair of hands tugging at my heartstrings with irresistible force. My little one, I come! We dropped down the harbour, and, having escaped without much damage from the collision of two other vessels that drove against us, causing us some detention,

on *December 23rd*, we cleared the troublesome and expensive port of San Francisco, and at sun-down had a distinct view of the “Farallones rocks,” which hazy weather prevented our seeing when we entered. Our observation only admitted of noting that they were bold projections; and (to be accurate) they lie by compass south-west and by west half west from the harbour’s mouth. Once more in an “open sea,” I trust, by the blessing of Providence, in the course of a few weeks to hold to my bosom the “flower and blossom” of my affections; and, although with sentiments in no way allied to with those that possessed the mutineers of the *Bounty*, I yet reiterate their cry, and exclaim, “Huzza for Otaheite!”

THE END.

LONDON:
SPOTTISWOODES and SHAW,
New-street-Square.





UC SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY



A 000 161 342 1

UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA LIBRARY

Los Angeles

This book is DUE on the last date stamped below.

